



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

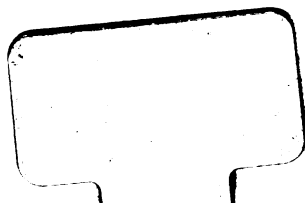
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

11473.99¹³

HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY



FROM THE LIBRARY OF
George Lyman Kittredge
GURNEY PROFESSOR
OF ENGLISH LITERATURE
1917-1941



Early English Text Society.

Extra Series, XCIX.

The Romance of Emaré.

With the editor's compliments

RE-EDITED FROM THE MS.

WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY,

BY

EDITH RICKERT, Ph.D.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY

BY KEWAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LIMITED,

DRYDEN HOUSE, 43, GERHARD STREET, SOHO, W.

1906.

Price Seven and Sixpence.

Early English Text Society.

Committee of Management:

Director: DR. FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, M.A.

Treasurer: HENRY B. WHEATLEY, Esq.

Hon. Sec.: W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67 VICTORIA ROAD, FINSBURY PARK.

Hon. Secs. { North & East: Prof. G. L. KITTBEDGE, Harvard Coll., Cambr., Mass.
for America: { South & West: Prof. J. W. BRIGHT, Johns Hopkins Univ., Baltimore

LORD ALDENHAM, M.A.

PROF. NAPIER, M.A., Ph.D.

REV. DR. ANDREW CLARK, M.A.

EDWARD B. PEACOCK, Esq.

PROF. ISRAEL GOLLANCZ, D.Lit.

ALFRED W. POLLARD, M.A.

SIDNEY L. LEE, M.A., D.Lit.

REV. PROF. WALTER W. SKEAT, Litt.

HENRY LITTLEHALES, Esq.

DR. HENRY SWEET, M.A.

REV. PROF. J. E. B. MAYOR, M.A.

DR. W. ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A.

DR. J. A. H. MURRAY, M.A.

(With power to add Workers to their number.)

Bankers:

THE UNION OF LONDON AND SMITH'S BANK, 2, PRINCES STREET, E.C.

THE Early English Text Society was started by Dr. Furnivall in 1864 for the purpose of bringing the mass of Old English Literature within the reach of the ordinary student, and of wiping away the reproach under which England had laboured, of having felt little interest in the monuments of her early language and life.

On the starting of the Society, so many Texts of importance were at once taken hand by its Editors, that it became necessary in 1867 to open, besides the *Original Series* with which the Society began, an *Extra Series* which should be mainly devoted to fresh editions of all that is most valuable in printed MSS. and Caxton's and other black-letter books, though first editions of MSS. will not be excluded when the convenience of issuing them demands their inclusion in the *Extra Series*.

During the forty-three years of the Society's existence, it has produced, with whatever shortcomings, and at a cost of over £30,000, an amount of good solid work for which all students of our Language, and some of our Literature, must be grateful, and which has rendered possible the beginnings (at least) of proper Histories and Dictionaries of that Language and Literature, and has illustrated the thoughts, the life, the manners and customs of our forefathers and foremothers.

But the Society's experience has shown the very small number of those inheritors of the speech of Cynewulf, Chaucer, and Shakspeare, who care two guineas a year for the records of that speech. 'Let the dead past bury its dead' is still the cry of Great Britain and her Colonies, and of America, in the matter of language. The Society has never had money enough to produce the Texts that could easily have been got ready for it; and many Editors are now anxious to send to press the work they have prepared. The necessity has therefore arisen for trying to increase the number of the Society's members, and to induce its well-wishers to help it by gifts of money, either in one sum or by instalments. The Committee trust that every Member will bring before his or her friends and acquaintances the Society's claims for liberal support. Until all Early English MSS. are printed, no proper History of our Language or Social Life is possible.

The Subscription to the Society, which constitutes membership, is £1 1s. a year for the ORIGINAL SERIES, and £1 1s. for the EXTRA SERIES, due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid by Cheque, Postal Order, or Money-Order, crossed 'Union of London and Smith's Bank,' to the Hon. Secretary, W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Rd., Finsbury Park, London, N. Members who want their Texts posted to them must add to their prepaid Subscriptions 1s. for the Original Series, and 1s. for the Extra Series, yearly. The Society's Texts are also sold separately at the prices printed after them in the Lists; but Members can get back-Texts at one-third less than the List-prices by sending the cash for them in advance to the Hon. Secretary.

☞ The Society intends to complete, as soon as its funds will allow, the Reprints of its out-of-print Texts of the year 1866, and also of nos. 20, 26, and 33. Dr. Otto Glauning has undertaken *Seinte Marherete*; and Dr. Furnivall has *Hali Meidenhad* in type. As the cost of these Reprints, if they were not needed, would have been devoted to fresh Texts, the Reprints will be sent to all Members in lieu of such Texts. Though called 'Reprints,' these books are new editions, generally with valuable additions, a fact not noticed by a few careless receivers of them, who have complained that they already had the volumes.

Sept. 1907. A gratifying gift is to be made to the Society. The American owner of the unique MS. of the Works of John Metham—whose Romance of Amoryus and Cleopas was sketched by Dr. Furnivall in his new edition of *Political, Religious and Love Poems*, No. 15 in the Society's Original Series—has promised to give the Society an edition of his MS. prepared by Dr. Hardin Craig of Princeton, and it will be issued next year as No. 132 of the Original Series. The giver hopes that his example may be followed by other folk, as the support hitherto given to the Society is so far below that which it deserves.

The Original-Series Texts for 1906 were No. 130, Part II of the englisning, ab. 1450 A.D., of the Deeds in the *Register of Godstow Nunnery*, edited from the unique MS. by the Rev. Andrew Clark, LL.D.; No. 131, *The Brut*, or *The Chronicles of England*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. F. Brie, Part I. No. 132, *John Metham's Works* mentioned above is at press, and will probably be issued in 1908 for 1906.

The Original-Series Texts for 1907 are, No. 133, Part I of the *English Register of Oseney Abbey*, by Oxford, edited by the Rev. Andrew Clark, LL.D., already issued, and No. 134, Part I of the *Coventry Leet Book*, copied and edited for the Society by Miss M. Dormer Harris—helped by a contribution from the Common Council of the City,—which is published by the Society as its contribution to our knowledge of the provincial city life of the 15th century.

Among the Texts for 1908 and 1909 will be Part II of the *Coventry Leet Book*, copied and edited by Miss M. Dormer Harris; Capgrave's *Lives of St. Augustine and St. Gilbert of Sempringham*, edited from the unique MS. by Mr. J. J. Munro; *The Wars of Alexander* from the unique Thornton MS. edited by J. S. Westlake, M.A., and L. A. Magnus, LL.B.; Part II of *The Brut*; Part III of the *Alphabet of Tales*, edited by Mrs. M. M. Banks; Part III of the *English Register of Godstow Nunnery*; and Part II of the *English Register of Oseney Abbey*, edited by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Future Texts will be Part III of Robert of Brunne's *Handlyng Synne*, edited by Dr. Furnivall, with a Glossary of Wm. of Wadington's French words in his *Manuel des Pechez*, and comments on them, by Mr. Dickson-Brown; Part II of the *Exeter Book*—Anglo-Saxon Poems from the unique MS. in Exeter Cathedral—re-edited by Israel Gollancz, M.A.; Part II of Prof. Dr. Holt-Hausen's *Vices and Virtues*; Part II of *Jacob's Well*, edited by Dr. Brandeis; the Alliterative *Siege of Jerusalem*, edited by the late Prof. Dr. E. Kölbing and Prof. Dr. Kaluza; an Introduction and Glossary to the *Minor Poems of the Vernon MS.* by H. Hartley, M.A.; Alain Chartier's *Quadrilogue*, edited from the unique MS. Univ. Coll. Oxford No. 85, by Prof. J. W. H. Atkins. Canon Wordsworth of Marlborough has given the Society a copy of the Leofric Canonical Rule, Latin and Anglo-Saxon, Parker MS. 191, C. O. C. Cambridge, and Prof. Napier will edit it, with a fragment of the englisht Capitula of Bp. Theodulf: it is now at press.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1906 are to be No. XCVII, *Lydgate's Troy Book*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Hy. Bergen, Part I; No. XCVIII, *Skelton's Magnificence*, edited by Dr. R. L. Ramsay, with a special Introduction; No. XCIX, *The Romance of Emaré*, re-edited by Miss Edith Rickert, Ph.D. The first and last have been issued.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1907 will be No. C. *The Harrowing of Hell*, three parallel Texts, with *The Gospel of Nicodemus*, four parallel Texts, re-edited by Prof. Hulme; No. CI. *Ballads and Carols* from Jn. Hyde's Balliol MS., edited by Dr. R. Dyboski.

Further Extra-Series Texts for 1908, &c., will be *Lydgate's Troy Book*, Parts II and III, edited by Dr. Hy. Bergen; *Lydgate's Minor Poems*, with a settlement of the Lydgate Canon, edited by Dr. H. N. MacCracken; *The Owl and Nightingale*, two parallel Texts, edited by Mr. G. F. H. Sykes; Dr. Erbe's re-edition of *Mirk's Festial*, Part II; Dr. M. Konrath's re-edition of *William of Shoreham's Poems*, Part II; Prof. Erdmann's re-edition of *Lydgate's Siege of Thebes* (issued also by the Chaucer Society); Prof. I. Gollancz's re-edition of two Alliterative Poems, *Winner and Waster*, &c., ab. 1360; Dr. Norman Moore's re-edition of *The Book of the Foundation of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, London*, from the unique MS. ab. 1425, which gives an account of the Founder, Rahere, and the miraculous cures wrought at the Hospital; *The Craft of Nombyrynge*, with other of the earliest englisht Treatises on Arithmetic, edited by R. Steele, B.A.; and Miss Warren's two-text edition of *The Dance of Death* from the Ellesmere and other MSS.

These Extra-Series Texts ought to be completed by their Editors: the Second Part of the prose Romance of *Melusine*—Introduction, with ten facsimiles of the best woodblocks of the old foreign black-letter editions, Glossary, &c., by A. K. Donald, B.A. (now in India); and a new edition of the famous Early-English Dictionary (English and Latin), *Promptorium Parvulorum*, from the Winchester MS., ab. 1440 A.D.: in this, the Editor, the Rev. A. L. Mayhew, M.A., will follow and print his MS. not only in its arrangement of nouns first, and

[illegible]

Early English Text Society.

Extra Series, XCIX.

11473-99

4

The Romance of Emaré.



RE-EDITED FROM THE MS.
WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY,

BY

EDITH RICKERT, Ph.D.

LONDON :

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY
BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LIMITED,
FREDERICK HOUSE, 43, GERRARD STREET, SOHO, W.

1905.

Price Seven and Sixpence.

Early English Text Society.

Committee of Management:

Director: DR. FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, M.A.

Treasurer: HENRY B. WHEATLEY, Esq.

Hon. Sec.: W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67 VICTORIA ROAD, FINSBURY PARK, N.

Hon. Secs. { North & East: Prof. G. L. KITTREDGE, Harvard Coll., Cambr., Mass.
for America: { South & West: Prof. J. W. BRIGHT, Johns Hopkins Univ., Baltimore.

LORD ALDENHAM, M.A.

PROF. NAPIER, M.A., Ph.D.

REV. DR. ANDREW CLARK, M.A.

EDWARD B. PEACOCK, Esq.

PROF. ISRAEL GOLLANCZ, D.Lit.

ALFRED W. POLLARD, M.A.

SIDNEY L. LEE, M.A., D.Lit.

REV. PROF. WALTER W. SKEAT, Litt.D.

HENRY LITTLEHALES, Esq.

DR. HENRY SWEET, M.A.

REV. PROF. J. E. B. MAYOR, M.A.

DR. W. ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A.

DR. J. A. H. MURRAY, M.A.

(With power to add Workers to their number.)

Bankers:

THE UNION OF LONDON AND SMITH'S BANK, 2, PRINCES STREET, E.C.

THE Early English Text Society was started by Dr. Furnivall in 1864 for the purpose of bringing the mass of Old English Literature within the reach of the ordinary student, and of wiping away the reproach under which England had long rested, of having felt little interest in the monuments of her early language and life.

On the starting of the Society, so many Texts of importance were at once taken in hand by its Editors, that it became necessary in 1867 to open, besides the *Original Series* with which the Society began, an *Extra Series* which should be mainly devoted to fresh editions of all that is most valuable in printed MSS. and Caxton's and other black-letter books, though first editions of MSS. will not be excluded when the convenience of issuing them demands their inclusion in the Extra Series.

During the forty-three years of the Society's existence, it has produced, with whatever shortcomings, and at a cost of over £30,000, an amount of good solid work for which all students of our Language, and some of our Literature, must be grateful, and which has rendered possible the beginnings (at least) of proper Histories and Dictionaries of that Language and Literature, and has illustrated the thoughts, the life, the manners and customs of our forefathers and foremothers.

But the Society's experience has shown the very small number of those inheritors of the speech of Cynewulf, Chaucer, and Shakspeare, who care two guineas a year for the records of that speech. 'Let the dead past bury its dead' is still the cry of Great Britain and her Colonies, and of America, in the matter of language. The Society has never had money enough to produce the Texts that could easily have been got ready for it; and many Editors are now anxious to send to press the work they have prepared. The necessity has therefore arisen for trying to increase the number of the Society's members, and to induce its well-wishers to help it by gifts of money, either in one sum or by instalments. The Committee trust that every Member will bring before his or her friends and acquaintances the Society's claims for liberal support. Until all Early English MSS. are printed, no proper History of our Language or Social Life is possible.

The Subscription to the Society, which constitutes membership, is £1 1s. a year for the ORIGINAL SERIES, and £1 1s. for the EXTRA SERIES, due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid by Cheque, Postal Order, or Money-Order, crossed 'Union of London and Smith's Bank,' to the Hon. Secretary, W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Rd., Finsbury Park, London, N. Members who want their Texts posted to them, must add to their prepaid Subscriptions 1s. for the Original Series, and 1s. for the Extra Series, yearly. The Society's Texts are also sold separately at the prices put after them in the Lists; but Members can get back-Texts at one-third less than the List-prices by sending the cash for them in advance to the Hon. Secretary.

☛ The Society intends to complete, as soon as its funds will allow, the Reprints of its out-of-print Texts of the year 1866, and also of nos. 20, 26, and 33. Dr. Otto Glauning has undertaken *Seinte Marherete*; and Dr. Furnivall has *Hali Meidenhad* in type. As the cost of these Reprints, if they were not needed, would have been devoted to fresh Texts, the Reprints will be sent to all Members in lieu of such Texts. Though called 'Reprints,' these books are new editions, generally with valuable additions, a fact not noticed by a few careless receivers of them, who have complained that they already had the volumes.

Sept. 1907. A gratifying gift is to be made to the Society. The American owner of the unique MS. of the Works of John Metham—whose Romance of Amoryus and Cleopas was sketched by Dr. Furnivall in his new edition of *Political, Religious and Love Poems*, No. 15 in the Society's Original Series—has promised to give the Society an edition of his MS. prepared by Dr. Hardin Craig of Princeton, and it will be issued next year as No. 132 of the Original Series. The giver hopes that his example may be followed by other folk, as the support hitherto given to the Society is so far below that which it deserves.

The Original-Series Texts for 1906 were No. 130, Part II of the englishting, ab. 1450 A.D., of the Deeds in the *Register of Godstow Nunnery*, edited from the unique MS. by the Rev. Andrew Clark, LL.D.; No. 131, *The Brut*, or *The Chronicles of England*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. F. Brie, Part I. No. 132, *John Metham's Works* mentioned above is at press, and will probably be issued in 1908 for 1906.

The Original-Series Texts for 1907 are, No. 133, Part I of the *English Register of Oseney Abbey*, by Oxford, edited by the Rev. Andrew Clark, LL.D., already issued, and No. 134, Part I of the *Coventry Leet Book*, copied and edited for the Society by Miss M. Dormer Harris—helped by a contribution from the Common Council of the City,—which is published by the Society as its contribution to our knowledge of the provincial city life of the 15th century.

Among the Texts for 1908 and 1909 will be Part II of the *Coventry Leet Book*, copied and edited by Miss M. Dormer Harris; Capgrave's *Lives of St. Augustine and St. Gilbert of Sempringham*, edited from the unique MS. by Mr. J. J. Munro; *The Wars of Alexander* from the unique Thornton MS. edited by J. S. Westlake, M.A., and L. A. Magnus, LL.B.; Part II of *The Brut*; Part III of the *Alphabet of Tales*, edited by Mrs. M. M. Banks; Part III of the *English Register of Godstow Nunnery*; and Part II of the *English Register of Oseney Abbey*, edited by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Future Texts will be Part III of Robert of Brunne's *Handlyng Synne*, edited by Dr. Furnivall, with a Glossary of Wm. of Wadington's French words in his *Manuel des Pechez*, and comments on them, by Mr. Dickson-Brown; Part II of the *Exeter Book*—Anglo-Saxon Poems from the unique MS. in Exeter Cathedral—re-edited by Israel Gollancz, M.A.; Part II of Prof. Dr. Holt-Hausen's *Vices and Virtues*; Part II of *Jacob's Well*, edited by Dr. Brandeis; the Alliterative *Siege of Jerusalem*, edited by the late Prof. Dr. E. Kölbing and Prof. Dr. Kaluza; an Introduction and Glossary to the *Minor Poems of the Vernon MS.* by H. Hartley, M.A.; Alain Chartier's *Quadrilogue*, edited from the unique MS. Univ. Coll. Oxford No. 85, by Prof. J. W. H. Atkins. Canon Wordsworth of Marlborough has given the Society a copy of the Leofric Canonical Rule, Latin and Anglo-Saxon, Parker MS. 191, C. C. Cambridge, and Prof. Napier will edit it, with a fragment of the englisht Capitula of Bp. Theodulf: it is now at press.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1906 are to be No. XCVII, *Lydgate's Troy Book*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Hy. Bergen, Part I; No. XCVIII, *Skelton's Magnificence*, edited by Dr. R. L. Ramsay, with a special Introduction; No. XCIX, *The Romance of Emaré*, re-edited by Miss Edith Rickert, Ph.D. The first and last have been issued.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1907 will be No. C. *The Harrowing of Hell*, three parallel Texts, with *The Gospel of Nicodemus*, four parallel Texts, re-edited by Prof. Hulme; No. CI. *Ballads and Carols* from Jn. Hyde's Balliol MS., edited by Dr. Ryboski.

Further Extra-Series Texts for 1908, &c., will be *Lydgate's Troy Book*, Parts II and III, edited by Dr. Hy. Bergen; *Lydgate's Minor Poems*, with a settlement of the *Lydgate Canon*, edited by Dr. H. N. MacCracken; *The Owl and Nightingale*, two parallel Texts, edited by Mr. G. F. H. Sykes; Dr. Erbe's re-edition of *Mirk's Festial*, Part II; Dr. M. Konrath's re-edition of *William of Shoreham's Poems*, Part II; Prof. Erdmann's re-edition of *Lydgate's Siege of Thebes* (issued also by the Chaucer Society); Prof. I. Gollancz's re-edition of two Alliterative Poems, *Winner and Waster*, &c., ab. 1360; Dr. Norman Moore's re-edition of *The Book of the Foundation of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, London*, from the unique MS. ab. 1425, which gives an account of the Founder, Rahere, and the miraculous cures wrought at the Hospital; *The Craft of Nombrynge*, with other of the earliest englisht Treatises on Arithmetic, edited by R. Steele, B.A.; and Miss Warren's two-text edition of *The Dance of Death* from the Ellesmere and other MSS.

These Extra-Series Texts ought to be completed by their Editors: the Second Part of the prose Romance of *Melusine*—Introduction, with ten facsimiles of the best woodblocks of the old foreign black-letter editions, Glossary, &c., by A. K. Donald, B.A. (now in India); and a new edition of the famous Early-English Dictionary (English and Latin), *Promptorium Parvulorum*, from the Winchester MS., ab. 1440 A.D.: in this, the Editor, the Rev. A. I. Mayhew, M.A., will follow and print his MS. not only in its arrangement of nouns first, and

1321
27
verbs second, under every letter of the Alphabet, but also in its giving of the flexions of the words. The Society's edition will thus be the first modern one that really represents its original, a point on which Mr. Mayhew's insistence will meet with the sympathy of all our Members.

Later Texts for the Extra Series will include *The Three Kings' Sons*, Part II, the Introduction, &c., by Prof. Dr. Leon Kellner; Part II of *The Chester Plays*, re-edited from the MSS., with a full collation of the formerly missing Devonshire MS., by Mr. G. England and Dr. Matthews; Prof. Jespersen's editions of John Hart's *Orthographie* (MS. 1551 A.D.; blackletter 1569), and *Method to teach Reading*, 1570; Deguillville's *Pilgrimage of the Soule*, in English prose, edited by Mr. Hans Koestner. (For the three prose versions of *The Pilgrimage of the Life of Man*—two English, one French—an Editor is wanted.) Members are asked to realise the fact that the Society has now 50 years' work on its Lists,—at its present rate of production,—and that there is from 100 to 200 more years' work to come after that. The year 2000 will not see finish all the Texts that the Society ought to print. The need of more Members and money is pressing. Offers of help from willing Editors have continually to be declined because the Society has no funds to print their Texts.

An urgent appeal is hereby made to Members to increase the list of Subscribers to the E. E. Text Society. It is nothing less than a scandal that the Hellenic Society should have over 1000 members, while the Early English Text Society has not 300!

Before his death in 1895, Mr. G. N. Currie was preparing an edition of the 15th and 16th century Prose Versions of Guillaume de Deguillville's *Pilgrimage of the Life of Man*, with the French prose version by Jean Gallopes, from Lord Aldenham's MS., he having generously promised to pay the extra cost of printing the French text, and engraving one or two of the illuminations in his MS. But Mr. Currie, when on his deathbed, charged a friend to burn all his MSS. which lay in a corner of his room, and unluckily all the E. E. T. S.'s copies of the Deguillville prose versions were with them, and were burnt with them, so that the Society will be put to the cost of fresh copies, Mr. Currie having died in debt.

Guillaume de Deguillville, monk of the Cistercian abbey of Chaalis, in the diocese of Senlis, wrote his first verse *Pèlerinage de l'Homme* in 1330-1 when he was 36.¹ Twenty-five (or six) years after, in 1355, he revised his poem, and issued a second version of it,² a revision of which was printed ab. 1500. Of the prose representative of the first version, 1330-1, a prose Englishing, about 1430 A.D., was edited by Mr. Aldis Wright for the Roxburghe Club in 1869, from MS. Ff. 5. 30 in the Cambridge University Library. Other copies of this prose English are in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, Q. 2. 25; Sion College, London; and the Laud Collection in the Bodleian, no. 740.³ A copy in the Northern dialect is MS. G. 21, in St. John's Coll., Cambridge, and this is the MS. which will be edited for the E. E. Text Society. The Laud MS. 740 was somewhat condensed and modernised, in the 17th century, into MS. Ff. 6. 30, in the Cambridge University Library:⁴ "The Pilgrime or the Pilgrimage of Man in this World," copied by Will. Baspoole, whose copy "was verbatim written by Walter Parker, 1645, and from thence transcribed by G. G. 1649; and from thence by W. A. 1655." This last copy may have been read by, or its story reported to, Bunyan, and may have been the groundwork of his *Pilgrim's Progress*. It will be edited for the E. E. T. Soc., its text running under the earlier English, as in Mr. Herrtage's edition of the *Gesta Romanorum* for the Society. In February 1464,⁵ Jean Gallopes—a clerk of Angers, afterwards chaplain to John, Duke of Bedford, Regent of France—turned Deguillville's first verse *Pèlerinage* into a prose *Pèlerinage de la vie humaine*.⁶ By the kindness of Lord Aldenham, as above mentioned, Gallopes's French text will be printed opposite the early prose northern Englishing in the Society's edition.

The Second Version of Deguillville's *Pèlerinage de l'Homme*, A.D. 1355 or -6, was englished in verse by Lydgate in 1426, and, thanks to the diligence of the old Elizabethan tailor and manuscript-lover, John Stowe, a complete text of Lydgate's poem has been edited for the Society by Dr. Furnivall. The British Museum French MSS. (Harleian 4399,⁷ and Additional 22,937⁸ and 25,594⁹) are all of the First Version.

Besides his first *Pèlerinage de l'homme* in its two versions, Deguillville wrote a second, "de l'ame separee du corps," and a third, "de nostre seigneur Iesus." Of the second, a prose Englishing of 1413, *The Pilgrimage of the Soule* (with poems by Hoccleve, already printed for the Society with that author's *Regement of Princes*), exists in the Egerton MS. 615,¹⁰ at

¹ He was born about 1295. See Abbé Goujer's *Bibliothèque française*, Vol. IX, p. 73A.—P. M. The Roxburghe Club printed the 1st version in 1893.

² The Roxburghe Club's copy of this 2nd version was lent to Mr. Currie, and unluckily burnt too with his other MSS.

³ These 3 MSS. have not yet been collated, but are believed to be all of the same version.

⁴ These were printed in France, late in the 15th or early in the 16th century.

⁵ Another MS. is in the Pepys Library.

⁶ According to Lord Aldenham's MS.

⁷ 15th cent., containing only the *Vie humaine*.

⁸ 16th cent., containing all the 3 Pilgrimages, the 3rd being *Jesus Christ's*.

⁹ 14th cent., containing the *Vie humaine* and the 2nd Pilgrimage, *de l'Ame*: both incomplete.

¹⁰ Ab. 1430, 106 leaves (leaf 1 of text wanting), with illuminations of nice little devils—red, green, tawny, &c.—and damned souls, fires, angels, &c.

Hatfield, Cambridge (Univ. Kk. 1. 7, and Caius), Oxford (Univ. Coll. and Corpus), and in Caxton's edition of 1483. This version has 'somewhat of additions' as Caxton says, and some shortenings too, as the maker of both, the first translator, tells us in the MSS. Caxton leaves out the earlier englisger's interesting Epilog in the Egerton MS. This prose englisging of the *Sowle* has been copied and will be edited for the Society by Mr. Hans Koestner. Of the Pilgrimage of Jesus, no englisging is known.

As to the MS. Anglo-Saxon Psalters, Dr. Hy. Sweet has edited the oldest MS., the *Vespasian*, in his *Oldest English Texts* for the Society, and Mr. Harsley has edited the latest, c. 1150, Eadwine's Canterbury Psalter. The other MSS., except the Paris one, being interlinear versions,—some of the Roman-Latin redaction, and some of the Gallican,—Prof. Logeman has prepared for press a Parallel-Text edition of the first twelve Psalms, to start the complete work. He will do his best to get the Paris Psalter—tho' it is not an interlinear one—into this collective edition; but the additional matter, especially in the Verse-Psalms, is very difficult to manage. If the Paris text cannot be parallelised, it will form a separate volume. The Early English Psalters are all independent versions, and will follow separately in due course.

Through the good offices of the Examiners, some of the books for the Early-English Examinations of the University of London will be chosen from the Society's publications, the Committee having undertaken to supply such books to students at a large reduction in price. The net profits from these sales will be applied to the Society's Reprints.

Members are reminded that *fresh Subscribers are always wanted*, and that the Committee can at any time, on short notice, send to press an additional Thousand Pounds' worth of work.

The Subscribers to the Original Series must be prepared for the issue of the whole of the Early English *Lives of Saints*, sooner or later. The Society cannot leave out any of them, even though some are dull. The Sinners would doubtless be much more interesting. But in many Saints' Lives will be found valuable incidental details of our forefathers' social state, and all are worthful for the history of our language. The Lives may be lookt on as the religious romances or story-books of their period.

The Standard Collection of Saints' Lives in the Corpus and Ashmole MSS., the Harleian MS. 2277, &c. will repeat the Laud set, our No. 87, with additions, and in right order. (The foundation MS. (Laud 108) had to be printed first, to prevent quite unwieldy collations.) The Supplementary Lives from the Vernon and other MSS. will form one or two separate volumes.

Besides the Saints' Lives, Trevisa's englisging of *Bartholomæus de Proprietatibus Rerum*, the mediæval Cyclopædia of Science, &c., will be the Society's next big undertaking. An Editor for it is wanted. Prof. Napier of Oxford, wishing to have the whole of our MS. Anglo-Saxon in type, and accessible to students, will edit for the Society all the unprinted and other Anglo-Saxon Homilies which are not included in Thorpe's edition of Ælfric's prose,¹ Dr. Morris's of the Blickling Homilies, and Prof. Skeat's of Ælfric's Metrical Homilies. The late Prof. Kölbinger left complete his text, for the Society, of the *Ancoren Rivle*, from the best MS., with collations of the other four, and this will be edited for the Society by Dr. Thümmeler. Mr. Harvey means to prepare an edition of the three MSS. of the *Earliest English Metrical Psalter*, one of which was edited by the late Mr. Stevenson for the Surtees Society.

Members of the Society will learn with pleasure that its example has been followed, not only by the Old French Text Society which has done such admirable work under its founders Profs. Paul Meyer and Gaston Paris, but also by the Early Russian Text Society, which was set on foot in 1877, and has since issued many excellent editions of old MS. Chronicles, &c.

Members will also note with pleasure the annexation of large tracts of our Early English territory by the important German contingent, the late Professors Zupitza and Kölbing, the living Hausknecht, Einkenel, Haenisch, Kaluza, Hupe, Adam, Holthausen, Schick, Herzfeld, Brandeis, Sieper, Konrath, Wülfing, &c. Scandinavia has also sent us Prof. Erdmann and Dr. E. A. Kock; Holland, Prof. H. Logeman, who is now working in Belgium; France, Prof. Paul Meyer—with Gaston Paris as adviser (alas, now dead);—Italy, Prof. Lattanzi; Austria, Dr. von Fleischhacker; while America is represented by the late Prof. Child, by Dr. Mary Noyes Colvin, Miss Rickert, Profs. Mead, McKnight, Triggs, Perrin, Craig, &c. The sympathy, the ready help, which the Society's work has cald forth from the Continent and the United States, have been among the pleasantest experiences of the Society's life, a real aid and cheer amid all troubles and discouragements. All our Members are grateful for it, and recognise that the bond their work has woven between them and the lovers of language and antiquity across the seas is one of the most welcome results of the Society's efforts.

¹ Of these, Mr. Harsley is preparing a new edition, with collations of all the MSS. Many copies of Thorpe's book, not issued by the Ælfric Society, are still in stock.

Of the Vercelli Homilies, the Society has bought the copy made by Prof. G. Lattanzi.

The Anglo-Saxon Psalms; all the MSS. in Parallel Texts, ed. Dr. H. Logeman and F. Harsley, B.A.
Beowulf, a critical Text, &c., edited by a Pupil of the late Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.
Byrhtferth's Handbooc, ed. by Prof. G. Hempf.
Early English Confessionals, ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
The Seven Sages, in the Northern Dialect, from a Cotton MS., edited by Dr. Squires.
The Master of the Game, a Book of Huntynge for Hen. V. when Prince of Wales. (*Editor wanted*)
Ailred's Rule of Nuns, &c., edited from the Vernon MS., by the Rev. Canon H. B. Bramley, M.A.
Early English Verse Lives of Saints, Standard Collection, from the Harl. MS. (*Editor wanted*)
A Lapidary, from Lord Tollemache's MS., &c., edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
Early English Deeds and Documents, from unique MSS., ed. Dr. Lorenz Morsbach.
Gilbert Banastre's Poems, and other *Boccaccio englishings*, ed. by Prof. Dr. Max Förster.
Laufmann's Chirurgie, ab. 1400 A.D., ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker, Part II.
William of Nassington's Mirror of Life, from Jn. of Waldby, edited by J. A. Herbert, M.A.
More Early English Wills from the Probate Registry at Somerset House. (*Editor wanted*)
Early Lincoln Wills and Documents from the Bishops' Registers, &c., edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall.
Early Canterbury Wills, edited by William Cowper, B.A., and J. Meadows Cowper.
Early Norwich Wills, edited by Walter Rye and F. J. Furnivall.
Early Lyrical Poems from the Harl. MS. 2253, re-edited by Prof. Hall Griffin, M.A.
Alliterative Prophecies, edited from the MSS. by Prof. Brandl, Ph.D.
Miscellaneous Alliterative Poems, edited from the MSS. by Dr. L. Morsbach.
Bird and Beast Poems, a collection from MSS., edited by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Seire Mori, &c., from the Lichfield MS. 16, ed. Mrs. L. Grindon, LL.A., and Miss Florence Gilbert.
Nicholas Trivet's French Chronicle, from Sir A. Acland-Hood's unique MS. (*Editor wanted*)
Early English Homilies in Harl. 2276 &c., c. 1400, ed. J. Friedländer.
Extracts from the Registers of Boughton, ed. Hy. Littlehales, Esq.
The Diary of Prior Moore of Worcester, A.D. 1518-35, from the unique MS., ed. Henry Littlehales, Esq.
The Fore Catif, edited from its MSS., by Mr. Peake.
Trevise's englisht Vegetius on the Art of War, MS. 30 Magd. Coll. Oxf., ed. L. C. Wharton, M.A.
Poems attributed to Richard Maydenstone, from MS. Rawl. A 389, edited by Dr. W. Heuser.
Knighthood and Battle, a verse-Vegetius from a Pembroke Coll. MS., Cambr., ed. Dr. R. Dyboski.

EXTRA SERIES.

Bp. Fisher's English Works, Pt. II., with his *Life and Letters*, ed. Rev. Donald Bayne, B.A. [*At Press*].
Sir Tristrem, from the unique Auchinleck MS., edited by George F. Black.
John of Arderne's Surgery, c. 1425, ed. J. F. Payne, M.D.
De Guilleville's Pilgrimage of the Sowle, edited by Prof. Dr. Leon Kellner.
Vicary's Anatomie, 1548, from the unique MS. copy by George Jeans, edited by F. J. & Percy Furnivall.
Vicary's Anatomie, 1548, ed. 1577, edited by F. J. & Percy Furnivall. Part II. [*At Press*].
A Compilation of Surgerye, from H. de Mandeville and Lanfrank, A.D. 1892, ed. Dr. J. F. Payne.
William Staunton's St. Patrik's Purgatory, &c., ed. Mr. G. P. Krapp, U.S.A.
Trevise's Bartholomew de Proprietatibus Rerum, re-edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
Bullein's Dialogue against the Fever Pestilence, 1564, 1573, 1578. Ed. A. H. and M. Bullen. Part II.
The Romance of Boetius and Sidras, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
The Romance of Clariodus, and *Sir Amadas*, re-edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Sir Degrevant, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. Luick.
Robert of Brunne's Chronicle of England, from the Inner Temple MS., ed. by Prof. W. E. Mead, Ph.D.
Maundeville's Voiage and Travaille, re-edited from the Cotton MS. Titus C. 16, &c., by Miss M. Bateson.
Avowynge of Arthur, re-edited from the unique Ireland MS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Guy of Warwick, Copland's version, edited by a pupil of the late Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.
Awdelay's Poems, re-edited from the unique MS. Douce 302, by Prof. Dr. E. Wülfing.
The Wyse Chylde and other early Treatises on Education, Northwich School, Harl. 2099 &c., ed. G. Collar, M.
Oaxton's Dietes and Sayengis of Philosophers, 1477, with Lord Tollemache's MS. version, ed. S. I. Butler, M.
Oaxton's Book of the Ordre of Chynalry, collated with Loutfut's Scotch copy. (*Editor wanted*)
Lydgate's Dance of Death, ed. Miss Florence Warren.
Lydgate's Lyfe of oure Lady, ed. by Prof. Georg Fiedler, Ph.D.
Lydgate's Life of St. Edmund, edited from the MSS. by Dr. Axel Erdmann.
Lydgate's Triumph Poems, edited by Dr. E. Sieper.
Lydgate's Minor Poems, edited by Dr. Otto Glanung.
Richard Coeur de Lion, re-edited from Harl. MS. 4690, by Prof. Hausknecht, Ph.D.
The Romance of Athelstan, re-edited by a pupil of the late Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D.
The Romance of Sir Degare, re-edited by Dr. Breul.
The Gospel of Nichodemus, edited by Ernest Riedel.
Muloaster's Positions 1581, and *Elementarie* 1582, ed. Dr. Th. Klaehr, Dresden.
Walton's verse Boethius de Consolatione, edited by Mark H. Liddell, U.S.A.
Sir Landeval and Sir Launfal, edited by Dr. Zimmernmann.
Rolland's Seven Sages, the Scottish version of 1560, edited by George F. Black.
Parthenope of Blois, edited from the complete MS., &c., by Dr. A. T. Böttcher.
Early English Fabliaux, a Collection, edited by Prof. George H. McKnight, Ph.D.

The Romance of Emaré.

Early English Text Society.

Extra Series. No. xcix.

1906.

BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 13, UNTER DEN LINDEN.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

The Romance of Emaré.

RE-EDITED FROM THE MS.,
WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY

BY

EDITH RICKERT, PH.D.

LONDON :

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY
BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LIMITED,
DRYDEN HOUSE, 43, GERRARD STREET, SOHO, W.

1906 (*issued in 1908*).

The Anglo-Saxon Psalms; all the MSS. in Parallel Texts, ed. Dr. H. Logeman and F. Harsley, B.A.
 Beowulf, a critical Text, &c., edited by a Pupil of the late Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.
 Byrhtferth's Handbooc, ed. by Prof. G. Hempf.
 Early English Confessionals, ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
 The Seven Sages, in the Northern Dialect, from a Cotton MS., edited by Dr. Squires.
 The Master of the Game, a Book of Huntynge for Hen. V. when Prince of Wales. (*Editor wanted.*)
 Allred's Rule of Nuns, &c., edited from the Vernon MS., by the Rev. Canon H. R. Bramley, M.A.
 Early English Verse Lives of Saints, Standard Collection, from the Harl. MS. (*Editor wanted.*)
 A Lapidary, from Lord Tollemache's MS., &c., edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
 Early English Deeds and Documents, from unique MSS., ed. Dr. Lorenz Morsbach.
 Gilbert Banastre's Poems, and other Boecaccio englishings, ed. by Prof. Dr. Max Förster.
 Lanfranc's Cirurgie, ab. 1400 A.D., ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker, Part II.
 William of Nassington's Mirror of Life, from Jn. of Waldby, edited by J. A. Herbert, M.A.
 More Early English Wills from the Probate Registry at Somerset House. (*Editor wanted.*)
 Early Lincoln Wills and Documents from the Bishops' Registers, &c., edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall.
 Early Canterbury Wills, edited by William Cowper, B.A., and J. Meadows Cowper.
 Early Norwich Wills, edited by Walter Rye and F. J. Furnivall.
 Early Lyrical Poems from the Harl. MS. 2253, re-edited by Prof. Hall Griffin, M.A.
 Alliterative Prophecies, edited from the MSS. by Prof. Brandl, Ph.D.
 Miscellaneous Alliterative Poems, edited from the MSS. by Dr. L. Morsbach.
 Bird and Beast Poems, a collection from MSS., edited by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
 Seire Mori, &c., from the Lichfield MS. 16, ed. Mrs. L. Grindon, LL.A., and Miss Florence Gilbert.
 Nicholas Trivet's French Chronicle, from Sir A. Acland-Hood's unique MS. (*Editor wanted.*)
 Early English Homilies in Harl. 2276 &c., c. 1400, ed. J. Friedländer.
 Extracts from the Registers of Boughton, ed. Hy. Littlehales, Esq.
 The Diary of Prior Moore of Worcester, A.D. 1518-35, from the unique MS., ed. Henry Littlehales, Esq.
 The Pore Caitif, edited from its MSS., by Mr. Peake.
 Trevisa's enghliht Vegetius on the Art of War, MS. 30 Magd. Coll. Oxf., ed. L. C. Wharton, M.A.
 Poems attributed to Richard Maydenstone, from MS. Rawl. A 389, edited by Dr. W. Heuser.
 Knighthood and Battle, a verse-Vegetius from a Pembroke Coll. MS., Cambr., ed. Dr. R. Dyboski.

EXTRA SERIES.

Bp. Fisher's English Works, Pt. II., with his Life and Letters, ed. Rev. Ronald Bayne, B.A. [*At Press.*]
 Sir Tristrem, from the unique Auchinleck MS., edited by George F. Black.
 John of Arderne's Surgery, c. 1425, ed. J. F. Payne, M.D.
 De Guilleville's Pilgrimage of the Sowle, edited by Prof. Dr. Leon Kellner.
 Vicary's Anatomie, 1548, from the unique MS. copy by George Jeans, edited by F. J. & Percy Furnivall.
 Vicary's Anatomie, 1548, ed. 1577, edited by F. J. & Percy Furnivall. Part II. [*At Press.*]
 A Compilation of Surgerye, from H. de Mandeville and Lanfrank, A.D. 1392, ed. Dr. J. F. Payne.
 William Staunton's St. Patrick's Purgatory, &c., ed. Mr. G. P. Krapp, U.S.A.
 Trevisa's Bartholomæus de Proprietatibus Rerum, re-edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
 Ballein's Dialogue against the Feuer Pestilence, 1564, 1573, 1578. Ed. A. H. and M. Bullen. Part II.
 The Romance of Boetus and Sidrac, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
 The Romance of Clariodus, and Sir Amadas, re-edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
 Sir Degrevant, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. Luick.
 Robert of Brunne's Chronicle of England, from the Inner Temple MS., ed. by Prof. W. E. Mead, Ph.D.
 Maundeville's Voiage and Travaile, re-edited from the Cotton MS. Titus C. 16, &c., by Miss M. Bateson.
 Awowynge of Arthur, re-edited from the unique Ireland MS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
 Guy of Warwick, Copland's version, edited by a pupil of the late Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.
 Awdelay's Poems, re-edited from the unique MS. Douce 302, by Prof. Dr. E. Wülfing.
 The Wyse Chyldre and other early Treatises on Education, Northwich School, Harl. 2099 &c., ed. G. Collar, B.
 Caxton's Dictes and Sayengis of Philosophers, 1477, with Lord Tollemache's MS. version, ed. S. I. Butler, B.
 Caxton's Book of the Ordre of Chyualry, collated with Loutfut's Scotch copy. (*Editor wanted.*)
 Lydgate's Dance of Death, ed. Miss Florence Warren.
 Lydgate's Lyfe of our Lady, ed. by Prof. Georg Fiedler, Ph.D.
 Lydgate's Life of St. Edmund, edited from the MSS. by Dr. Axel Erdmaun.
 Lydgate's Triumph Poems, edited by Dr. E. Sieper.
 Lydgate's Minor Poems, edited by Dr. Otto Glauning.
 Richard Coeur de Lion, re-edited from Harl. MS. 4690, by Prof. Hausknecht, Ph.D.
 The Romance of Athelstan, re-edited by a pupil of the late Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D.
 The Romance of Sir Degare, re-edited by Dr. Breul.
 The Gospel of Nichodemus, edited by Ernest Riedel.
 Mulcaster's Positions 1581, and Elementarie 1582, ed. Dr. Th. Klasher, Dresden.
 Walton's verse Boethius de Consolatione, edited by Mark H. Liddell, U.S.A.
 Sir Landeval and Sir Launfal, edited by Dr. Zimmermann.
 Rolland's Seven Sages, the Scottish version of 1560, edited by George F. Black.
 Partonope of Blois, edited from the complete MS., &c., by Dr. A. T. Böttker.
 Early English Fabliaux, a Collection, edited by Prof. George H. McKnight, Ph.D.

○

The Romance of Emaré.

Early English Text Society.

Extra Series. No. xcix.

1906.

BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 13, UNTER DEN LINDEN.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

The Romance of Emaré.

RE-EDITED FROM THE MS.,
WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY

BY

EDITH RICKERT, PH.D.

LONDON :
PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY
By KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LIMITED,
DRYDEN HOUSE, 43, GERRARD STREET, SOHO, W.
1906 (*issued in 1908*).

11473.77
✓ B

Extra Series, No. XCIX.

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED, LONDON AND BUNGAY

PREFACE.

THIS edition was prepared in 1898-99; but as it had to wait its turn on the list of the Early English Text Society, it has been completely revised, and extended in the light of several fresh publications on the subject, which have appeared in the meantime. My thanks are due to Dr. Furnivall for good advice on many occasions, and to Professor Manly, of the University of Chicago, for reading the proofs.

London, July 19, 1907.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION :—	
§ 1. MANUSCRIPT	ix
§ 2. EDITIONS	xi
§ 3. DIALECT	xiii
§ 4. METRE	xviii
§ 5. STYLE	xxii
§ 6. AUTHOR AND DATE	xxviii
§ 7. IMMEDIATE SOURCE	xxviii
§ 8. ORIGINS	xxxii
§ 9. CONCLUSION	xlvi
APPENDIX	xlix
TEXT	1
NOTES	33
GLOSSARIAL INDEX	49
INDEX OF NAMES	55

INTRODUCTION.

- § 1. *Manuscript*, pp. ix-xi.
 § 2. *Editions*, pp. xi-xiii.
 § 3. *Dialect*, pp. xiii-xviii.
 § 4. *Metre*, pp. xviii-xxii.
 § 5. *Style*, pp. xxii-xxvii.

- § 6. *Author and Date*, p. xxviii.
 § 7. *Immediate Source*, pp. xxviii-xxxii.
 § 8. *Origins*, pp. xxxii-xlvi.
 § 9. *Conclusion*, p. xlvi.

§ 1. THE MANUSCRIPT.

MS. Cotton Caligula A ii, in the British Museum, consists of two paper quartos, originally marked Vespasian D 8 and Vespasian D 21,¹ bound together with the present designation before 1654.²

Vespasian D 8, which contains *Emaré* (fols. 71-76) is, in the main, a collection of English verse (fols. 3-139);³ Vespasian D 21 contains statutes of the Carthusian order, 1411-1504 (fols. 144-210); fols. 142, 143 seem to be the parchment cover of Vespasian D 21;⁴ and fols. 1, 2, 140, 141, blank pages inserted when the two volumes were bound together.⁵

Vespasian D 21, in the 16th century, belonged to a Cambridgeshire family, the Cookes of Milton;⁶ and very possibly came from Denney Abbey, about 7½ miles north of Cambridge.⁷ The

¹ In a 17th century hand on fols. 3, 140.

² They are not mentioned in the two earliest catalogues extant; while in the third, compiled before 1654, Caligula A ii is entered with a table of contents corresponding to the *Elenchus* on fol. 1.

³ Together with a translation from John of Bordeaux of a treatise on pestilence, and a form of confession in prose; also four prescriptions, and a short Latin chronicle.

⁴ Fol. 143b contains the signature "Thomas Cooke genl," which is plainly blotted on fol. 144a. Fol. 142 is blank and about ½ inch narrower than 143, as if it had been folded upon itself in the binding, in such a way that it brings the two rough sides of the parchment together.

⁵ Fol. 1 contains the 17th century *Elenchus*. Fols. 1 and 2 show no water-marks, but the marks on fols. 140, 141 are different from all others in the book, and these folios are also shorter than the others, and with the lower edges untrimmed. In all four, the paper is thinner and of a different quality. In fols. 140, 141 the grain runs across, not down, the page.

⁶ A second signature on fol. 143b is "Thomas Cooke de Mylton." The writer was born in 1541, the elder son of Judge William Cooke, lord of the manor (see latter's will in Somerset House).

⁷ At least, the Cookes seem to have built a new house out of its stones, when it was demolished in 1538 (*History of the Parish of Milton*, Camb. Antiq. Soc., XI, 1869, p. 28).

only clue to the origin of Vespasian D 8, the inscription "Donum Jo. Rogers" (fol. 3), in a 16th century hand, is too slight to be of use.¹

Its date, however, can be ascertained within narrow limits. It contains Lydgate's *Nightingale* (fols. 59-64b), written not before 1446, almost certainly in that year;² likewise a short Latin chronicle of England (fols. 109-110), which is carried down to the reign of Henry VI by the hand that seems to have written all the other pieces³ (except the four prescriptions on fol. 13b), while a second hand adds a note of Henry's death and the reign of Edward IV, and a third, the reign of Richard III. It is highly probable, then, that the bulk of the MS. was copied between 1446 and 1460.⁴

It shows a great mixture and confusion of forms:

1. Dentals.

(a) Interchange of d and th (= þ, ð) in all positions, as: pow3tur, donder, dey; vnther, wordy (worthy), erdly; hondereth (hundred).

(b) Interchange of t and th (= þ) in all positions, as: thylle (tylle), tho (to); þow3þur; kny3th, whythe (white), etc.⁵

2. The inflectional and unaccented stem vowel. The proportions in *Emaré* alone, are as follows: -es 89, -ys 20, -us 18; -ur 97, -er 26, -yr 17; -ylle 18, -ulle 9, -elle 3.⁶

¹ Five men of that name, during the 16th century alone, are included in the *Dictionary of National Biography*.

² Lydgate's *Minor Poems*, ed. Glauning (E.E.T.S., Extra Series, LXXX), 1900, pp. xxxvii-xxxviii.

³ This is not absolutely certain. The letters are formed similarly, but there is some variation in fineness and closeness. However, there is no abrupt break; and the gradual loosening of the hand, with occasional recurrences to closer writing, is better explained on the hypothesis of different times and moods than of different scribes.

⁴ Cf. also Glauning, *op. cit.*, p. xi.

⁵ This confusion in writing seems to mark a pronunciation in which the front of the tongue is pressed hard against the upper teeth, with an inevitable thickening of the dental sound. In Mid-Yorkshire such pronunciation is marked, affecting d initial and before a vowel, and initial and final t. Cf. C. Clough Robinson, *A Glossary of Words Pertaining to the Dialect of Mid-Yorkshire*, London, 1876, pp. xiv, xvii-xviii, and p. xv below. It is found extensively also in *Sir Gowther*.

⁶ The -u seems to point to West Midland influence as the -y to Northern, and the -e to Southern. A peculiarity which may point to the home of the author or of the scribe is the use of gh to represent the sound th, as in sygh (= syth, 560), kygh (= kyth, 594). This survives to-day in the name of the town Keighley (pronounced Keithley) in the West Riding (cf. p. xvii below).

3. Partial palatalization of k : mykylle, mychylle; sykyngge, worche, ylke, euerychone, etc.¹

4. The insertion of inorganic ȝ or gh, as in kowȝpe, gryght, etc.

The present MS., then, may be a Southern copy taken directly from a MS. written in the original dialect, including certain West Midland and Northern spellings by reason of proximity to these districts; but the irregularity and variety of the forms suggest rather that it has passed through several hands.

The MS. is incomplete, eight stanzas of *Sussan*, the first piece, being lost and a portion of the *Eustache*, which breaks off on fol. 139b.

Of the 139 leaves, about 93 contain romances or tales; 14½, three didactic poems by Lydgate; 26, short religious poems, chiefly lyrics;² and 5½ prose.

Of the twelve long narrative poems, eight are romances proper: (1) *Eglamour of Artas*, (2) *Octavian Imperator*,³ (3) *Launfal Miles*,³ (4) *Lybeaus Disconus*,³ (5) *Emaré*, (6) *Sege of Ierusalem*, (7) *Cheuelere Assigne*, and (8) *Isumbras*; four are religious tales or romances: (9) *Sussan*, (10) *Ypotys*, (11) *Owayne Miles*, (12) *Tundale*.

From the plain workman-like character of the MS. and its marked religious and didactic element, it would seem to have been a tale book copied in some monastery.

§ 2. EDITIONS.

1. Ritson, *Ancient Engleish Metrical Romanceës*,⁴ London, 1802, II, 204–247, with a list of original readings, III, 222, of corrections, III, 440, of conjectural emendations, III, 443, and full notes, III, 323–33. The text is practically correct, but does not indicate the graphic peculiarities of the MS.: p is printed as th, medial and

¹ The partial palatalization might be accounted for by the passing of the MS. through the hands of several scribes; but it might also have belonged to the dialect.

² Three hortatory religious poems: *Carta Ihesu Christi*, *The Stacyonys of Rome*, *Trentale Sancti Gregorii*; two lives of saints, *Ierome* and *Eustache*; 14 religious lyrics.

³ Thought by Sarrazin and Kaluza to be by the same author, Thomas Chestre, who certainly wrote *Launfal*. They are found together, as are also 6, 7, 8, and 10, 11, being separated from the other romances by religious matter. *Emaré* stands alone between a short prayer in verse and the *Carta Ihesu Christi*.

⁴ Reprinted by Edmund Goldsmid, Edinburgh, 1885, with a few MS. readings, but also with fresh errors. Kölbing published a collation of Ritson with the MS., *Englische Studien*, XV, 248.

final ȝ as gh, initial ȝ as y; u and v, and i and y are not according to the MS.; the tail to n is disregarded except where I give the expansion in my notes, the tail to r always, and the crossing of ll and h; the contractions for ur, us, are printed er, es; contractions are expanded, and with the few exceptions given above, words joined or separated, and a few obvious corrections made, without indication of change.

2. Gough, *Emaré* (Morsbach and Holthausen, *Old and Middle English Texts*, vol. II), London, New York, Heidelberg, 1901. This text is normalized and considerably altered in an attempt to reconstruct the original, with MS. readings in the foot-notes, and a table on pp. x, xi of the principal classes of phonetic changes. Aside from these, in several points not deemed important enough for separate quotation, Dr. Gough's text differs from that of the present edition: the crossing of ll and h is disregarded, expanded contractions are sometimes differently italicized; the curl to r is sometimes disregarded, and again written re; ð, ñ is printed sometimes n sometimes nn, sometimes ne; u and v are not distinguished as in the MS.

The introduction is brief; but Dr. Gough treats of the sources of *Emaré* in his paper *On the Constance Saga* (Brandl and Schmidt, *Palaestra*, no. 23, Berlin, 1902) and its metrical and grammatical aspects in his dissertation, *On the Middle English Metrical Romance of Emaré*, Kiel, 1900, which I obtained late; hence, I have used it chiefly in my notes.

3. The present edition aims to give the text as the scribe intended it to be read. Expansions of contracted forms, additions and a few obvious corrections are indicated.¹ Capitals and punctuation are modern. It has been thought expedient to give in the foot-notes, aside from the classes of changes mentioned, the few special cases in which Ritson (R.) and Gough (G.) vary from the MS. Gough's emendations, in so far as they seem to find a basis in the text itself, are given in the notes at the end of the volume.

In a unique MS. which bears internal evidence of being a copy,² and shows a great mixture of dialects, I have not attempted to restore the text, believing that such a reconstruction must be largely arbitrary.

¹ Expansions by italics; additions in brackets; probable omissions in parentheses.

² Cf. *Emaré*, ll. 331, 332, 337, which show plainly that the scribe had lost his place; likewise 837, 839, 840.

I have departed from recent custom, in expanding H to lle inasmuch as in *Emaré* there is not a single instance of ll or He.¹ I have retained the marking of gh, h, n, ñ, r, because I am unable to find any principle governing the usage.

In regard to gh, 3th, h, the balance of evidence seems to show that the stroke has lost its value, although in a few cases an -e added serves to correct the metre.²

The marking of m, ñ, n, if expanded at all, must be rendered sometimes un, nn, mm, sometimes me, ne; but there are also cases in which it must be meaningless.³

The curl to r seems to be mere ornament.⁴

In the *Introduction*, I have endeavoured, in addition to a brief treatment of the dialect and metre, which afford no special problems, to make a careful study of the style and sources of the poem, with a view to determining its place and relationships in mediaeval literature.

§ 3. DIALECT.

A. PHONOLOGY.

A study of the rhymes gives the following results:

a. Vowels.

O.E. ǣ is retained.⁵

O.E. ā wavers between o and a. It becomes o in fome (835, 818) rhyming with trone (836) and with come (817), trone (820), Rome (821); home (601) rhyming with sone (O.E. sōna, 602);

¹ The observation should have been continued throughout the MS. As far as I have been able to read (fully half), the exceptions to the rule are less than half-a-dozen, over against innumerable cases where the usage is uniform. I conclude that the sign still had meaning for this scribe.

² I have not observed these letters carefully throughout the MS. because in *Emaré* alone the irregularity is sufficiently great. In 63 cases, -3th, gh(t) lacks -e and requires none; in 42, it is required. In 16, -3th, -3h(t) lacks -e and requires none; in 4, it is required. In 3, -3hte occurs but the -e is unnecessary; in 3, it is needed. There are no cases of -ghte. These results are not final because in some cases lines may be read differently; but they serve to show the confusion of practice.

³ In *Emaré*, gan occurs 10 times, gan 3; vpon, vpoñ 7 times; vpone 1; home twice, hom 3 times, hom once; none 3 times, non 4, non 4; etc. Altogether, I think much more evidence is desirable before trying to settle this point. In *Emaré*, the mark seems to be without meaning. Cf. also vseden (62), loueden (124), seten (218), whēns (418), etc.

⁴ In 91 cases in *Emaré*, we find -er, -ur; in 21 -ere; in 31 er. Her as adverb occurs 19 times, here once, her once; her as pronoun, 20 times, over against here once and her 16 times. There is also a great preponderance of ther, per, wer, neuur, euur, over the forms in -e.

⁵ Cf. ll. 757-58; 1031-30; 195, 201.

anon (886) with sone (O.E. sunu, 887); oon (157) with sonne (O.E. sunu, 158); lore (412) with be-fore (413). It is retained in gare (198) rhyming with chare (O.Fr. char, 201); sore (633) and more (636), with spare (630) and kare (O.E. cearu, 627); a-lone (693) and wo-by-gone (696) rhyming with name (O.E. nama, 687) and tane (690).

O.E. æ becomes usually a,¹ but twice e: was (463) rhyming with prese (O.Fr. presse, 464), sete (221, 893) with swete (O.E. awete, 220, 892).

O.E. æ becomes usually e,² but it is once a: there (204) rhyming with chare (201) gare (O.E. gāra, 198) fare (O.E. faran, 195); and once o: wore (410) rhyming with be-fore (413).

O.E. ǣ remains³ except in ecg, eg, where it becomes ay: say (416, 435) rhymes with ray (O.Fr. rai, 415) gay (O.Fr. gai, 444).

O.E. ǣ remains.⁴

O.E. ēā varies. It becomes a: bale 1010) rhyming with pale (O.Fr. pale, 1009); kare (627) with spare (O.E. spārian, 630). It becomes o: be-holde (249) rhyming with golde (O.E. gold, 243) and molde (O.E. molde, 246). It becomes e: marke (504) rhymes with clerke (O.E. cleric, O.Fr. clerc, 495).⁵

O.E. ēā becomes e,⁶ once written ee: lees (O.E. lēas, 110) rhymes with hepeznnes (O.E. hæðennys, 109).

O.E. eo becomes e:⁷ but 3ynge (380, etc.) rhymes with þyng (O.E. ping, 379-82) kyng (O.E. cyng, 383) etc.

O.E. eo becomes e,⁸ but both 3ede and 3ode occur: 3ede (O.E. eodon, 213) rhymes with stede (O.E. stēda, 210); 3ode (O.E. eode, 516) with blode (O.E. blōd, 513) gode (O.E. gōd, 510), fode (O.E. fōda, 507).

O.E. ī, i, ŷ, ȳ, from whatever source, remain as y, rhyming together and with French i.⁹ The one exception is euyll (O.E. y-fel, 535) rhyming with deuyll (536).¹⁰

¹ Cf. ll. 121-22, 289-90, 374-73, 459-62-65, 557-56, 773-72. So æg becomes ay: may (452) rhyming with ray (O.Fr. rai, 451).

² Cf. 207-210; 345-42-39; 826-27; 803-2; 662-61; 548-49-46-52; 1002-999.

³ Cf. ll. 567-73-76; 190-91; 434-33.

⁴ Cf. ll. 215-14; 237-34; 175-76; 342-39, etc.

⁵ No other instances occur. ⁶ Cf. ll. 816-10-07.

⁷ Cf. ll. 498-501-495.

⁸ Cf. ll. 8-7, 423-26-32; 291-94-97-300; 792-89-86-83, etc.

⁹ Cf. ll. 599-98; 327-30-33-36; 227-26; 951-54-57-60; 581-80; 526-27 etc.

¹⁰ Also the e from y in hepeznnes (cf. ll. 109-10), but this was originally unstressed. Here (1005) probably came from the form heran.

O.E. *ō* remains.¹

O.E. *ō* remains except before *ȝ*th, *gh*t where it becomes *ow*.²

O.E. *ū* becomes *o*.³

O.E. *ū* becomes *ow*, rhyming with a similar development out of O.Fr. *u*, *ou*: *towne* (O.E. *tūn*, 804) rhymes with *renowne* (O.Fr. *renumee*, 801);⁴ *bowre* (O.E. *būr*, 63) with *flowre* (O.Fr. *fleur*, 66), *honour* (O.Fr. *honour*, 69), *emperour* (O.Fr. *emperour*, 72).⁵

b. Consonants.

The chief point of interest shown by the rhymes is that *-h-gh*, seems to have lost its guttural quality: *hygh* (O.E. *higian*, 103) rhymes with *fayr*y (O.Fr. *faerie*, 104); *hye* (O.E. *hēah*, 193) with *melodie*, (O.Fr. *melodie*, 194).⁶

There is some evidence in ll. 663-66-69-72 to show that the author shared the scribe's confusion of *d*, *th*, (= *p*, *ð*), or *t*, *th* (= *p*) *t*.⁷

B. INFLECTIONS.

Inorganic *-e* is commonly written, but can rarely be attributed with any degree of certainty to the author.⁸

Nouns form their plural regularly in *-s*, *-es* (*-is*, *-ys*, *-us* in the MS.).⁹ The plural in *-n* occurs once.¹⁰ There are several plurals without ending,¹¹ one with umlaut.¹²

Adjectives have no ending or *-e*.

Pronouns are regular: *me*, *we*; *þe*, *the*, *pyn*; *he*.

Adverbs end in *-ly*, *-lye*, or have no ending.¹³

Verbs afford the chief tests of dialect.

¹ Cf. ll. 163-64, etc. ² Cf. ll. 2-1, 170-69, 583-84, etc.

³ Cf. ll. 5-4, 224-25, 82-83, 978-75-81-84, etc.

⁴ Also with *treson*, *reson* (795-98) which must stand for *tresoun*, *resoun*.

⁵ Cf. also ll. 899-98; 663-66-72. ⁶ Cf. also ll. 165-59-62-68.

⁷ And perhaps (so G.), in the rhymes *wrothē-othē* (265-66), *bot-wote* (268-69).

⁸ Cf. ll. 80, 349, 657, 694. Gough's emendations are given in the notes at the end. About a dozen other cases might be cited, all more or less uncertain.

⁹ But sometimes two forms are used, as *flowrys* (29) and *fleur* (125, 149); *bowrys* (28) and *bowre* (899). Plurals with and without *-s* often occur together (cf. ll. 91, 94, 154, 155, 389-90, 898-99).

¹⁰ *ȝen* (298) rhyming with *syȝen* (299).

¹¹ *Honde* (MS. *hondas*, 639) rhymes with *londe* (642), *sonde* (645) *wronge* (648); *ȝere* (816) rhymes with *dere* (813) *clere* (810) *chere* (807); *ston* (100) with *non* (101); *stye* (196) with *lady* (197), *strete* (543) with *swete* (546), etc. *pyng* occurs frequently, but always in a formula probably archaic (cf. ll. 40, 64, etc.).

¹² *Fete* (211) rhymes with *swete* (212). *Fote* (1017) rhyming with *bote* (1011) I take to be a survival of the old dative plural *fofum*. *Fete*, however, is in the same construction.

¹³ Cf. ll. 287-86; 631-32; 854-53; 868-69; 894-91-900-897.

The present infinitive loses its -n in 83 cases; and keeps it in 9, affecting, however, only 5 verbs: sene, done, bene, tane, gone.¹

The present participle is not found in rhyme, the one case given by Wilda being inconclusive.²

The perfect participle keeps its -n in 9 cases, 5 verbs: done, sene, forlorne, borne, gone;³ and loses it in 3 cases, 2 verbs: be, holde.⁴

The prefix y- is twice found and is necessary for the rhythm.⁵

The indicative present singular is not found. The plural ends in -e: (we) rede (216) rhymes with stede (210, dat. sing.); (3e) ryde (971) with be-tyde (970, 3rd sing. pres. opt.); (they) stonde (116) with honde (115, dat. sing.). Weak verbs have n + d become nt.⁶

Very few forms of the preterite occur.⁷ Among strong verbs:⁸ (she, he) sete (221, 893) rhyming with swete (220, 892); (they) ponge (659), with strong (658); (they) sye (68), sy (869), with slye (67), curteysly (868); and also (they) syzen (299) rhyming with yzen (298).

The optative ends in -e.⁹

The few preteritive present forms are not peculiar.¹⁰

Among the anomalous verbs, the only notable form is wes (written *was*) rhyming with prese (cf. p. xiv above).¹¹

C. SUMMARY.

The dialect is North-East Midland as Wilda¹² concluded; but its Northern character must be emphasized. Common to the

¹ Cf. ll. 423, 486-482, 483, 489, 492; 4, 975-5, 978, 981, 984; 426, 626-432, 625; 690-687-693-696; 741-35-738-744.

² *Über die Örtliche Verbreitung der Zwölfeiligen Schweisfreimstrophe in England*, Breslau, 1887, pp. 27, 28. The line is 974: "A-3eyn þe emperour komyng," where *komyng* is a verbal noun, of which there are various other instances (cf. ll. 118-119, 511, 759, etc., with a dependent genitive).

³ Cf. ll. 229, 406, 469, 856-230, 407, 470, 857; 429-432; 255-261; 258, 520-264, 521; 696-693, 687.

⁴ Cf. ll. 364, 718-365, 719; 1027-1028.

⁵ Y-borne (520), y-dy3th (395). In l. 440, which otherwise repeats l. 395, it is needed.

⁶ Cf. ll. 235-36, 931-32, 190-91, etc.

⁷ The old passive *hätte* appears as *hy3te* (85), 3rd singular, but may be due to the scribe.

⁸ Cf. ll. 235, 931, 1015-236, 932, 1016; 190, 434-191, 433, for weak verbs.

⁹ Cf. ll. 263-62; 630-27; 253-54; 970-71.

¹⁰ Cf. ll. 672-63-66-69; 269-68; 252-46-43; 720-17-14-11.

¹¹ The -s endings within the line (1032-1033) are more probably survivals than interpolations.

¹² *Op. cit.*, p. 26.

Northern and Midland dialects are: (1) the wavering of O.E. *ā* between *a* and *o*; ¹ (2) the retention of O.E. *ȝ*, *ȳ* (derived by umlaut); ² (3) the adverbial ending *-ly*, *-lye*. Northern are: (1) the dropping of *-n* in the infinitive (the exceptions in *Emaré* occur in texts purely Northern); (2) the persistence of *-n* in the past participle; (3) the assimilation of the vowel of the plural to that of the singular, in the preterite of strong verbs.³ On these grounds I judge that the author lived north of the Humber.

In the hope of obtaining additional evidence for or against this belief, I have compared the vocabulary of *Emaré* with more than 30 glossaries of the 14th and 15th centuries, and with the various modern word-lists published by the English Dialect Society. Among these last, the Yorkshire glossaries contain about 20 of the 40 uncommon or dialectical forms in *Emaré* (of which 10 or more are now obsolete), such as: bigging, ding, fell, felter, fra, gate (= way), gether, greet (= weep, with preterite *gruot*), kell, kith, lashed, lovesome, ma, mense, mickle, til (= to), wor, war (= was), yark. Of these 40 words,⁴ Chaucer contains only 6;⁵ of three Yorkshire texts, Y shows 28, T 23, MA 25;⁶ three supposed Lancashire poems, EEAP, 25;⁷ a text showing marks of both N.E.

¹ G. gives 17 cases of *o* to 3 of *a*. I count 15 *o* to 5 *a*, including *Abro* as determinative of *o*, which it certainly is not. Omitting *Abro*-rhymes, I make 9 *o* to 5 *a*; if *Abro* = *Abra*, as I have shown (note on l. 57 below), the count becomes 9 *o* to 11 *a*.

² Cf. also Kölbing's *Amis and Amiloun* (*Alteng. Bib.*, II), 1884, pp. xxxi-xxxii, in connection with ll. 109-10, 463-64.

³ L. 659 only.

⁴ After various experiments with different numbers of words, I decided to limit the comparison to those most characteristic and least common, barring words immediately derived from the French. Accordingly, I have used: byggyng, de[l]fulle, felle, feltred, fode, fryght (frith), gate (way), grette, kygh (kith), lashed, lay (law), le, lufsumme, mangery, menske, molde, myn, mynge, rappes, sale, snelle, styte, ponge (donge), tylle, warye, ȝarked, ȝoo; and the forms: by-forn, drury, erdly, fro, gedered, kelle, keuered, moo, mykyl, tane, vmbaydest, word (world), ȝyng.

⁵ Before, fro, keuered, lay, moo, tylle. That difference in scale of works compared does not obviate results appears thus: *Florence of Rome*, in 2187 lines, has 13 of these words, *Sir Gowther*, in 756, 19, to Chaucer's 6. *Promptorium Parvulorum* (Norfolk, circ. 1440) has 9, *Catholicon Anglicum* (N.E. Midland (?), 1483) has 12, or proportionately twice as many.

I must ask indulgence if here and there are errors in the counting, especially in the case of texts which lack glossaries; but an occasional mistake of this sort would not affect the general relationship of the groups of numbers.

⁶ Y = *York Plays*, T = *Towneley Plays*, MA = *Thornton Morte Arthure* (supposed Yorkshire), all in MSS. nearly contemporary with Cotton Caligula A. ii.

⁷ *Early English Alliterative Poems* (ed. Morris, E. E. T. S. 1).

Midland and W. Midland dialects, WA, 30.¹ Further,² among about 40 modern English dialect lists, the Whitby and Mid-Yorkshire glossaries³ contain each about 15 of these words, while those of N. W. Lincolnshire, the Lake District, Durham, Lancashire and Derby have from 7 to 12 each; and no list,⁴ I believe, outside Yorkshire and its neighbours (as given above), shows more than 4. The dialect of *Emaré* thus belongs to the very locality indicated by Trivet (cf. p. xxxiii below), between the Humber and Knaresborough,⁵ i. e. Mid-Yorkshire.

§ 4. METRE.

A. STANZA SCHEME.

Of the 86 12-line, tail-rhyme stanzas, 57 are according to the scheme: (1) aabccbddbeeb, or variants of this form; 29, according to (2) aabaabccbdddb or variants.⁶

Among the 57, the modifications are entirely in the fourth unit of the stanza.⁷ Thus we find: (a) aabccbddbeeb in 47 cases; (b) aabccbddbddb in 7 cases;⁸ (c) aabccbddbccb in 2 cases;⁹ (d) aabccbddbaab in one case.¹⁰ That is, the last couplet may consist of (a) a fresh rhyme; (b) the third couplet repeated; (c) the second couplet repeated; (d) the first couplet repeated.

Among the 29, we find: (a) aabaabccbdddb in 19 cases;¹¹

¹ *Wars of Alexander* (early 15th century). Skeat (p. xxiii) points out the mixture of dialects, which seems to me to indicate a Border district.

² Among other texts, *Torrent of Portyngale*, *Degrevant*, *Isumbras* and *Eglamour* contain many of the words on the list; but the absence of complete glossaries makes comparison difficult.

³ In general, the Mid-Yorkshire dialect is credited with being more "Scotch" than its neighbours (Robinson, *op. cit.* p. vii). I note that the so-called *Scottish Alliterative Poems* (ed. Amours, Sc. Text Soc.) contain 24 words in my list, and the *Destruction of Troy* (Scotch) has 18.

⁴ See publications of the English Dialect Society.

⁵ Robinson (*loc. cit.*). Trivet calls it *lieu mène* (p. 27) between England and Scotland. He was either unfamiliar with it, or considered London as the king's capital. But Knaresborough, although about midway between London and the Border, is not on either of the great roads to Scotland.

⁶ For different counts, see below, p. xix, note 9.

⁷ Except 86, which adds three lines: aabccbddbeebffb.

⁸ Stanzas 27, 32, 51, 67, 70, 77, 83. Perhaps also 43, 47, but see p. xix below, with note 10.

⁹ Stanzas 64, 71.

¹⁰ Stanza 34.

¹¹ Stanzas 1, 3, 8, 12-13, 19, 28, 31, 39, 42, 46, 57-58, 60-63, 74-75, 79, 81. Thus there are three groups of two stanzas in succession. Possibly also 38, but see p. xx below, with note 10.

(b) aabaabccbccb in 7 cases;¹ (c) aabaabccbaab in 3 cases;² that is, the last couplet may repeat either of the others in its rhyme.

Emaré is unique among romances of this class in its mixture of stanza forms. Kölbing suggested that this was intentional,³ and Wilda, in endorsing the view, added that the poem was perhaps first written in the stricter form, and afterwards altered by a scribe who had lost the feeling of the original.⁴

It does not seem probable, in this case, that so small a portion of the first rhyme-scheme would be preserved. The four romances constructed according to the stricter scheme show a very small degree of alteration.⁵ Moreover, three of them are much older than *Emaré*,⁶ and the fourth is in a different dialect.⁷ It seems more probable that the poet, who shows but little originality in any way, wrote the 86 stanzas in the form that 57 have retained—a form which was popular in his dialect and time.⁸

Notwithstanding the large proportion⁹ of stanzas in the stricter form, the greater variation in the couplets, according to both schemes, makes it practically certain that the minstrel's only concern was to have a fresh rhyme for his first and third couplets, leaving the second and fourth to repeat any of the others, as an additional grace of style, according to the conventional tags with which his memory was stored.¹⁰

¹ Stanzas 17, 26, 35, 59, 68–69, 82. This is Kölbing's Type II, found only in *Duke Rowlande* and *Sir Ottuell of Spayne*. I have not treated this separately, as it seems to me the personal idiosyncrasy of an author who could hardly have influenced the writer of *Emaré*.

² Stanzas 9, 20, 78.

³ *Op. cit.* pp. xix–xx.

⁴ *Op. cit.* p. 27.

⁵ According to Kölbing, (*op. cit.* pp. xv–xvii) *Amis and Amiloun* and the *Kyng of Tars* (in the Auchinleck MS.) show no exceptions. Reducing his numbers to terms of percentage I find that *Horn Childe* and *Maiden Rimnild* has 8½% of variation, *Lybeaus Disconus*, about 7%. If *Emaré* belonged here, the variation would be 6½%.

⁶ *Amis and Amiloun*, *Horn Childe*, *Kyng of Tars*.

⁷ *Lybeaus Disconus*, in S.E. England.

⁸ It is used in *Sir Gowther*, *Erl of Tolous*, *Torrent of Portyngale*; also, in *Isumbras*, *Eglamour*, *Athelston*, *Sir Cleges*, *Sege of Melayne*, *Le Bone Florence of Rome*.

⁹ Nearly 34%. Kölbing gives 35 stanzas; Gough says "about 32," but includes 22, 23, 43, with imperfect rhymes not confirmed elsewhere. I count 29 without including the doubtful stanza 38. Using Kölbing's numbers for the other romances, I find the percents of variation to be as follows: *Launfal*, 18½%; *Octavian*, 13%; *Isumbras* and the *Erl of Tolous*, 7%; *Rowland and Vernagu*, nearly 7%; *Athelston*, 5%; *Le Bone Florence of Rome*, 4½%; *Sir Amadas*, 4% and 3% (the versions printed by Robson and Weber respectively); *Sege of Melayne*, 2½%; *Eglamour*, 2%; *Sir Cleges* and *Sir Gowther*, no variations (*op. cit.*, pp. xix–xx).

¹⁰ With this accords the paucity of rhymes that he finds to make up his

B. RHYME.

The author's rhymes show the following peculiarities:

1. The accent is shifted to the ultima: (a) in French words rhyming together;¹ (b) in French words rhyming with English;² (c) in English words rhyming together.³

2. Assonance suffices: (a) m and n;⁴ (b) nd and ng;⁵ (c) d and t;⁶ (d) t and k;⁷ (e) f and þ.⁸

3. There is one clear case of imperfect vowel rhyme. Emaré⁹ (1023) rhymes with he (1026) story (1029) Egarye (1032) glorye (1035). However the names should be spelled, y still rhymes with e in this instance.

The rhyme -ynge, -ende is doubtful. Stanza 7 (ll. 75-78-81-84) is possibly a patchwork of two (cf. p. xxxii, n. 5, below). If ll. 445-46 and 448-49 rhyme together, stanza 38 belongs to the stricter type, and ll. 510-11 and 514-15, ll. 559-60 and 562-63 rhyme together. I incline to think that this was the case, in that the assonance was admitted, alternative y and e forms existed for some of the words,¹⁰ and later on, *e.g.* in Bale's *Kynge Johan* y and e rhymed together (cf. ll. 719, 879, 1198, 1970, 2208, 2238). But for another possibility, see note on l. 793.

stricter stanzas. Rhymes to none repeated in 6 stanzas; to þynge, in 5; þore and knyȝt, in 4; grete, be, and honour, in 2 each; hye, day, ys, and woo are used once.

¹ Vanyte (105) Crystyante (108); emperour (25) towre (26), etc.

² Fayry (104) hygh (103); spycerye (853) hastyllye (854), etc.

³ Bygynnyng (16) kyng (17), gretlye (997) by (998); heþennes (109) lees (110); lady (197) styte (196), wommon (443) anon (442), show an unstressed syllable rhyming with a stressed. Studyynge (283) sowenynge (284), rychely (517) hastily (518), wommon (427) Crystendom (428), two unstressed syllables together.

⁴ Nome (27) none (30). This occurs 14 times.

⁵ Lond (664) stronge (665). Cf. also 639-42-45-48. It is possible that -ynke rhymes with -yng; spendyng (271, 592) drynke (272, 593); but the lines are short. Cf. note on ll. 271-72.

⁶ Bledde (552) lete (549), swete (546) strete (543).

⁷ Loke (1014) bote (1011) fote (1017) sote (1020); gate (828) make (825) take (822) sake (819).

⁸ Lyfe (222) wyfe (228) sybe (225) swyde (219).

⁹ Emare (840) fre (831) le (834) powste (837) suggest that the author intended Emare, the form usually found; Egare (360) ferly (351) lady (354) dye (357) suggest that he intended Egarye (found 704 rhyming with y, and 810 where Emare is meant) although Egare (*esgaree*) is the correct form. See p. xxix below.

¹⁰ Notably, hynde, unhynde, wynde, fiend, viend, fynde; the other forms I do not know.

C. RHYTHM.

The general effect, even allowing for corruptions of the text, is rough. Short lines can sometimes be rectified by the hypothesis of a lost -e; long lines, by omission of redundant or explanatory words or phrases. But there remain many verses that cannot be made to follow closely a strict iambic ideal.

These departures cannot be numbered accurately, inasmuch as there are often several ways of reading a line; but certain general principles of variation may be noted.

1. The first syllable of the first foot is lacking, the line beginning with a stress. This is true of about one-fourth of the total number of lines.¹

Within the line there is no clear case that such an omission is warranted, although to avoid this conclusion it is sometimes necessary to emend where no obvious corruption exists.²

2. Instead of $x\bar{\text{L}}$ we find $xx\bar{\text{L}}$. I counted about 50 cases in the first foot, 17 in the last, 10 in the second, and 14 in the third. These numbers admit of considerable variation, but the principle holds that the practice is by far the most abundant in the first foot.³

3. There are also about a hundred cases⁴ in which elision is necessary, or something like O.E. resolved stress prevails. As examples of the blurring or elision of vowels, may be given: In $m\acute{o}ny$ a $d\acute{y}erse$ $l\acute{o}nde$ (15), $Syr\ \acute{A}rtyus$ $w\acute{a}s$ hys $n\acute{o}me$ (27); And $s\acute{p}\acute{e}ke$ we of pe $\acute{e}mper\acute{o}ur$ (72);⁵ of the tendency to run syllables together, especially in -yl, -en, -er (-ur, -yr), -ow, -eth: $Wyth$ $m\acute{e}nske$ and $m\acute{y}chyl$ $hon\acute{o}ur$ (69); In $h\acute{e}uen$ $wy\bar{t}h$ $h\acute{y}m$ $\bar{p}at$ $w\acute{e}$ may $b\acute{e}$ (11); $L\acute{o}rde$, $lette$ $ne\acute{u}r$ such $s\acute{o}row$ $a\text{-}r\acute{y}ce$ (260); Now $k\acute{o}meth$ pe $\acute{e}mper\acute{o}ur$ of $pr\acute{y}se$ (985).⁶

4. There are different arrangements of stresses. Occasionally the stressed syllable precedes the unstressed, as: $C\acute{e}rtys$, $\bar{p}ys$ $\bar{y}s$ a

¹ I counted 258 lines; but the number is more, rather than less.

² There are a few seeming instances of what Saintsbury calls "pause-feet" (*History of English Prosody*, London, 1906, I, 83); but most of these can easily be emended. Cf. ll. 184, 195, 200, 280, 433, 436, 453, 461, 495, 514, 691, 692, 715, 856.

³ Where more than two unstressed syllables occur, the sense usually shows that the line is corrupt.

⁴ I counted 94.

⁵ Cf. ll. 81, 84, 86, 183, 310, 482, 596, etc.

⁶ Cf. ll. 187, 208, 220, 230, 252, 322, 324, 335, 336, etc.

wýkked káse (647).¹ Again, we find xʌ|ʌx, a form which suggests a survival of the O.E. Type C, as: He hádde but on chýld in hys lfyue (43); In álle Crýstyanté (108); That deéd shúlde she bé (267).²

In these data, appears the popular and English character of the poem, in contradistinction to the French classical influences of which it shows but little sign.

Aside from the general framework of the rhythm-scheme, I believe that the author worked largely by a metrical instinct in which the O.E. tradition survived, so that his ear was not offended by the free manipulation of stresses which the poem shows.³

§ 5. STYLE.

A. VOCABULARY.

The limitations of the author's vocabulary are best shown by a comparison with Gower's and Chaucer's versions of the same story. *Emaré* in 1035 lines uses 802 words; Gower in 1014 lines, 945 words; Chaucer in 1029 lines 1265 words—showing half again as large a vocabulary. The proportion of romance words in Chaucer is approximately 30%; in Gower, 26%; in *Emaré* only 19%.

These two facts bear out the popular origin of the poem.

Of adjectives, *Emaré* contains 88, 44% of these occurring only once, the highest number of repetitions of any one word being 40; Gower uses 58 adjectives, only 7% occurring but once, the highest number of repetitions being 15; Chaucer has 127 adjectives, 63% being found only once, and the highest number of repetitions being 21.

The difference in the character of the adjectives used is illuminating. Gower's words are the most colourless, being almost entirely concerned with the moral quality of the thing. Hence, he uses great, glad, false, good, and worthy most frequently, and his nearest approach to the concrete is: bare, bloody, pale, naked (ship). Chaucer shows more appeal to the senses, as in: cold, dry, salt, bitter (figurative), pale, bloody, sheen, dark (figurative); and to the emotions, as in: woful, fatal, wretched, tender, cruel,

¹ I noted a number of cases that might be so read, but in many of them the accent of the word is uncertain, or the line admits of scansion in another way. Cf. however ll. 31, 104, 168, 261, 413, 415, 488, 605, etc.

² Cf. ll. 43, 47, 112, 156, 186, 201, 233, 294, etc.

³ This, as far as it goes, accords with Saintsbury's doctrine of English rhythm (*loc. cit.*).

cursed, weary, etc. In *Emaré*, while most of the adjectives occur repeatedly in all the 6- and 12-line stanza romances,¹ there is rather more sense-appeal than in Chaucer, but much less appeal to the emotions. For example we find: white, blue (meaning dark), gold, azure,² bright, sheen, pale, wan, clear,³ glistening, salt, delicious, cold, silken; but of words appealing immediately to the emotions nothing stronger than: lovesome.

Of adverbs, *Emaré* has 28, Gower 17, and Chaucer 32. Here again the same differences appear. It is rather curious that in all three, words showing speed should be most used: Gower has: suddenly (6 times); fast (4); Chaucer: shortly (6); *Emaré*: hastily (5). Aside from these, Gower shows the same dryness and Chaucer the same emotional appeal; *Emaré* is less rich in adverbs than in adjectives. Among those most used are: courteously, sweetly (swete, sote), specially and verament.

Emaré is singularly bare of figures, containing only seven similes: white as whale's bone, as lily-flower, as flower, as flower on hill, as foam; bright as summer's day; lean as a tree; and two cases of synecdoche: salt foam for sea, white chin for beautiful face.⁸

B. ALLITERATION.

Alliteration in *Emaré* is an important device of style. It is found in about 200 lines, two words usually being so connected, but occasionally three⁴ and even four.⁵

To a less noticeable extent, alliteration serves to connect two lines, two,⁶ three,⁷ even four words⁸ being so used.

Where the alliteration passes beyond the limits of the line, the words do not seem to stand in any definite relationship to one

¹ Such as great (40 times), fair (39), rich (17), bright (14), fre (13), noble, seemly, sweet (each 12), etc.

² L. 113. Gold refers also to the material, and perhaps azure means *lapis lazuli*. The whole passage (ll. 88-168) containing the list of precious stones, is full of colour, but the effect is due to the nouns.

³ Ll. 33, 66, 205; 946, 729; 818; 192, 438; 365; 835; 924.

⁴ In 11 cases.

⁵ In l. 29 only.

⁶ Especially ll. 340-41-42, 376-77, 427-28, 487-88, 541-42, 833-34, 848-49, 923-24, 1010-11. I counted about 40 possible cases in all; but in many the effect was so slight that it may well have been accidental.

⁷ Cf. ll. 83-84, 218-19, 314-15, 365-66, 497-98, 572-73, 611-12, 646-47, 737-38, 779-80.

⁸ Cf. ll. 20-21, 170-71, 193-94, 227-28, 604-5, 647-48, 766-67, 887-88. Here nearly all the chief words alliterate. In ll. 586-88, three alliterative letters are spread over three lines; but it is difficult to say how far this was a conscious device of style.

another; within the line, their connections may be classified as follows:

- (1) Noun and adjective:¹ And gode garnettes by-twene (156).
- (2) Adjective with (a) chief or (b) secondary word of modifying phrase:² (a) Was godely vnþur gare (198); (b) Whyte as whales bone (33).
- (3) Two words (a) nouns, (b) adjectives, or (c) verbs in the same construction:³ (a) That made both see *and* sonde (18); (b) Of a lady fayr *and* fre (22); (c) And alle þat shalle dele *and* dyghþe (3).
- (4) Verb with (a) chief, (b) secondary word of modifying phrase:⁴ (a) As I here syng in songe (24); (b) Wyth sory herte she songe hyt a-slepe (662).
- (5) Verb with noun as (a) subject, (b) object:⁵ (a) The kynges loue on her was lent (404); (b) And ledde hys lyf yn weddewede (77).
- (6) Verb and adverb:⁶ Such sorow was here ȝarked ȝore (329).
- (7) Noun with (a) chief or (b) secondary word of modifying phrase:⁷ (a) Thorow þe grace of God yn trone (680); (b) In þat robe of ryche ble (644).
- (8) Nouns directly modifying another noun:⁸ Of Babylone þe sowdan sonne (158).
- (9) Noun with chief word of dependent clause:⁹ The stones þat yn þys cloth stonde (116).
- (10) Verb with predicate adjective: He wax alle pale *and* wanne (771).¹⁰
- (11) Words not related directly:¹¹ And myȝte not fynde þat lady fre (308).

From this analysis it appears that alliteration is a vital and fundamental part of the author's mode of thought; and that as it is used to connect words in almost every conceivable relation in the

¹ 37 cases.

² 29 with chief word; 8 with secondary; 37 altogether.

³ 14 cases of nouns; 8 of adjectives; 7 of verbs; 29 altogether.

⁴ 18 with chief word; 1 with secondary; 19 in all.

⁵ 6 times as subject; 17 as object; once with a predicate adjective; 24 in all.

⁶ 15 times.

⁷ 12 times with chief; 2 with secondary; 14 in all.

⁸ 11 cases.

⁹ 8 cases.

¹⁰ No other case.

¹¹ Only 5 other cases where the alliterative effect is unmistakable. As: þe worde shulde sprynge fer and wyde (256). And she s(h)ewed sylke werke yn bour (730). He was resseued *and* rychely dyȝt (578). The lady *and* þe lytyle chyld (649). Wyth menske *and* mychyl honour (69).

sentence, it thereby maintains its place as the more natural element in the language, upon which the rhyme-scheme has been imposed.

Looked at from the point of view of content, the greater part of these alliterative expressions consists of the conventional phrases used repeatedly in all the 6- and 12-line stanza romances. In a few cases the expressions are peculiar to *Emaré*, while there are perhaps 50 more conventional lines, not in their present form alliterative. This number must be slightly reduced, in that some of these lines have alliterative equivalents from which they may have been derived.¹ But, on the whole, the alliterative expressions represent the bulk of the conventionalisms, as no doubt it was the alliterative connection that attached them to the memory.

As to character and content,² the alliterative expressions may be classified according to (a) participation in the same idea, *i. e.* derivation from the same root:³ As I here synge in songe (24); (b) extension or qualification, *i. e.* further definition of the same idea:⁴ That semely ys of sygh̃t (9); (c) association of like ideas:⁵ Bothe by styte *and* strete (543); (d) differentiation, by association, of contrasting ideas:⁶ Bothe yn wo *and* wele (573).

The fifty lines or thereabouts which are conventional in character but cannot be traced to an alliterative origin, may be classified as follows:

(a) References to source;⁷ (b) assurances of truth:⁸ In trwe story as y say (544); (c) strengthening of previous assertion: (1) by denying the contrary:⁹ With-oute ony lettynge (843); (2) by repetition in different terms:¹⁰ Men calle hyt heuen lygh̃te (6); (3) by further detail:¹¹ In alle maner of thyng (75); (d) allusions to God's will:¹² As hyt was Goddys wyll (327); (e) statement of time:¹³ On þe morn when hyt was day (541); (f) a passing

¹ As: Semely to be-holde (sene), 942; wepte (grette) *and* ȝaf hem ylle, 778; flesh and bone (fell), 735; "wesh *and* seteñ don (wenten) to mete, 218."

² Kölbing's divisions (*Amis and Amiloun*, pp. lxxi-lxx) do not seem mutually exclusive; so I have preferred to classify separately according to structure and to idea.

³ Rare. Cf. ll. 405, 465.

⁴ Very common. Cf. ll. 96, 153, 198, 216, 246, 303, 366, 507, etc.

⁵ Fairly common. Cf. ll. 3, 42, 174, 228, 474, 495, 600, 804.

⁶ Rare. Cf. l. 18.

⁷ In *Emaré* usually alliterative. Cf. ll. 216, 405. Ll. 162, 1029 are conventional in French rather than in English.

⁸ Elsewhere alliterative. Cf. ll. 396, 144, 153, 381. ⁹ No other instance.

¹⁰ Cf. ll. 30, 36, 111.

¹¹ Cf. ll. 51, 108, 123, etc.

¹² Cf. ll. 450, 480, 675.

¹³ No other examples in *Emaré*.

description of a character:¹ He was curtays in alle pyng^t (40); (*g*) a customary gesture:² And sette hym on hys kne (87); (*h*) a customary act: Messengeres forth he sent³ (190); (*i*) expressions of sympathy:⁴ And pat was gret pyte (276); (*j*) strongly associated ideas:⁵ In halle ny yn bowres (873); (*k*) strongly contrasted ideas:⁶ Bothe to olde *and* to 3ynge (41); (*l*) figures of speech:⁷ And whythe as lylve flowre (66).

It appears at once that these do not belong to the story, but essentially to the machinery of the poem.

C. REPETITION.

Emaré is peculiar, even among romances of its class, for the large proportion of repetitions that it contains. Whenever the idea recurs the phrase, line, sentence, stanza, or even group of stanzas, is repeated, with only slight necessary changes.

It is interesting to note that among lines which almost exactly repeat others: 45 are used twice; 10, three times;⁸ 2, four times;⁹ 1 is used five times;¹⁰ one six times.¹¹ This makes a total of 80 lines copied after 59 others. Among approximate repetitions: 52 are used twice; 14, three times;¹² 3, four times;¹³ 1 is used five times.¹⁴ This total is of 93 lines based on 70 others.

It appears, then, that 173 lines, or about 16½% of the poem, could be omitted almost without reduction of vocabulary.

Further, whole passages describing similar episodes show strong resemblance in structure and phrasing. Such descriptions are:

1. The four corners of the cloth.¹⁵
2. Love at first sight.¹⁶
3. Lamentation (four times).¹⁷
4. Experiences in the boat.¹⁸

¹ Cf. ll. 30, 36, 39, 45, 64, 379, 513, 724.

² Cf. ll. 778, 893.

³ Cf. ll. 180, 1027.

⁴ Cf. ll. 336, 648, 684.

⁵ Cf. ll. 300, 384, 390.

⁶ Cf. ll. 65, 462, 571, 666, 863, etc.

⁷ Cf. ll. 192, 205, 729.

⁸ Cf. ll. 9, 48, 171; 217, 865, 889; 325, 673, 721, etc.

⁹ Ll. 40, 64, 379, 724; 41, 64, 380, 725.

¹⁰ Ll. 290, 556, 604, 646, 772.

¹¹ Ll. 93, 135, 141, 423, 471, 486.

¹² Cf. ll. 3, 42, 826; 204, 937, 1021; 331, 337, 679; 336, 648, 684, etc.

¹³ Cf. ll. 555, 763, 882, 925; 28, 755, 873, 899; 207, 363, 453, 708.

¹⁴ Ll. 250, 366, 612, 736, 988.

¹⁵ Cf. ll. 121-32; 133-44; 145-56; 157-68.

¹⁶ Ll. 220-31; 397-408.

¹⁷ Ll. 280-300; 547-64; 604-12; 769-83.

¹⁸ Ll. 313-24 and 325-36; 649-60 and 673-84.

5. The rescue by Kadore and by Iurdan.¹
6. The messenger's reception (twice) by the old queen.²
7. The King's resolve to do penance and the Emperor's.³
8. Segramour's instructions upon the coming of the King and of the Emperor.⁴
9. The rejoicing over Emaré's restoration to her husband and to her father.⁵

The double structure of the poem accounts for a certain amount of parallelism; but this is so much greater than in any other version, that I judge the author to have had no close acquaintance with his original; but to have known this only in general outline and to have been thrown upon his own resources for details.

D. SENTENCE STRUCTURE.

The sentence structure and phrasing are uncommonly rough and careless, and no doubt often corrupted in transmission. The paratactic sentence prevails throughout, only the simplest clauses of time, place and comparison being subordinated.⁶ When transitional expressions are found, they are crude and abrupt.⁷ As in the ballads, speeches are introduced without mention of the speaker;⁸ and indirect discourse is changed to direct in the same passage, without indication.⁹ The subject is very often repeated in different forms, in a manner suggesting the progression of an Old English sentence;¹⁰ while, on the other hand, it is omitted in lists of verbs where it is needed.¹¹ The connection is extremely loose, *that* being often omitted;¹² and sentences are regularly made up of several short clauses with different subjects.¹³ A few special grammatical peculiarities will be given in the notes. Here again the character of a popular poem by a market-place minstrel is maintained.

¹ Ll. 340-84; 685-782.

² Ll. 514-17 and 525-35; 574-86.

³ Ll. 817-28; 949-960.

⁴ Ll. 904-09 and 916-24; 973-84; 991-96; 1009-20.

⁵ Ll. 625-36; 1009-20.

⁶ The pronouns *who* and *which* are not found at all.

⁷ Usually: Now leue we . . . and speke we, or its equivalent. Cf. ll. 70-72, 310-12, 742-44, 946-47.

⁸ Cf. ll. 172-77.

⁹ Cf. ll. 520-22; 595-97; 715-20; 820-22.

¹⁰ Ll. 52-53, 85-86, etc.

¹¹ Ll. 201, 271-73, 451-53; 763-64, etc.

¹² Ll. 232, 394-96, 403-4 etc.

¹³ Cf. ll. 323-36, 502-4, etc.

§ 6. AUTHOR AND DATE.

The terminus *ad quem* for the date is 1446; *a quo*, 1350, inasmuch as the -e as a factor in the verse has almost disappeared.¹ The absence of archaic forms suggests a post-Chaucerian date; and 1400 is probably nearer the fact than is 1350.

The author was neither courtly nor learned, but was doubtless a wandering minstrel, who sang in the market-place.² He seems to have been a Yorkshireman, perhaps of the moor district, working up a local legend, in part, however, derived from a French, hence not popular, source.

§ 7. IMMEDIATE SOURCE.

Emaré is one of seven Middle English poems³ that claim derivation from a lay of Britain. In two cases, *Lai le Freine* and *Launfal*, the original is extant, while the general agreement in character of the seven, renders it probable that all had similar sources. All are short (500-1200 lines), correspond to the description of a lay in *Sir Orfeo*,⁴ and in form are suited to musical accompaniment.⁵

In the case of *Emaré*, the evidence for a French original, whether lay or romance, is considerable.

1. The names are French: Cesyle, Cysyle; Galys;⁶ Artyus;⁷ Dame Erayne;⁸ Segramour, Segradowre;⁹ Kadore;¹⁰ Iurdan;¹¹

¹ It is negligible in the proportion of three to one; and is occasionally inorganic.

² Instead of the usual references to listeners in the hall, we have l. 19, with its possible implication of the idea of a moving throng.

³ *Sir Orfeo* (ll. 1-22), *Lai le Freine* (ll. 1-26), *Sir Gowther* (ll. 28-29, 751, 753), *The Erl of Tolous* (ll. 1219-21); *Launfal* (ll. 4-5), the only case in which Britain is not specified; Chaucer's *Franklin's Tale* (ll. 709-15) and *Emaré* (ll. 1030-32).

⁴ Ll. 1-22.

⁵ Cf. *Emaré*, ll. 24, 319; *Guigemar* (ll. 885-86), *Chievrefoil* (ll. 112-13) by Marie de France; *Le Lai de L'Épervier* (ll. 230-32, *Romania*, 1878, p. 9), *Doon* (ll. 1-4, 287-88, *Romania*, 1879, pp. 61, 64).

⁶ For Gales or Galice? See note on l. 338 below. Both forms are French.

⁷ Artus is the common form in French. In *Ipomedon*, one scribe writes Artus for Atreus (cf. Ward, *Catalogue of Romances*, I, 732); but here Arthur is clearly meant.

⁸ Igrayne or Elayne? Both French.

⁹ Cf. especially *Perceval le Gallois* (5598 ff., 13944); *Erec et Enide* (1733, 2231, 2238, 2250), Beaujeu's *Li Biaus Desconneus* (879, 5905, 6020); Malory's *Morte Arthur* (ed. Somer, List of Names); Froissart's *Méliador* (ed. Longnon, Index); *Claris et Laris* (ed. Alton, Index). The lost German romance, *Saigremor*, was seemingly based upon a French original.

¹⁰ The equivalent in French romances of the Celtic Cadoc (F. Lot, *Romania*, xxx, 11-13). It occurs in *Perceval* (12964 ff.); in *Erec* (4515, 4545, 4574); in *Li Biaus Desconneus* as Cadoc (5694, 5702, 5708). Cf. also *Geoffrey of*

Tergaunte;¹ Abro;² Ydoyné and Amadas;³ Florys and Blawnche-flour;⁴ Trystram and Isowde;⁵ Emaré; Egaré.

2. The form Segramowres (876) rhyming with kowrs (867) honowres (870) bowres (873) is an old French nominative singular. The direct quotation may have been taken literally from the original

3. The names Emaré, Egaré, clearly indicate a French source. Emaré seems to stand for *Emarie* (Emarye occurs once)⁶ from French *esmarie* (afflicted, troubled); Egaré is from the French *esgarée* (outcast).⁷ But I cannot think that the English poet intended to use *emarie* in the sense given. Usually the word is associated with *esgarée*, while here a contrast, if anything, is indicated.⁸ The name which I believe the minstrel had in mind is Emeré,⁹ which occurs as *La Blonde Esmeree*, in *Li Biaus Desconneus*.¹⁰ This means pure, refined (as gold), endowed with rare qualities.¹² The *e* might easily have become *a* by analogy to Egaré with which Emaré frequently rhymes.

Monmouth, Layamon, the Thornton *Morte Arthure, Claris et Laris, Anseïs de Cartage*, etc.

¹¹ The hero of the French romance *Jourdain de Blaivies*. It occurs in *Geoffrey of Monmouth*, in the Huth *Merlin* and in *Malory*. (See p. xxxvii, note 6.)

¹ See note on l. 85 below. The name is certainly of French origin.

² Abra occurs in *Amadis of Greece* (Part II, ch. 1), of which the earliest extant form is French. On the ultimate origin of the word, see note on l. 57 below.

³ The chief characters of a French romance of which no English version is known, although they are repeatedly mentioned in English books.

⁴ The chief characters of a widely popular French romance.

⁵ The spelling is much as in the Northern *Sir Tristrem*, the *Cursor Mundi*, and in *Malory*; but the oldest extant form of the story is French.

⁶ L. 840, but the rhymes are: fre, le, powste. However, in ll. 1023, 1032, Emaré and Egarie rhyme with he, storye, glorye; and in ll. 1006-7, they rhyme together; hence the poet knew no distinction of an original *e*, *ie*. See p. xx above.

⁷ Cf. Suchier, *Oeuvres de Beaumanoir* (*Soc. des. Anc. Tex. Fr.*), 1884, p. xlv.

⁸ Cf. ll. 22-23, 47-48, 50-51. Such a contrast is suggested in the *chanson de geste, Herpin de Bourges*, based upon another version of this same story, in which the heroine Joyeuse calls herself Tristouse during her exile (Suchier, *op. cit.*, p. lxxxiii). Both words are so common that it is perhaps unnecessary to give instances of their use. Among Godefroi's quotations is: "Triste et dolente et esmarie." The word *esgarée* is found especially in romances of this group as *La Manekine, La Belle Hélène de Constantinople, La Comtesse d'Anjou*, also in *Berte as Grans Piés*; and there seems little doubt that the poet took it directly from his original. See also note on l. 1032 below.

⁹ This occurs as a man's name in *Le Bone Florence of Rome*; but is pronounced *Emère*, rhyming with *clere, dere*, etc. The French *Esmér(s)* is found in *Aucassin et Nicolette, Bauduin de Sebourg, Mainet* (Gautier, *Les Épopées Françaises*, Paris, 1869, III, 38), and elsewhere.

¹⁰ Ll. 3638, 3804, 3842, 4963, 5466, 5793, 6002, 6053, 6066.

¹² According to Godefroi.

Mouskes, Fulkes or Foucon d'Anjou married a beautiful demon whom, while hunting, he found by a fountain in a wood¹ (cf. the tale of the first Offa). It is a fact that his daughter Cécile married Tangré d'Andioce,² ancestor of the Tancred whom Richard knew. Here are elements enough for confusion.³

Considering, together with this episode, the names which suggest an origin later than the work of Chretien de Troyes, and perhaps than that of Renauld de Beaujeu,⁴ I judge that the immediate original of *Emaré* arose between 1200 and 1250.

I incline also to think that it was, if a lay, at least much longer than the English, and that the minstrel knew it imperfectly or only in outline. On this point there is but little evidence, one way or the other; but the abruptness with which the account of the robe is thrust into the narrative suggests that something has been omitted for purposes of condensation,⁵ the presence of many curious details and scraps strongly suggestive of French,⁶ taken with the large per cent. of repetitions in which scarcely a word is changed, suggest an attempt to fill out the outline of a larger work, with imperfect knowledge of its details.⁷

§ 8. ORIGINS.

The ramifications of this tale extend so far back and so widely, that the extensive researches of Prof. Suchier, Dr. Gough and

¹ *Chronique Rimée* (13th century), ll. 18720-809.

² *Op. cit.*; l. 18363.

³ Curiously enough the name of Arthur is associated with the episode. Benedict says: "Rex autem Angliae dedit ei (i. e. Tancred) gladium optimum Arcturi, nobilis quondam regis Britonum, quem Britones vocaverunt Caliburnum" (*loc. cit.*).

⁴ Quoted early in the 13th century.

⁵ Cf. ll. 78-79 and 187-88. Between ll. 78 and 79, the subject is changed completely, from a description of the Emperor's character, which might lead up very well to l. 188, to an episode not in any way connected with the story as it stands in *Emaré*. Both the lack of connection and the rhymes suggest that at least six lines may have been omitted. Again, there are signs of corruption in ll. 187-88, the metre of the second being spoiled to explain the abrupt change of subject. Since the robe evidently belongs in the narrative, I must suppose that its proper relation has been lost as I suggest above. There are other marks of condensation and alteration, such as in ll. 232-40, the embassy to the Pope and his ready assent without inducement of any sort; ll. 799-804, the exile of the old queen, which is peculiar to this version, and replaces the long account of her punishment which is usually found; ll. 817-22, when the King does penance for a sin that he had not committed. Possibly in the original, as in Enikel's account, he ordered her to be set adrift.

⁶ Especially speeches and dramatic details of scenes.

⁷ The allusion to an oral source in l. 319 (and possibly in l. 24) if it is not purely conventional, may refer only to the fact that other forms of the tale were being carried about.

others,¹ have by no means exhausted the subject. I can contribute only a little more to the results already obtained and hope to continue the investigation.²

To the eighteen³ mediæval versions analyzed by Suchier, must be added at least two more: *La Filla de l'Emperador Contasti*⁴ (Catalan) and a play called *Columpnarium* (Latin).⁵

These twenty pieces, then, may be classified according to their place of origin as follows: Three in England, 12th–15th centuries: *Vita Offae Primi*⁶ (V 1, 1195–1214, St. Albans, Latin); *Chronique Anglo-Normande*⁷ by Nicholas Trivet (Tr, 1334–47, French); *Emaré* (Em, about 1400, Yorkshire, English).

Four in France, 13th–14th centuries: *La Manekine* by Philippe de Remy, Sire de Beaumanoir⁸ (Man, about 1270, near Beauvais, French); *La Comtesse d'Anjou* by Jehan Maillart⁹ (Anj, 1313–16, near Pontoise and Senlis, Normandy, French); *Columpnarium*¹⁰ (Col, 14th century, (?) Avignon, (?) Latin); *La Belle Hélène de Constantinople*, (HC, 1469, (?) Flanders, French).¹¹

Three in Germany, 13th–15th centuries: *Mai und Beaflo*¹² (Mai, about 1260, Bavaria or Austria, (?) German); *Die Königstochter von Reussen*, by Jansen Enikel or Enenkel¹³ in his *Weltbuch*, or *Universal Chronicle* (En, 1277–1300, Vienna, German); *Die Königstochter von Frankreich* by Hans Von Bühel, or “der Büheler”¹⁴ (Büh, 1401, Poppelsdorf, near Bonn, German).

¹ Suchier, *op. cit.*, p. xxiii ff.; Gough, *Constance Saga*; for kindred folktales, Cox, *Cinderella* (Folk Lore Society), London, 1893, in addition to the works referred to by Suchier.

² In an edition of *La Belle Hélène de Constantinople*.

³ His No. 19 is a piece of sculpture that might represent *Hung, Ol, Vic, Cont* or even *HC*.

⁴ Published by Suchier, *Romania*, xxx, 519–38. Still other versions of the tale are announced to follow.

⁵ Mentioned by Creizenach, *Geschichte des Neueren Dramas*, Halle, 1893, I, 533–34 with note. Unpublished. The father is “Emolphus, rex Carillorum;” Phocis and Athens are among the scenes.

⁶ Ed. Wats, appendix to *Chronica Majora* of Matthew Paris, London, 1640–39; also *Originals and Analogues* (Chauc. Soc. [1888], pp. 73–84).

⁷ *Originals and Analogues*, pp. 2–70.

⁸ Ed. Suchier, *op. cit.*

⁹ Unpublished. MSS. 765 and Nouv. acquis. 4531, at Paris.

¹⁰ Apparently written for a member of the Colonna family. MS. Lat. 8163. Cf. Creizenach, *loc. cit.*

¹¹ Unpublished. This is apparently a recension of a much earlier romance, signed “Alexandry manu propria,” for “Loyse, Dame de Crequy,” who died in 1469 (Lyons MS. 767). It contains much matter relating to the 15th century, and certain episodes seem to refer it definitely to the year mentioned. But I must reserve discussion of this point until I edit the text.

¹² *Dictungen des deutschen Mittelalters*, VII, Leipzig, 1848.

¹³ Ed. Von der Hagen, *Gesammtabenteuer*, II, 1850, pp. 593–613.

¹⁴ Ed. Merzdorf, Oldenburg, 1867.

Mouskes, Fulkes or Foucon d'Anjou married a beautiful demon whom, while hunting, he found by a fountain in a wood¹ (cf. the tale of the first Offa). It is a fact that his daughter Cécile married Tangré d'Andioce,² ancestor of the Tancred whom Richard knew. Here are elements enough for confusion.³

Considering, together with this episode, the names which suggest an origin later than the work of Chretien de Troyes, and perhaps than that of Renauld de Beaujeu,⁴ I judge that the immediate original of *Emaré* arose between 1200 and 1250.

I incline also to think that it was, if a lay, at least much longer than the English, and that the minstrel knew it imperfectly or only in outline. On this point there is but little evidence, one way or the other; but the abruptness with which the account of the robe is thrust into the narrative suggests that something has been omitted for purposes of condensation,⁵ the presence of many curious details and scraps strongly suggestive of French,⁶ taken with the large per cent. of repetitions in which scarcely a word is changed, suggest an attempt to fill out the outline of a larger work, with imperfect knowledge of its details.⁷

§ 8. ORIGINS.

The ramifications of this tale extend so far back and so widely, that the extensive researches of Prof. Suchier, Dr. Gough and

¹ *Chronique Rimée* (13th century), ll. 18720-809.

² *Op. cit.*; l. 18363.

³ Curiously enough the name of Arthur is associated with the episode. Benedict says: "Rex autem Angliae dedit ei (*i. e.* Tancred) gladium optimum Arcturi, nobilis quondam regis Britonum, quem Britones vocaverunt Caliburnum" (*loc. cit.*).

⁴ Quoted early in the 13th century.

⁵ Cf. ll. 78-79 and 187-88. Between ll. 78 and 79, the subject is changed completely, from a description of the Emperor's character, which might lead up very well to l. 188, to an episode not in any way connected with the story as it stands in *Emaré*. Both the lack of connection and the rhymes suggest that at least six lines may have been omitted. Again, there are signs of corruption in ll. 187-88, the metre of the second being spoiled to explain the abrupt change of subject. Since the robe evidently belongs in the narrative, I must suppose that its proper relation has been lost as I suggest above. There are other marks of condensation and alteration, such as in ll. 232-40, the embassy to the Pope and his ready assent without inducement of any sort; ll. 799-804, the exile of the old queen, which is peculiar to this version, and replaces the long account of her punishment which is usually found; ll. 817-22, when the King does penance for a sin that he had not committed. Possibly in the original, as in Enikel's account, he ordered her to be set adrift.

⁶ Especially speeches and dramatic details of scenes.

⁷ The allusion to an oral source in l. 319 (and possibly in l. 24) if it is not purely conventional, may refer only to the fact that other forms of the tale were being carried about.

others,¹ have by no means exhausted the subject. I can contribute only a little more to the results already obtained and hope to continue the investigation.²

To the eighteen³ mediæval versions analyzed by Suchier, must be added at least two more: *La Filla de l'Emperador Contastí*⁴ (Catalan) and a play called *Columpnarium* (Latin).⁵

These twenty pieces, then, may be classified according to their place of origin as follows: Three in England, 12th–15th centuries: *Vita Offae Primi*⁶ (*V* 1, 1195–1214, St. Albans, Latin); *Chronique Anglo-Normande*⁷ by Nicholas Trivet (*Tr*, 1334–47, French); *Emaré* (*Em*, about 1400, Yorkshire, English).

Four in France, 13th–14th centuries: *La Manekine* by Philippe de Remy, Sire de Beaumanoir⁸ (*Man*, about 1270, near Beauvais, French); *La Comtesse d'Anjou* by Jehan Maillart⁹ (*Anj*, 1313–16, near Pontoise and Senlis, Normandy, French); *Columpnarium*¹⁰ (*Col*, 14th century, (?) Avignon, (?) Latin); *La Belle Hélène de Constantinople*, (*HC*, 1469, (?) Flanders, French).¹¹

Three in Germany, 13th–15th centuries: *Mai und Beaflo*¹² (*Mai*, about 1260, Bavaria or Austria, (?) German); *Die Königstochter von Reussen*, by Jansen Enikel or Enenkel¹³ in his *Weltbuch*, or *Universal Chronicle* (*En*, 1277–1300, Vienna, German); *Die Königstochter von Frankreich* by Hans Von Bühel, or “der Büheler”¹⁴ (*Büh*, 1401, Poppelsdorf, near Bonn, German).

¹ Suchier, *op. cit.*, p. xxiii ff.; Gough, *Constance Saga*; for kindred folk-tales, Cox, *Cinderella* (*Folk Lore Society*), London, 1893, in addition to the works referred to by Suchier.

² In an edition of *La Belle Hélène de Constantinople*.

³ His No. 19 is a piece of sculpture that might represent *Hung, Ol, Vic, Cont* or even *HC*.

⁴ Published by Suchier, *Romania*, xxx, 519–38. Still other versions of the tale are announced to follow.

⁵ Mentioned by Creizenach, *Geschichte des Neueren Dramas*, Halle, 1893, I, 533–34 with note. Unpublished. The father is “Emolphus, rex Carillorum;” Phocis and Athens are among the scenes.

⁶ Ed. Wats, appendix to *Chronica Majora* of Matthew Paris, London, 1640–39; also *Originals and Analogues* (Chauc. Soc. [1888], pp. 73–84).

⁷ *Originals and Analogues*, pp. 2–70.

⁸ Ed. Suchier, *op. cit.*

⁹ Unpublished. MSS. 765 and Nouv. acquis. 4531, at Paris.

¹⁰ Apparently written for a member of the Colonna family. MS. Lat. 8163.

Cf. Creizenach, *loc. cit.*

¹¹ Unpublished. This is apparently a recension of a much earlier romance, signed “Alexandry manu propria,” for “Loyse, Dame de Crequy,” who died in 1469 (Lyons MS. 767). It contains much matter relating to the 15th century, and certain episodes seem to refer it definitely to the year mentioned. But I must reserve discussion of this point until I edit the text.

¹² *Dictungen des deutschen Mittelalters*, VII, Leipzig, 1848.

¹³ Ed. Von der Hagen, *Gesammtabenteuer*, II, 1850, pp. 593–613.

¹⁴ Ed. Merzdorf, Oldenburg, 1867.

Seven in Italy, 14th-17th centuries: *Ystoria Regis Franchorum et Filie in qua Adulterium Comiter Voluit*¹ (*Yst*, written or copied in 1370, Latin); *Il Pecorone*, Dies X, No. 1, by Giovanni Fiorentino² (*Pec*, 1378, Dovadola, Italian); *Novella della Figlia del Re di Dacia*³ (*Dac*, end of the 14th century, Italian); *Miraculi de la Gloriosa Verzene Maria*,⁴ cap. XI (*Mir*, 1475, printed Vicenza, Italian); *De Origine inter Gallos et Britannos Belli-Historia* by Bartolomeo Fazio⁵ (*Faz*, before 1457, Naples, (?) Latin); *Historia de la Regina Oliva*, by Joannes Florentinus⁶ (?) (*Ol*, 16th century, Italian); *La Penta Manomozza* in Basile's *Pentamerone*⁷ (*Pen*, before 1637, Naples, Italian).

Three in Spain, 14th-15th centuries: *Historia del Rey de Hungria*⁸ (*Hung*, end of the 14th century, Catalan); *Le Victorial* by Gutierre Diaz de Gamez⁹ (*Vic*, from before 1435 to 1449, Spanish); *La Filla de l'Emperador Contasti* (*Cont*, 15th century, Catalan).¹⁰

This shows clearly the progress of the legend. Spreading from England, by the end of the 13th century it had passed through France and Germany, during the 14th century it reached Italy and Spain, died out in Spain in the 15th, but continued in Italy until the 17th; in the 14th also it was revived in England in English,¹¹ but is not known to have persisted long after 1400.¹²

In tracing out the development of the tale, we find at once

¹ Unpublished. MS. Lat. 8701 at Paris.

² Ed. 1378.

³ Ed. Wesselofsky, Pisa, 1866.

⁴ Ed. Vicenza, 1475.

⁵ Ed. Camusat, *Bibliotheca Ciaconii*, Paris, 1731. The copy in the British Museum is dated at Amsterdam and Leipzig, 1744, (cols. 893-902).

⁶ The poem itself is unpublished, but the play based upon it has been edited by D'Ancona, Pisa, 1863, and included by him in his *Sacre Rappresentazioni*, Florence, 1872, III, 250 ff.

⁷ Ed. Liebrecht, Breslau, 1846.

⁸ Ed. Bofarull y Mascaró, *Documentos Literarios en Antigua Lengua Catalana*, Barcelona, 1857, pp. 53-59.

⁹ Ed. Lemcke, *Bruchstücke aus den noch ungedruckten Theilen des Vitorial von Gutierre Diez de Games*, Marburg, 1865, p. 20; also translated into French by Counts de Circourt and de Puymaigre, Paris, 1867, Livre II, ch. 26, p. 258.

¹⁰ Grouped according to language, 4 are Latin, *VI*, *Yst*, *Col*, *Faz*; 4 are French, *Man*, *Anj*, *Tr*, *HC*; 3 German, *Mai*, *En*, *Büh*; 5 Italian, *Pec*, *Dac*, *Mir*, *Ol*, *Pen*; 2 Catalan, 1 Spanish, *Hung*, *Cont*, *Vic*: 1 English, *Em*. Classified according to form, 6 are romances: *Man*, *Anj*, *HC*, *Mai*, *Büh*, *Em*; 6 are attempts to reduce romance material to history: *VI*, *Yst*, *Faz*, *Tr*, *Vic* (prose), and *En* (verse); 5 are *novelle*: *Pec*, *Dac*, *Pen*, *Hung*, *Cont*; 2 are dramas, *Col*, *Ol*; one is a prose *miracle*, *Mir*.

¹¹ Tr's French was quickly translated into English prose by an unknown writer, and into verse by Chaucer and Gower.

¹² These dates refer to the literary versions only, not to the folk-lore, in which it lives on in many countries.

numerous and important differences between *V 1* on the one hand, and *Tr* and *Em* on the other; also between *V 1*, and *Man*, *Mai* and the original *HC* (**HC*). It is impossible that *V 1* should have developed into these other forms without important influence from outside.

Taking first the English versions, we find the following fundamental differences: (1) the exposure is twice in the forest (*V 1*) instead of twice on the sea (*Tr*, *Em*); (2) there are two children (*V 1*), one child (*Tr*, *Em*); (3) they are cut to pieces and brought to life by a miracle, and the heroine is twice threatened with such a death and twice spared (*V 1*); there is no such mutilation (*Tr*, *Em*); (4) they are protected by a hermit (*V 1*), by a Roman (*Tr*, *Em*); (5) the scene is entirely localized in England (*V 1*), in part at Rome (*Tr*, *Em*).

It seems probable that *V 1* was written down largely from oral tradition in English, which may or may not have survived in definite poetical form. The only poem that might be related to it is the eighth century *Wife's Complaint*.¹ This alludes to two definite periods of exile with an interval between, to sorrow for separation from a husband, and to treachery on the part of "kinsmen"; and the heroine seems to be dwelling in a cave in the forest. No names are given, and no children are mentioned; the circumstances of the double exile and the forest chiefly connect this epic fragment with *V 1*.² Aside from this, *V 1* is the oldest known form of the legend.

The first problem is to discover, if possible, the origin of the variations enumerated. Certain differences between *Tr* and *Em* can be explained on the basis of a different intermediary, *Em* claiming a "lay" as its original and being certainly derived from the French; *Tr*, "lez Aunciene cronikes de sessounz" or "lestoire de sessouns,"³ and showing signs of an English original.⁴

¹ Cf. *Old English Offa Saga* in *Modern Philology*, June 1904, and January 1905.

² But there is no strong evidence against their identity. Cf. *O. E. Offa Saga*, Jan. 1905, p. 45 f. (reprint). *Playn[t] d'Egarye* is "The Exiled Woman's Complaint," cf. p. xx, with note 3, above.

³ *Originals and Analogues*, p. 3.

⁴ This is disputed; but the English sentence on p. 19 seems to favour an immediate source in English not older than the 12th century. This, as Gough suggests (*Constance Saga*, pp. 21-22), may have been a French chronicle of Saxon history; but one slight additional bit of evidence in favour of an English original has been overlooked. *Tr* says that the Saxons called *Constance Couste* (p. 41). But *Couste* is not Saxon. It can scarcely be derived from any other source than the pun in *Li Dis de l'Empereour Coustant*:

An important cycle of legends, which has been recognized to touch that of the Outcast Wife at various points, is that of Constantine the Great (*Const*).¹ Inasmuch as the great majority of the versions agree in general outline with *Tr* and *Em* over against *V 1*, I shall relate briefly the parallel account in *Const* and point out the coincidences in the notes.

Helena, the daughter of a king or nobleman,² either goes to Rome on a pilgrimage,³ or flees thither secretly for some reason,⁴ sometimes with a nurse or attendant,⁵ and sometimes in disguise.⁶ Her child is born under different circumstances, but the parallel is close where the tale describes how she worked with her hands to support and educate the boy, who soon by his gifts attracted the love of all who knew him.⁷ With the kidnapping of Constantine, the parallel is lost; but it reappears in the account of the jewels

"Et pour çou qu'il ot cousté tant
Li missent il a non Coustant." (ll. 235-36)

If Trivet had found the word *cousté* in its proper context, he knowing French would never have fallen into the blunder that it was Saxon. On the other hand, if his Saxon authority had taken over the word without the pun, he, not associating it with any French source, might easily have assumed that it must be Saxon. This furnishes a bit of evidence for the association of the Constantine legend with the Outcast Wife cycle (cf. *Romania*, VI, 1877, pp. 161-98, on the Constantine legend).

¹ Cf. Suchier, *op. cit.*, p. lxxv, n. 1, and Graf, *Roma nella Memoria e nelle Immaginazioni del Medio Evo*, Torino, 1882-83, II, 46 ff.

² For a full account, see Wesseloſky, *Romania*, VI, 101-98; and Coen, *Archivio della Società Romana di Storia Patria*, Roma, 1881, IV, 1-55, 293-316, 535-61; V, 33-66, 489-541.

³ In *Pec*, the heroine flees in pilgrim's dress; in *Cont*, her explanation of her second exile is "e vaig en pelegrinatge (533)."

⁴ "Multi eam clam patriam fugisse affirmant" (Horstmann, *Nova Legenda Anglie*, Oxford, 1901, II, 14).

⁵ The nurse is prominent in *HC*, *Mai*, *Anj*, *Yst*, *Dac*, *Em*, *Col*.

⁶ So in *Pec*, *Faz*, *Dac*. Once in *Const* she is disguised as a man (cf. Coen, *Archivio*, IV, 33 n.); so in *Yst* and in *Büh* (the beginning of the second flight).

⁷ The life of the mother and child in Rome agrees in many respects with *Em*, *Tr*, *Mai*, *Man*, *En*, *Yst*, *Pec*, *Büh*, *Ol*, *Faz*, *Cont*; and is traceable in *HC* and *Dac* (13). In *Pen*, the scene is changed but the circumstances are recognizable, as perhaps they are also, though not so clearly, in *Anj*. *Mir* follows *V 1* in its total disagreement; *Vic* does not contain the second exile, and *Col 1* have not seen. Most of these agree in allowing the lapse of many years (from 7 to upwards of 30) between the parting of husband and wife, and contain a description of the youth and education of the boy (*Anj* alone agrees with *V 1* and *Mir* in leaving but a short time).

In *Man*, the heroine is a housekeeper, in *Büh* a servant, in *HC* a washerwoman and a beggar; she also begs in *Büh* and in *Cont*; in *Dac* and *Faz* she is a nurse; in *Em* a nurse and does beautiful embroidery; in *Anj*, she does embroidery and teaches it during the first exile, and in the second depends upon charity. In *Mai*, *En*, *Tr*, *Yst*, *Ol*, she is dependent upon charity; in *Pen* she is the queen's maid during the first exile, and depends upon charity in the second. The attractiveness of the child is everywhere prominent.

brought across the sea by the young princess of Constantinople,¹ and of the exquisite needlework with which she supports the family;² in Constantine's attracting the attention of his father, the emperor Constantius on a public occasion;³ in the reunion of the family at a banquet,⁴ and in the recognition by means of a ring.⁵ The emperor makes Constantine his heir, and according to some accounts then first marries the mother.⁶

Thus it appears that (1) the substitution of one child for two,⁷ (2) the absence of mutilation, hermit and miracle,⁸ (3) the life of the woman and child under humble circumstances, and the boy's education at Rome, and the recognition through the son at a banquet by means of a ring, are all accounted for on the hypothesis

¹ Such jewels appear in most of the versions; in *Pec* the woman lives by the sale of jewels inherited from her mother, as in *Const* the princess, by those given by her mother. In several versions, a priceless jewelled robe is especially described (notably *Em*, *Mai*, *En*, *Anj*). In *Const*, the empress of Constantinople gives her daughter "de vasis vestibus et aliis quibuscumque apparatibus auro et argento et gemmis pretiosissimis adornatis . . . addens et de thesauris pannorum sericeorum," etc. (*Incerti Auctoris de Constantino Magno ejusque Matre Helena Libellus*, ed. Heydenreich, Lipsiae, 1879, p. 10, ll. 14-21). In another version, the emperor gives Helena instead of a ring a peplum of imperial purple (Coen, *op. cit.*, IV, p. 298).

² Here the needlework, prominent in *Anj*, *Büh*, *Em*, *Yst* (perhaps hinted at in *Man*, ll. 5880-84), is transferred to the daughter-in-law, the description of her work, however, being in perfect accord: "Nurus vero Helenae in textura operum muliebrium sumptuosorum et nobilium secundum quod suam decuit condicionem more subtilitatum Graeciae bene erudita bonam pecuniam de labore manuum cottidie lucrabatur" (p. 20, ll. 9-12). Other versions must have attributed it to Helena herself, as there are traditions that she was a famous needlewoman. An embroidered Madonna said to be of her making is still shown at Vercelli, and an inventory of the treasures of Philip the Good contains an altar-cloth attributed to her (cf. Michel, *op. cit.*, II, 336, with note 6).

³ The recognition comes about through the son, in *Man*, *Tr*, *Büh*, *Em*, *Ol*, *Faz*, *Pen*, and in *HC* (under very different circumstances); and the boy is prominent in *Mai* and *En*.

⁴ The banquet is found in *Mai*, *Man*, *En*, *Anj*, *Tr*, *Em*, *Ys*, *Büh*, *Faz*, *Ol*, *Pen* and in *HC* (the recognition of the sons only).

⁵ The ring is a device in *Man*, *Cont* and *Ol* (in *HC* it is on the arm which Brice carries, and leads to recognition).

⁶ In *HC*, this seems to be echoed in the story of the Oriental princess Plaisance. She gives herself to Constantine, but in a moment of peril flees from him across the sea; she lives with a senator in Rome, where her son is born; and after many years of separation, hardship and wanderings, meets Constantine at Rome and marries him. Here is the senator who appears in *Man*, *Tr* (with a wife *Helena*) in *Mai* and in *En* (where the child is *Constantine*). *Iurdan* may even be a corruption of his name (in *HC*) *Josecan*.

⁷ *Mai*, *En*, *Man*, *Anj*, *Tr*, *Huny*, *Dac*, *Büh*, *Em*, *Ol*, *Faz*, *Cont*, *Pen* (13) have one; *V 1*, *HC*, *Yst*, *Pec*, and *Mir* (6) have two.

⁸ In *Mai*, *En* (I do not consider scratching the face and cutting the hair an equivalent, as it meant only temporary disfigurement and required no miracle), *Anj*, *Tr*, *Büh*, *Em*, *Faz*, *Cont* (though the hand is brought in curiously by the trying on of the mother's glove which exactly fits).

of influence from *Const.*¹ The exposure in an open boat or cask I take to be from an entirely different source,² but some of the versions in which the heroine escapes by flight³ may have come under the influence of *Const.*

Further, the influence of *Const* appears plainly in the names: in *HC*, we have Helena and Constantine, who is also sometimes called Constans, in evident confusion with his father, and Constantinople, of which the heroine's father is emperor; in *Tr*, Tiberie Constantine and Constance⁴ (Couste), and Helena⁵ her cousin; in *KR* (the prose version dependent upon the source of *En*) the boy is baptized Constantine;⁶ in *Cont*, the girl's father is the Emperor Contasti.⁷ In *Ol*, the emperor is Giuliano = Julian, who succeeded Constantine, after the short reign of the former's three sons, and married his daughter Helena.⁸

Another possible connection between the two cycles is this. In many of the folk-lore tales, the heroine is an inn-keeper's daughter.

¹ *Mai, En, Man, Tr, Yst, Pec, Böh, Em, Ol, Faz, Cont* (11); in *HC* and *Dac*, in part; in *Anj*, the poverty only; in *Hung*, a convent; in *V 1* as in *Mir*, the woods of Britain; in *Pen*, in woods, but afterwards at the house of a sorcerer whose abode is quite unlike that of a hermit. Further, a pagan (witness the case of Vergil) was far more likely to have been transformed into a magician than was a hermit.

² See p. xliii below.

³ *HC, Yst, Pec, Dac, Faz.*

⁴ Perhaps *Tr*'s confusion arose in part from the duplication of the names in connection with the two emperors: Constantine the Great had a sister Constanca, a daughter Constantina and three sons, Constantius, Constantine and Constans; Tiberius Constantine, a daughter Constantina. The unique opening incident in *Tr* is perhaps to be explained by some legend of the Emperor Maurice and his wife Constantina, who with their children were persecuted and obtained a certain reputation as Christian martyrs. Gough has shown (*Constance Saga*, pp. 34-46) that stories not unlike this in general character were current in the 12th century about Edwin. But he suggests no material that explains the important differences between *V 1* and nearly all the later versions. The only incident for which it might possibly account is the bringing up of the child with a boy of the same age to whom his mother is nurse (in *Dac, Faz*, and in part, in *Mai*). It is possible that more evidence on the Edwin-saga may be forthcoming; but with the facts known at present I cannot accept this as the foundation of the great bulk of the versions. Further, it seems to me that Trivet may have known that he was foisting the tale upon history, for at the end (p. 43) he suddenly introduces Edwin, without accounting for him in any way.

⁵ So with Helena. It was the name of Constantine the Great's mother and one of his daughters; of Tiberius Constantine's wife, according to one account, which mentions also a jealous mother-in-law (Gibbon, *op. cit.*, V, 17, with n. 34); likewise, of the wife of Constantine Porphyrogenitus (944), who might have helped on the legend. Is Erayne in *Em* a corruption of Elayne?

⁶ Cf. *Mai und Beaför*, p. xxii.

⁷ And merchants take the place of the rudderless boat. This may have come from *Const* or from *Florence of Rome*.

⁸ A.D. 355. A contemporary legend is attached to her name to the effect that all her children were killed at birth by the jealousy of her sister-in-law, the Empress Eusebia. See Gibbon (1896-98), II, 258-59, 406-7. This might have helped on the legend of Helena.

Suchier explains this as a natural interpretation in later times of the fact that the letters were changed at the old woman's dwelling, hence she must have been an innkeeper;¹ but in the popular tales it is the heroine, not the traitress, who is connected with the inn. Now Helena is called *stabularia* by St. Ambrose, who was born within twenty-five years of her death;² and later writers who wished to argue for her lawful marriage as more consonant with sainthood tried to explain the word away. Hence the association was pretty well established.³

That *Const* is as old as the Outcast Wife tale is probable. The legend of the finding of the Cross began in the 4th century,⁴ the legend of Constantine's birth was alluded to by Bede⁵ early in the 8th century, certain episodes of the cycle were worked up by Cynewulf,⁶ a little later, while a Greek legend, apparently of the same century, the martyrdom of St. Eusignius of Antioch, tells a well-defined story not unlike the one I have outlined. In this, Helena is the beautiful daughter of an innkeeper, and Constantius gives her a peplum of royal purple. Years after, wanting an heir to his kingdom, he sends messengers in quest of one. At the inn, their attention is attracted by Constantine, who mounts one of their horses. When they would reprove him, Helena tells his origin, and shows the peplum; and he is adopted by the emperor.⁷

Having proved that *Const* accounts for the differences between *V I* and *Mir*, and the great majority of versions, we may note that the juxtaposition rather than blending of the two stories is most visible in *HC*, in which we find the two children, the mutilation, hermit and miracle, combined with exposure at sea and sojourn at Rome, together with the episode of the senator, which is transferred to the parallel tale of Plaisance and Constantine. All this matter is connected with legends of St. Martin, possibly by confusion with another empress of the same name.⁸

¹ *Op. cit.*, p. lxvii.

² Graf, *op. cit.*, II, 53.

³ Horstmann, *NLA*, II, pp. 13-14.

⁴ Cf. Smith and Wace, *Dic. of Christian Biog.*, Constantine the Great.

⁵ *Hist. Eccles.*, IV, 523.

⁶ *Elene*.

⁷ Coen, *op. cit.*, IV, 297-98. For other early references and variants, cf. Graf, *op. cit.*, pp. 46-120. Graf shows how from a *stabularia*, Helena came to be considered a princess of Treves or Britain, or the East, her estate growing with the legend.

⁸ Sulpicius Severus (*Dialogues*, II, ch. 6, 7) relates how the empress waited upon Martin at table and afterwards dined off the fragments. According to a Welsh tradition (cf. Gibbon, *op. cit.*, III, 136, note) she was called Helena. The passage is suggestive of *HC* in several ways; but more evidence is needed to establish a connection.

Gough supposes that **HC* arose at Tours, carried thither from England during the English domination of Touraine, 1154–1205, and this is possible.¹ But I think we may trace the connection further back.

Two of the English versions place some of the scenes in Yorkshire; the third seems to have been written in that very district.² **HC* certainly arose at Tours. Now the literary connection of York and Tours, in the personality of Alcuin at the end of the eighth century, is one of the important facts of the Dark Ages.³ It meant that practically the whole of the lore of Northern England at that time was transferred—very literally in the form of copies—to Tours, whence it would readily spread over the Continent.⁴

Const flourished very early in Britain and was particularly connected with York;⁵ hence some form of it was almost certain to have been among Alcuin's books. Whether he took also sagas of Offa of Ongle is far more doubtful. He would not have approved of their pagan character;⁶ and it is impossible to say how far they had developed by the time of Offa of Mercia. Certainly the legend in *V 1* as we have it, is not alluded to at that time, as is the combat by the river,⁷ though the *Wife's Complaint*, which is of the eighth century, shows that similar stories were current then.⁸

In England, before 1200, we have *V 1* quite uninfluenced by *Const*, which, however, appears much later in *Tr* and *Em*. On the continent, Mélusine-tales were early attached to Foulques d'Anjou, and perhaps through his devotion to St. Martin of Tours, his legend came to be bound up with matter relating to that saint, and with *Const*, brought to Tours by Alcuin (as in *HC*). But *Man*, though on a much larger scale, barring certain changes due to the author and the episode of the cut hand (taken perhaps from **HC*),

¹ But it does not seem to me to explain the divergences between three versions as closely related in time and place as **HC*, *Man* and *Anj*.

² *V 1*, *Tr* and *Em*. Historically, the connection with York and the expedition against the Picts and Scots (cf. *Tr*, *Buh* and doubtless *Pec*) may have been taken from the career of Constantine, but it is curious to note that in Trivet's time (1318) the Scots invaded Yorkshire and burned Knaresborough.

³ Cf. Gaskoin, *Alcuin*, London, 1904, p. 55.

⁴ *Ibid.*, quoting a letter written by Alcuin, p. 100 (Jaffé, *Monumenta Alcuiniana*, Berlin, 1864, p. 346. He urges that his books be sent him from York to Tours that they may be known in France as well as in England.

⁵ Gibben, *op. cit.*, I, 399 ff.

⁶ Cf. Gaskoin, pp. 39, 40, 52, 104.

⁷ Contained in the first part of *V 1*. In *Widsið*, ll. 35–45.

⁸ That the legend underlying the *Wife's Complaint* is closely allied, even if not the same, is undeniable.

agrees closely in its general outline with *Em*;¹ also, the source of *Mai* and *En*, although further removed by processes of translation, and modified by other matter, preserves a form between *Em* and *Man*,² while *Anj* shows no close essential connection with *Em* or *Tr* and relates itself, if to any form, to *V1*, which may have been derived from England, direct but late and imperfect, by the *Sieur de Viarmes et Chambly*.³

It is not necessary here to follow out the later developments in great detail.⁴

¹ There are good reasons for holding that Beaumanoir spent several years in England (Suchier, *op. cit.*, I, p. x); and the probable date of his story, 1261-65, would have been shortly after the French lay was composed. But even if he knew the lay, Beaumanoir probably altered and augmented it, partly by fancy, partly according to other traditions.

² That is, it preserves some features that have been lost, obscured, or altered in *Man*, particularly *Mai* which retains the robe and the nurse. Cf. Suchier and Gough, *Constance Saga*, for the relationships of *Man*, *Mai* and *En*, which are indisputable. The late *Büh* seems to me purely a combination of forms similar to *Man* (but earlier than Beaumanoir, as the cut hand is lacking) and *Tr*. It would seem natural to suppose that he had used *Mai* and *En*, but the differences are important. It agrees with *Yst* and *Pec* in identifying the heroine with the daughter of a King of France; but aside from this, in few essentials. If the author was a soldier in the English army (cf. Gough, *Constance Saga*, pp. 28-30) he may have got there a version akin to *Tr*'s original.

³ Who took part in negotiations with the English in 1303. The romance as it stands is so full of local colour and incidents that might have come from the poet's observation, that it would seem his lord told him only an outline corresponding roughly to *V1*, in so far as it gives the story of an innocent woman twice exiled in the forest. It retains the primitive feature, in that there is no talk of the Pope or of marriage. The nurse is prominent, though she is dropped abruptly at the time of the marriage (as in *Em*, but later) and the treasure and needlework are emphasized. The account of the teaching of needlework to the seneschal's daughter here resembles the tale of *Berte*, wherein the seneschal's wife is called Constance. Possibly it is *Berte* that borrows this episode, together with a closely associated meeting with a hermit in the forest, from some earlier form of the Outcast Wife tale. In *Anj*, there is no mutilation and but one child, the circumstances and details differ totally from every other version, and the second exile is very short. The unnatural father dies of grief soon after, the traitress is the aunt, the girl flees into the forest the first time, and the second is condemned to be thrown with her child into a well in the forest, the countess is besieged before she is burned (in *Büh*, *Ol*, *Cont* also, but perhaps suggested in each case by *HC*, in which she is first imprisoned in a castle, then burned); the count seeks his wife in the garb of a serf, and the meeting happens in a *Hôtel Dieu*. This poem looks more like a genuine work of creation than any other version; but some of its matter may have been derived from the gestes of the early Dukes of Anjou, which seem to be a mine of tradition as yet largely unexplored.

⁴ The changes of scene make a study in themselves. Aside from England, Rome and Constantinople, we find Greece early introduced, doubtless as connected with Constantinople. But *Man* makes the father King of Hungary. This might have come through *Berte*, whose father was King of Hungary, or through *Florence*, in which Emere and Miles belong to that country. It is noteworthy that legend made St. Martin also son of a King of Hungary (cf. especially *Le Mystère de la Vie et Histoire de Monseigneur Saint Martin*, 15th century, ed. Boisthibault, Paris, 1841), and that even

The Italian and Spanish versions are secondary, derived from the forms already discussed, so blended, condensed, augmented and inverted that their exact relationship is extremely difficult to follow.

In Italy, the oldest account seems to be the greatly condensed *Yst*,¹ which in general reads like a condensation of **HC*. Then comes *Pec*² also borrowed from **HC*. *Dac* is a thoroughly mixed version, but most of its elements are found in *HC*, though differently arranged and combined there.³ When Fazio came to compile his artificial and arbitrary version, he had certainly *Dac* and *Pec*, possibly several other versions before him.⁴ *Ol* gathers up into itself features borrowed from *Mir*, *Florence of Rome*, *Em* and *Cont*.⁵ *Mir* stands absolutely apart and belongs to this cycle only

St. Helena was, according to some writers, said to have been born in that land (cf. Graf. *op. cit.*, II, 54 ff.). But the idea of the Roman Empire was perhaps the basis for them all (cf. *Huon de Bordeaux*, in which Julius Caesar is King of Hungary and Austria, and "Sire" of Constantinople).

¹ It combines a voyage by land and one across the sea with a mariner. The two sons are educated by a cardinal. Its chief difference is a connection with the Hundred Years' War; but this is sufficiently explained by the date at which it was written. The duke whom the heroine marries might have been conceived as one who also ruled England. Richard Cœur de Lion was called *Comte d'Anjou* (cf. Tarbé, *Chansons de Blondel de Néele*, Reims, 1862, pp. 129, 151); and the French origin of the girl might have been derived from the Holy Roman Empire (cf. *Mir*, "nel tempo nel quale fo translat(at)o el romano imperio al re de Frauzia"). It is not certain that **HC* was connected with Constantinople.

² The opening incident is altered. The girl flees to avoid marrying an old German lord; otherwise the tale is a fair condensation, with minor changes. One son is called Lionetto (cf. Leo in *HC*).

³ It shows however a certain influence from the source of *Mai*, in that the heroine, who has but one child, becomes nurse to another about the same age. On what ground Gough derives it from the same source as *Hung* I cannot see. It contains much extraneous religious material.

⁴ From *Pec* he seems to have taken the convent episode; and from *Dac* the woman's acting as nurse to a child the age of her own. But he seems to have inverted deliberately the leading parts in order to fit them with his idea of the Hundred Years' War.

⁵ From *Mir* it evidently gets the two cut hands and the method of recovery, the exposure in the forest of Britain or Brittany (stanzas of the older *Stella*, the dramatization of *Mir*, are embodied); from *Florence of Rome*, the episode of the scorned knight killing the child of which she is the nurse, and getting her banished to the woods as a result; from *Cont* apparently, the besieging of the mother and burning her in her convent, the use of the ring and perhaps the merchants who took her to the King of Castile. The cask seems to have been borrowed from *En*, unless it comes directly from *Apollonius of Tyre*. The conclusion at Rome again seems to follow *Cont*. Wesselofsky holds that it was also influenced by the legend of Saint Oliva of Palermo. Aside from the name, the chief point of contact is in the double persecution by land and by sea. The saint first crosses the sea (but under different circumstances, "e patria abducta, atque in Africam deportata") and is afterwards driven into a wild forest where she lives as a hermit for years (Fazellus, *De Rebus Siculis*, Cataniae, 1749-53, II, 303). It is probable that the slight resemblance warranted the attachment of the name Oliva; but there are no special traces of the legend itself.

in its second part, the first coming from the kindred tale of the cruel stepmother.¹

Of the Spanish versions, *Vic* in its details suggests *Hung* which depends very directly upon *Man*, though by its own assertion it goes back to a French original, probably *Man*.² *Cont* represents a French version older than *Man* and in several respects comes so curiously close to *Em* as to suggest that it depends upon an original nearly related to that of *Em*.³

But among all these relationships⁴ there is nothing that suggests the difference already observed in the method of exposure. I have alluded to the fact that by the end of the 12th century, the legends of the two Offas had become thoroughly confused.⁵ The ancient story of Thrytho from *Beowulf* was transferred to Offa of Mercia, and confused with some legend of a Frankish princess relating to that same King and Charlemagne. I have elsewhere tried to point out the historic and legendary basis of such a tale. As it stands in *V 2*,⁶ it shows several curious coincidences with the Outcast Wife series: (1) in *V 2*, the heroine says that she was exiled because of a certain marriage which "ne degeneraret, spreivit." The verbs here suggest the opening incident in the series. It is not likely that Charlemagne would have tried to marry her to a man of low rank.⁷ But if the allusion is to pride of race as in *Beowulf*, *En* stands alone in an extraordinary agreement:

"des muotes ward sie alsô reich, (cf. Mōd Ðrȳðo wæg).

Da3 sie kainen man wolt' nemen,

wan der ir 3e mann(e) möcht' gezemen."⁸

¹ It approaches *V 1* most nearly, with a different opening episode borrowed from some tale similar to *Little Snow-White*. It differs in the important points that (1) the heroine's hands are cut off, but her children are safe; (2) the duke goes to a tournament at the court of his father-in-law, instead of the wars in the North; (3) the duke leaves her in his father's care. *Mir* does not follow *V 1* in representing the war as occurring some time after the birth of the children, or the treachery as coming from the girl's father. It resembles *V 1* chiefly in the hunting episode and the part of the hermit.

² The placing the hands on a dish before the King probably comes from *Hung*.

³ An Anglo-Norman *lai* of the reign of Henry III (whose wife and sister-in-law were both princesses of Provence) might easily have been conveyed to the South of France, thence translated into Catalan.

⁴ The detailed comparisons instituted by Suchier, and followed up by Gough with great minuteness, I have not thought it necessary to repeat, as my results agree except where I have called attention to the differences.

⁵ Cf. *O.E. Offa Saga*, Jan. 1905, p. 18 ff. (reprint).

⁶ That is *Vita Offae Secundi* (of Mercia, 767-96) in Wats's edition.

⁷ And he was accused of incest; so likewise was Arthur (aside from *Emaré*).

⁸ Ll. 14-16. *Beowulf*, l. 1931 f.; cf. also the prose: "Diu wolte ouch kainen man nemen denne der ir geviele" (pp. ix, x).

Again, in *V 2*, the real reason of her exile is said to be "crimen flagitiosissimum";¹ in *Hung*² and *Cont*,³ she describes herself as a wicked woman and in *En* is described by the queen-mother as "ain boese; weip."⁴

In *V 2*, "addicta est iudicialiter morti ignominiose, uerum ob regie dignitatis reuerentiam igni uel ferro tradenda non iudicatur, sed in naucula armamentis carente apposit[a],"⁵ etc., is very like *Vic*, where the King's Council conclude: "Non es derecho que ansí muera, mas el derecho manda, que muger de linaje real que errare, que la non maten, mas que la metan en una nave sola," etc.⁶ So in *Hung*, while some of the barons advise that she be drawn and burned, others, "faes devorar a besties salvatjes," one says put her into a "barcha sens nul govern" and let God take the responsibility.⁷ Again, the parents in *V 2* retired to a monastery in their disgust with the marriage;⁸ in *Cont*⁹ and in *Ol*,¹⁰ the mother retires to a convent.

Even if all these coincidences are accidental, the fact remains that in England in the 8th century and again in the 12th century, we have a legend of a woman charged with a crime, exposed at sea in an open boat,¹¹ while in the 13th this appears twice (the originals of *Em* and of *Man*), and once in the early 14th (*Tr*), attached to the Outcast Wife Cycle.

The fundamental idea of *V 1* is incest. The whole story is the double vengeance of the baffled father; in *Tr*, it is jealousy (twice repeated) of the mother-in-law;¹² in *Em*, it is first the one then the other.

The source of the incest idea is almost certainly *Apollonius of Tyre*, which was known in England in the 10th or 11th century, and was enormously popular throughout Europe. This is twice at least connected with the tale under consideration: once, in *HC* where

¹ Ed. Wats, p. 12, l. 32 f.

² "Fembra pecadriu ere" (ed. Bofarull, p. 60).

³ In the second journey: "Io son fembre nada de peccat" (*op. cit.*, p. 533). The allusion here, however, may be purely general.

⁴ Ll. 271-72. So the prose: "mich hât min untât dâ her brâht" (p. xi); and *Mai*: vmb untat ist verstôzen (col. 68, 7-8).

⁵ Ed. Wats, *loc. cit.*

⁶ Ed. Lemecke, p. 21.

⁷ *Loc. cit.*

⁸ Ed. Wats, *loc. cit.*

⁹ *Op. cit.*, p. 530.

¹⁰ Ed. D'Ancona, III, 274.

¹¹ The introduction of the closed boat, which in *En* becomes a cask, may have been suggested by *La Comtesse de Ponthieu* (Moland and D'Héricault, *Nouvelles françaises en prose du xiii^e siècle*, Paris, 1856), which in turn may go back to the chest in *Apollonius of Tyre*.

¹² I doubt whether *Tr* is simply repeating his motive. The details of the first part suggest a story akin to the *Kyng of Tars*, possibly related of Maurice and his wife Constance.

the King made his daughter sleep in his room,¹ and in *Yst* where the girl alludes to Antiochus, "*pro cum eius filia ipso delicto*," etc.² Once suggested, the idea related itself in *Em* to similar tales³ of Arthur, and on the Continent to an Emperor of Rome or King of France, probably through Charlemagne who was both.

The jealous mother-in-law seems to be borrowed from *Mélusine*, or some other early version of the Swan-Maiden Cycle, which flourished in the 12th century.⁴ This is seen by the suggestion of monstrous or abnormal children, which is an elementary feature of the tales in which a mortal marries a fay or wood-nymph, the transformed Valkyrie. But the supernatural woman was found sometimes in the forest, sometimes in a ship, as in the legend of Richard Cœur de Lion.⁵ Here note that her real name *Bertrade* was perhaps associated with that of the Valkyrie Bertha, as was Cynethryth (= Quendrida in *V 2*) with that of the Valkyrie Thrytho.

The forging of a letter is perhaps a natural device, suggested by the King's absence, and is not necessarily borrowed from *Const* where the use is so different.⁶ Still, it is only *V 1* and *Li Dis de l'Empereour Coustant* that it seems to be found as early as the 13th century.

The most difficult problem in the development of the series is the cut-hand episode. In only two of the folk-lore versions, among 43 known to me, is it combined with the incest; on the other hand, it is found regularly where the persecution comes from the step-mother, as in *Mir*, where the hands are used in evidence of death, as in the *Little Snow-White* group; in *Berte*, the heart or tongue (a sow's or dog's used); in the legend of St. Hildegard, the eyes (a dog's used).⁷ This with its original significance appears

¹ MS. Lyons, 767, fol. 3, 3a, 4a.

² MS. Lat., 8701, fol. 142.

³ The tale of Ragallach (O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, London, 1892, 430 ff.) is fundamentally different not only in its details, but in the fact that the king is ignorant of his daughter's identity.

⁴ Cf. *O.E. Offa Saga*, pp. 41-43. There is also such a character in *Partonope of Blois*. It is possible, however, that *Const* comes in here as well. The Empress Fausta, wife of Constantine the Great, was believed guilty of the death of her step-son Crispus, and through the agency of Helena, her mother-in-law, is supposed to have been put to death by her husband on a charge of adultery. There was a strong belief shortly after her death that she was innocent, and Chrysostom says that she was exposed in a desert to be devoured by wild beasts (cf. Gibbon, II, 210-11).

⁵ See poem of that name (Weber, *English Metrical Romances*, London, 1810, II, ll. 63-229), with Mouskes, *op. cit.*, ll. 18720-809.

⁶ Here the order of death to the bearer, is replaced by the command that he of the letter is to marry the princess.

⁷ Cf. *O.E. Offa Saga*, p. 44, n. 1.

nowhere in the cycle except in *Mir* and in very clumsy form in *HC*, where, however, it is followed logically by the feature that the cut-hand intended as evidence of execution, with its ring becomes a means of identification. Elsewhere this mutilation occurs only in *Man*, where it is explained by the mediæval idea that no cripple could succeed to a throne;¹ in *Hung*, *Ol*, *Vic* and *Pen* where it is motivated by the hypothesis that the beauty of the hands especially attracted the father (brother);² hence in these last both hands are cut.

In *V 1*, the idea seems to be fundamentally different. The children are killed by having their hands and feet cut off, and this is the punishment apparently twice threatened for the heroine, but never carried out.³ This was not done to furnish evidence of death, but merely as a punishment, possibly with the additional idea of preventing escape; incidentally, it opened up the way for a miracle.

The miracle indeed is the link between the two ideas; and the cut-hand was retained long after the original reason for it was forgotten, in order that the miracle might be worked. This hypothesis at least seems to me in accord with the facts; and therefore I hold that the episode as it stands represents two very old Germanic ideas—(1) a definite form of inflicting death, and (2) mutilation as evidence of death, strangely transformed in some cases, but preserved for the miraculous opportunity it furnished.⁴

The other principal legends which influence the series are *Berte* and *Florence of Rome*. *Berte* seems to be the oldest known form of a legend akin to the wicked step-mother tale. Its influence is seen possibly in the mutilation or threat of injury; in *Anj*, perhaps, in the finding of the heroine in the woods by the seneschal and the subsequent episode in which she teaches his daughters embroidery.⁵ Perhaps it appears also in the incident of the false charge of murder and the bloody knife (though in *Tr*, this is obviously parallel to *Florence of Rome*),⁶ the heroine's concealment of her

¹ Cf. the legend of St. Melor (Brewer, *Dic. of Miracles*, London, 1884, p. 411).

² In this respect, it agrees in idea with number LVII of the *Exempla* of Jacques de Vitry (London, 1890).

³ Wats, *op. cit.*, p. 6, ll. 30-36.

⁴ In Brewer's *Dic. of Miracles*, pp. 224, 259, 399, 400, are related various miracles of this sort. The one most likely to have influenced this cycle is perhaps that of St. William of Oulx, in the 12th century, whose hand was miraculously restored (400).

⁵ Cf. *O.E. Offa Saga*, p. 44, and p. xli, note 3, above.

⁶ The numerous points of contact between these two groups of tales about innocent persecuted women call for detailed discussion, which would be out of place here. *HC*, particularly, is indebted to *Florence of Rome*.

royal birth (not in *V 1*, but common to most of the other versions, and the burning of the traitress (unless this comes from the Swan Cycle). The influence of *Florence* is seen in the heroine's turning nurse (as in *Dac*, *Faz*, *Ol*), and this may share with *Berte*, the *Swan legend*, *Octavian* and *V 1* responsibility for the forest exposure. *Octavian* is responsible for the shipwreck on the island, and for the education of the boys by a hermit in *HC*, possibly also for the substitution of twins for one child.¹

Without pursuing the subject into further labyrinths,² I must touch upon the relation between the English poems nearly contemporary with *Em*, *Sir Eglamour of Artas* (*Eglam*) and *Torrent of Portyngale* (*Tor*), which contain the episode of the princess with her child (children) exposed at sea.

With the important difference that in *Eglam* and *Tor* the woman is guilty of the fault for which she is exposed, there are so many coincidences of detail and language as to suggest borrowing: whole lines and couplets agree, with only such slight changes as come often between two versions of one story.³ In *Eglam* and *Tor*, the passage is episodic, as one among the many difficulties encountered by the knight in winning his lady; hence I hold that the source of *Em* is perhaps the original of the three. *Eglam* shows much closer resemblances than *Tor*, which agrees however in dialect, *Eglam* being classed as Northern. Pending a critical edition of the latter, I will add only that the resemblances between

¹ In *V 1* the children are not said to be twins.

² Other legends appear in *HC*: *St. Alexius*, *Eustache-Placidus*, possibly *La Reine Sibille*, possibly *Richard Cœur de Lion*, and others that I have not yet identified.

³ Cf. *Em*, l. 634; *Eglam*, l. 827; *Tor*, ll. 1838-39; *Em*, ll. 326, 674; *Eglam*, l. 887; *Em*, ll. 277-78; *Eglam*, ll. 881-82; *Tor*, ll. 1840-41; *Em*, ll. 317, 322; *Eglam*, l. 884; *Tor*, l. 1843; *Em*, l. 275; *Eglam*, l. 883 (emend *then odur*, copied by mistake from l. 884 to *ne rodur*); *Em*, l. 314; *Eglam*, l. 885; *Em*, ll. 328, 676; *Eglam*, l. 888; *Em*, ll. 355, 364, 718; *Eglam*, l. 887; *Em*, ll. 331, 337; *Eglam*, l. 897; *Em*, ll. 368-70; *Eglam*, ll. 928-29 (the word *detycyus* is not common in romances of this class). I might add a long list of lines in *Eglam* which are paralleled in *Em* but are less peculiar or significant. Cf., however, *Eglam*, l. 801; *Em*, l. 33; *Eglam*, l. 803; *Em*, l. 624; *Eglam*, l. 815; *Em*, l. 639; *Eglam*, l. 818; *Em*, 646; *Eglam*, ll. 844-45; *Em*, ll. 772-74; *Eglam*, ll. 938-39; *Em*, ll. 343-45, 688-90, etc. There are also longer passages that read like an echo from *Em* or its sources: the King of Egypt's discovery of the outcast, l. 892 f.; the child serving in the hall at dinner, ll. 1273-75; and especially, the mother's instructions to her son how he should greet his father, ll. 1278-81. That these episodes are borrowed rather from the French than from the English *Em* is perhaps indicated by the use made of the ring (*Eglam*, 715-17, *Tor* 1396-98) which is not found in *Em*, but appears in several other versions (see p. xxxvii, note 5, above).

Eglam and *Tor* not found in *Em*, and the greater remoteness of *Tor* from *Em*, indicate that, whatever may be the relations of the two in other respects, *Eglam* was probably the intermediary for *Tor* in this episode.

§ 9. CONCLUSION.

Emaré cannot be ranked high among the versions of this tale. Over against *La Comtesse d'Anjou*, it is rough indeed, although in contrast with the artificial elaborations of *La Belle Hélène* and even of *La Manekine*, its simplicity, even baldness, is refreshing; and in a few instances it shows real tenderness.¹ But it is interesting chiefly from the point of view of origins. I am convinced that further work upon the development of the legend, would throw light not only upon the close relations between the great cycles of romance, but also upon the methods used in the combination of the ancient national lore with the "boke of Rome" (the importance of which has been recognized only within the last 25 years),² and to some extent with Oriental tales brought westward in the Crusades, and with early or contemporary history;³ and would show how these classes of materials were modified, even transformed, under the influence of the Church, its dogmas and legends.⁴

¹ Notably in the references to the child. Cf. ll. 661-2 and 811-13.

² The researches of Coen and Graf particularly indicate that the phrase meant more than a casual reference to a French source. From numerous hints and allusions in mediæval literature, I am convinced that some great collection of Roman tales, of which the extant *Gesta Romanorum* is but a feeble imitation or reflection, has been lost; and that this contained matter relating to various historical personages, especially Julius Caesar, Octavianus, Vespasian, Hadrian, Titus, Diocletian, Nero and Constantine (in the *Comte de Poitiers*, Constantine frees his uncle Nero from the prison of the Sultan of Babylon, Graf, *op. cit.*, pp. 52-71, and see note on l. 158), and perhaps Julian and others. But as yet the classical element in romance has not received the attention bestowed upon the Celtic and Teutonic materials.

³ A most amusing combination of materials is mentioned by Graf (*op. cit.* II, 47): Constantine's sword was given by Hugh Capet to Athelstan, and used by Gny of Warwick to kill Colbrand.

⁴ I believe that the Provençal legend of the two Mariæ (mothers of St. James the Greater and St. James the Less), which tells how they were driven from Palestine by the Jews, put out to sea in an open boat without sail or rudder or provision, and under divine guidance drifted to the village now called *Les-Saintes-Mariæ-sur-Mer*, has exerted some appreciable influence, at least, upon the popularity of the cycle; but at present my facts are too disconnected to be presented in an orderly manner here. The Provençal legend seems to be connected with some worship of *Notre Dame de la Mer*. An interesting suggestion of this is offered by a bas-relief, taken from a 16th century house in Lyons (now in the museum of that city). It shows the Madonna and Child alone in a little ship, which is being governed by two angels. The inquiry is perhaps worth pursuing.

APPENDIX.

THE play contained in MS. Latin 8163 of the Bibliothèque Nationale, formerly of the Colbert collection, and officially catalogued as apparently of the 15th century, is preceded by the notice in a later hand :

“Columnarium quod et comoedia sine nomine inscribitur, sex actibus absolvitur, non inelegante scriptis, stilo tamen nonnihil impedito. Codex scriptus xiiii saeculo.”

The *Prologue*, which explains the moral purpose of the play, is headed by a picture of a monk who seems to be dictating to a cardinal writing at a desk. The Colonna coat-of-arms (a white column on a red ground) occurs frequently throughout the 49 folios of the work. As the text is written without any spacing between the parts, the length of the piece is apparent.

Passing through Paris, I was able to give a few hours to a cursory examination of this version ; but the *Argument*, immediately following the *Prologue*, seems to show that it probably contributes little to our knowledge of the development of the legend. It can therefore be passed over with a few brief comments, more especially as it will doubtless be included by Professor Suchier among his studies on *La Fille sans Mains*, of which another is announced to appear shortly in *Romania*.

The plot in outline is as follows : “Emolphus, rex Carillorum,” at the entreaty of his dying wife Phylostates, swears that he will marry only a woman like herself ; and so presently, after a search throughout the world, chooses his own daughter Ermionides. She and her nurse pretend to agree, on condition that he finds it to be the will of the gods ; and while he is gone to consult the oracle, they escape in a boat to Phocis. Here they are kindly received by Sophia ; and Ermionides is married to Hor(r)estes (Orestes), king of that country, to the great anger of his mother Holicomesta or Olicomesta (almost certainly corrupted from Clytemnestra). A son is born while Hor(r)estes is absent in Athens ; and the mother-in-law forges a letter to say that the child is an Ethiopian, and then changes the king’s order to take care of mother and child, into a command that they be put to death. Accordingly Celius (“regine

custos") sets the boy adrift in an osier-basket, with gold and regal treasures, and abandons the queen in a trackless wood. The child is found by Athironeus (?), who takes him to Parnassus to consult the oracle upon the question of his adoption. Meanwhile, Hor(x)estes, upon his return, is informed by Celius of what has occurred, and wishes to avenge himself by the death of his mother, but oppressed by the Furies ("stipatus manipulorum cohorte ferocium"), he is soothed by the counsel of Celius, and persuaded to go to the oracle at Parnassus. Here he finds his wife and son; and the nurse presently coming with news of the death of Emolphus, and "Phocays senex," with word of the death of Olicomesta, the play ends happily for hero and heroine.

There are many characters in the play, and some of the names have a curious interest, as: Pallinurus (the boatman), Misenus, Cornelius Tacitus, Tertullus, Verginus, Afrodissa (Aphrodite?), Regulus, etc. Especially noteworthy is the name Altruda, which seems to be a Germanic form related to the Drida of *Vita Offae Secundi*. Perhaps when the text is printed, more light on this point may be forthcoming.

The chief peculiarities of this version are: (1) the apparently unique combination of the tale of the persecuted wife with that of Orestes and Clytemnestra, and (2) the attempt to reconcile conflicting accounts of the method of exposure in the case of mother and child, unless, indeed, in the case of the latter, the author borrows the device from the narrative of Moses.

Altogether, this text belongs to the group in which there is only one child and no cut-hand; but it does not agree, in setting or in details, with any other work that has been published. For this reason, it may possibly prove to be of more value than I have assigned to it on the basis of the *Argument* alone.

Emare.

(MS. Cotton Caligula, A ii.)

(1)

Ihesu, þat ys kyng in trone,
 As þou shoope þoþe sonne *and* mone,
 And alle þat shalle dele *and* dyghite,
 Now lene vs grace such dedus to done,
 In þy blys þat we may wone,
 Men calle hyt heuen lyghite;
 And þy modur Mary, heuyn qwene,
 Bere our arunde so bytwene,
 That semely ys of syght,
 To þy sone þat ys so fre,
 In heuen wyth hym þat we may be,
 That lord ys most of myght.

[leaf 71]
 Jesus, who
 created all
 things,
 3
 grant us grace
 to enter
 heaven.
 6

9 Mother Mary,
 intercede for
 us with thy
 Son.
 12

(2)

Menstrelles þat walken fer *and* wyde,
 Her *and* þer in euery a syde,
 In mony a dyuerse londe,
 Sholde, at her bygynnyng,
 Speke of þat ryghtwes¹ kyng
 That made both see *and* sonde.
 Who-so wylle a stounde dwelle,
 Of mykylle myrghyt y may þou telle,
 And mornyng þer a-monge;
 Of a lady fayr *and* fre,
 Her name was called Emare,
 As I here synge in songe.

Minstrels
 who wander
 in many
 lands, should
 15
 first invoke
 the Creator.
 18
 Whosoever
 will stop a
 while shall
 hear a tale
 of mirth
 and sorrow,
 21
 about a fair
 lady called
 Emare.
 24

¹ R. ryhtwes.

2 The Emperor-Father and Empress-Mother of Emaré.

(3)

Her father was an emperour called Sir Artyus, who had great possessions.	Her fadyr was an emperour, Of castelle <i>and</i> of ryche towre, Syr Artyus was hys nome ; He hadde bope hallys <i>and</i> bowrys, Frythes fayr, forestes wyth flowrys, So gret a lord was none.	27
He had married a fair and courteous lady, Daine Erayne.	Weddedde he had a lady, That was both fayr <i>and</i> semely, Whyte as whales bone ; Dame Erayne hette <i>pat</i> emperes, She was fulle of loue <i>and</i> goodnesse, So curtays lady was none.	30 33 36

(4)

Sir Artyus was the best man in the world, brave and courteous and just.	Syr Artyus was <i>pe</i> best manne In <i>pe</i> worlde <i>pat</i> lyuede panne, Both hardy and <i>per</i> -to wyght ; He was curtays in alle <i>pyng</i> , Bothe to olde <i>and</i> to <i>zyng</i> e, And welle kowth dele <i>and</i> dyght.	39 42
He had but one child of his wedded wife ; but that was fair and seemly, and called Emaré.	He hadde but on chyld in <i>hys</i> lyue, Be-geten on <i>hys</i> weddedde wyfe, And <i>pat</i> was fayr and bryght ; For soþe, as y may telle <i>pe</i> , They called <i>pat</i> chyld Emaré, That semely was of syght.	45 48

(5)

When she was born, she was the fairest crea- ture in the land. The empress died before the child could speak or walk, so it was sent to a lady called Abro,	When she was of her modur born, She was <i>pe</i> fayrest creature borne, That yn <i>pe</i> lond was þoo ; The emperes, <i>pat</i> fayr ladye, Fro her lord gan she dye, Or hyt kowþe speke or goo. The chyld, <i>pat</i> was fayr <i>and</i> gent, To a lady was hyt sente, That men kalled ¹ Abro ;	51 54 57
--	--	----------------

¹ R. called.

Emaré is brought up by the Lady Abro. The King of Sicily. 3

She thawȝth hyt curtesye *and* thewe,
Golde *and* sylke for to sewe,
Amonge maydenes moo.

who taught it
courtesy and
stitchery,
among other
maidens.

60

(6)

Abro tawȝte þys mayden smalle,
Nortur¹ þat men vseden² in sale,
Whyle she was in her bowre.

Abro gave
this small
maiden the
usual educa-
tion.

63

She was curtays in alle thyng,
Bothe to olde³ *and* to ȝyng,
And whythe as lylle flowre ;

She was
courtous to
everybody,

66

Of her hondes she was slye,
Alle he[r] loued þat her sye,
Wyth menske *and* mychyl honour.

white as a
lily, clever
with her
hands, and
loved by all.

69

At þe mayden leue we,
And at þe lady fayr *and* fre,
And speke we of þe emperour.

Now let us
leave the
maiden and
her nurse
and speak of
the emperor,

72

(7)

The emperour of gentylle blode,
Was a curteys lorde *and* a gode,
In alle maner of thyng.
Aftur, when hys wyf was dede,
And ledde hys lyf yn weddewede,
And⁴ myche loued playnge,—

who, after his
wife's death,
led his life in
widowhood,
and greatly
loved dalli-
ance.

75

Sone aftur, yn a whyle,
The ryche kyng of Cesyle
To þe emperour gan wende.
A ryche present wyth hym he browght,
A cloth þat was wordylle wrought.
He welledcomed hym as þe hende.

Soon after,
the great
king of Sicily
came to the
emperour,

78

81

[leaf 71, bk.]
bringing a
splendid
cloth as
present, and
was nobly
welcomed.

84

(8)

Syr Tergaunte þat nobylle knyȝt (hyȝte),⁵
He presented þe emperour ryȝht,
And sette hym on hys kne,

Sir Ter-
gaunte, that
noble knight,
on his knees
before the
emperour,

87

¹ R. Nortour. ² R. usedenn. ³ R. old.

⁴ G. changes And to He. Other possible emendations are: And he ledde; or, by analogy to l. 989, A ledde.

⁵ The omission of hyȝte improves the metre; but although the yȝ is blotted, the word is not unmistakably crossed out by the scribe. Kölbing, however, considers it erased (*Eng. Stud.*, xv, 248). See note on the line.

4 *The King of Sicily's splendid Cloth given to Emaré's Father.*

<p>offered the splendid cloth, which was as thickly set as possible with topaz and rubies, with tued- stones and agate (?) and other rich stones,</p>	<p>Wyth þat cloth rychly dyght, Fulle of stones þer hyt was pyght,¹ As thykke as hyt myght be : Of(f)² topaze and rubyes, And <i>oþur</i> stones of myche prys, That semely wer to se ; Of crapowtes <i>and</i> nakette, As³ thykke ar þey sette, For sothe, as y say þe.</p>	<p>90 93 96</p>
---	--	-------------------------

(9)

<p>As the emperor looked at the cloth, he could not see readily for the glistering of the rich stones,</p>	<p>The cloth was dysplayed sone, The <i>emperour</i>⁴ lokede þer-vpone, And myght[e] hyt not se ; For glysteryng of þe ryche ston Redy syghte had he non), And sayde, " How may þys be ?" The <i>emperour</i> sayde on hygh, " Sertes, þys ys a fayry, Or ellys a vanyte !" The Kyng of Cysyle answered þan, " So ryche a jwelle ys þer non In alle Crystyante."</p>	<p>99 102 105 108</p>
--	---	-----------------------------------

(10)

<p>The daughter of the Emir of heathen- dom made this cloth, and adorned it with gold, azure and precious stones,</p>	<p>The amerayle dowȝter of heþeunes Made þys cloth wyth-ouȝen lees, And wrowȝte hyt alle wyth pride ; And purtreȝed hyt wyth gret honour, Wyth ryche golde and asowr, And stones on ylike a syde. And, as þe story telles in honde, The stones þat yn þys cloth stonde, Sowȝte þey wer fulle wyde. Seuen wynter hyt was yn makynge, Or hyt was browghte to endynge, In herte ys not to hyde.</p>	<p>111 114 117 120</p>
---	--	------------------------------------

which were
sought far
and wide.

Seven years
it was a-
making,
before it was
finished.

¹ MS., was dye (*crossed out*) pyght.

² G. Of.

³ G. suggests A[l]s[ō] for As to improve the metre. See II. 90, 188.

⁴ R. emperor.

(11)

In þat on korner made was		In the first corner were the true
Ydoyne and Amadas,		lovers,
Wyth loue þat was so trewe ;	123	Ydoyne and Amadas,
For þey loueden hem wyth ¹ honour,		portrayed with true-
Portrayed ² þey wer wyth trewe-loue-flour,		love-flower in
Of stones bryght of hewe :	126	stones,
Wyth carbunkulle and safere,		carbuncle,
Kassydons and onyx so clere,		sapphire, chaledony
Sette in golde newe ;	129	and clear onyx, set in
Deamondes and rubyes,		new gold,
And opur stones of mychylle pryse,		diamonds, rubies, and
And menstrellys wyth her gle[we].	132	other precious stones.

(12)

In þat opur corner was dyght,		In the second corner were the true
Trystram and Isowde so bryzt,		lovers,
That semely wer to se ;	135	Trystram and Isowde,
And for þey loued hem ryght,		set thickly with precious
As fulle of stones ar þey dyght,		stones,
As thykke as þey may be :	138	
Of topase and of rubyes,		with topaz, rubies, and
And opur stones of myche pryse,		other gems,
That semely wer to se ;	141	
Wyth crapawtes and nakette,		with toad-stones and
Thykke of stones ar þey sette,		agate (?).
For sothe, as y say þe.	144	

(13)

In þe thrydde korner, wyth gret honour,		In the third corner were
Was Florys and Dam Blawncheffour,		Florys and Dame Blawn-
As loue was hem be-twene ;	147	cheffour,
For þey loued ³ wyth honour,		
Purtrayed þey wer wyth trewe-loue-flour, ⁴		with true-
Wyth stones bryght and shene :	150	love-flower in gems,
Ther wer knyztus and senatowres,		"knights and senators,"
Emerawdes of gret vertues,		potent emeralds,
To wyte wyth-uten wene ;	153	

¹ R. wit.

² G. Pourtrayed.

³ G. supplies hem after loued by analogy to l. 124 above.

⁴ R. flower.

6 *The King of Sicily's splendid Cloth given to Emaré's Father.*

diamonds,
coral, chryso-
lite, crystal,
and good
garnets.

Deamoundes¹ and koralle,
Perydotes and crystalle,
And gode garnettes by-twene. 156

(14)

In the fourth
corner was
the son of the
Sultan of
Babylon,
and the
Emir's
daughter,
who made
this cloth for
his sake.

In the fowrthe corner was oon,
Of Babylone þe sowdan sonne,
The amerayles dowȝtyr hym by. 159

[leaf 72]
An unicorn,
with his high
horn, was
portrayed
before the
maiden,
with flowres
and birds in
rare stones.

For hys sake þe cloth was wrowght;
She loued hym in hert and thowght,
As testymoyeth þys storye. 162

The fayr mayden her' by-forn
Was portrayed an vnykorn,
Wyth hys horn so hye; 165

Flowres and bryddes on ylke a syde,
Wyth stones þat wer sowghte wyde,
Stuffed wyth ymagerye. 168

(15)

When the
cloth was
finished,
it was
brought to
the sultan's
son.
"My father
took it by
force from
the sultan,
and gave
it me,
and I bring
it to thee
specially."

When the cloth to ende was wrowght,
To þe sowdan sone hyt was browȝt,
That semely was of syȝte. 171

"My fadyr was a nobylle man,
Of þe sowdan he hyt wan,
Wyth maystrye and wyth² myȝth. 174

For gret loue he ȝaf hyt me,
I brynge hyt þe in specyalte,
Thys cloth ys rychely dyȝht." 177

He gave it to
the emperor,
who thanked
him properly.

He ȝaf hyt þe emperour,
He receyued hyt wyth gret honour,
And þonkede hym fayr and ryȝt. 180

(16)

The King
of Sicily
amused
himself with
the emperor
as long as
he wished,
then took
leave and
went home.

The Kyng of Cesyle dwelled þer,
As long as hys wylle wer,
Wyth þe emperour for to play; 183

And when he wolde wende,
He toke hys leue at þe hende,
And wente forth on hys way. 186

¹ R. Deamondes.

² R. omits.

Emaré's Father sends for her, and takes her to his Palace. 7

Now remeue¹ þys nobylle kyng.

The emperour aftur hys dowȝtur hadde longyng,²

To speke wyth þat may.

Now the
emperor
longed to
speak with
his daughter,
and sent
messengers
to fetch her.

Messengeres forth he sent

Aftur þe mayde fayr³ and gent,

That was bryȝt as someres day.

189

192

(17)

Messengeres dyȝte hem in hye ;

Wyth myche myrthe and melodye,

Forth gon þey fare,

These went
forth, with
mirth and
minstrelsy,

195

Both by stretes and by styte,

Aftur þat fayr lady,

Was godely vnþur gare.

to fetch the
fair lady.

198

Her norysse, þat hyȝte Abro,

Wyth her she goth forth also,

And wer sette in a chare.

Abro, her
nurse, went
with her,
and they set
out in a
"car,"

201

To þe emperour gan þe[y] go ;

He come aȝeyn hem a myle or two ;

A fayr metyng was there.

to go to the
emperour,
who came a
mile or two
to meet them.

204

(18)

The mayden, whyte as lylle flour,

Lyȝte aȝeyn⁴ (her fadyr⁵) þe emperour ;

Two knyȝtes gan her lede.

The maiden,
white as a
lily, alighted,
and was led
up by two
knights.

207

Her fadyr, þat was of gret renowne,

That of golde wered þe crowne,

Lyȝte of hys stede.

Her father
also alighted,
and when
they were
both on foot,
"clipped"
her and
kissed her,

210

When⁶ þey wer bothe on her fete,

He klypped her and kyssed her swete,

And bothe on fote þey ȝede.

213

They wer glad and made good chere,

To þe palys þey ȝede in fere,

In romans as we rede.

and they
went together
to the palace.

216

(19)

Then þe lordes þat wer grete,

They wesh and seteñ don⁷ to mete,

And folk hem serued swyde.

The great
lords washed
and sat down
to meat.

219

¹ So MS., not remeneth as G. says.

² This line is obviously corrupt. G. omits aftur hys dowȝtur and inserts he after emperour. ³ R. fayre. ⁴ G. aȝeyen.

⁵ G. suggests the omission of these words.

⁶ G. Then.

⁷ R. doun.

8 *Emaré's Father gets the Pope's Leave to wed her. She refuses.*

<p>The maiden sat before her father,</p> <p>and she was so fair that he fell in love with her,</p> <p>and wished to make her his wife.</p>	<p>The mayden, þat was of semblant¹ swete, Byfore² her owene fadur sete, The fayrest wommon on lyfe; That alle hys hert <i>and</i> alle hys þowȝth, Her to loue was yn browȝht; He by-helde her ofte syȝe. So he was an-amored hys þowȝtur tyllē, Wyth her he þowȝth to worche hys wyllē, And wedde her to hys wyfe.</p>	<p>222</p> <p>225</p> <p>228</p>
--	--	----------------------------------

(20)

<p>When the meal was done,</p> <p>he called his council into his chamber, and bade them get leave from the Pope for him to wed his daughter.</p> <p>They durst not disobey, but sent messengers, and earls with them, to Rome. They brought the Pope's Bull permit- ting the marriage.</p>	<p>And when þe metewhyle was don,³ In-to hys chambur he wente soñ,⁴ And called hys counseyle nere. He bad þey shulde sone go <i>and</i> come, And gete leue of þe Pope of Rome, To wedde þat mayden clere. Messengeres forth þey wente, They durste⁵ not breke hys commandement, And erles wyth hem yn fere. They wente to þe courte of Rome, And browȝte þe Popus Bullus sone, To wedde hys dowȝter dere.</p>	<p>231</p> <p>234</p> <p>237</p> <p>240</p>
--	---	---

(21)

<p>Then the emperor was glad, and had a robe made of the cloth of gold,</p> <p>in which she looked fairer than mortal woman.</p> <p>Then he said, "Daughter, I will wed thee;"</p> <p>[leaf 72, bk.]</p> <p>and she. "Nay, God forbid!"</p>	<p>þen was þe emperour gladde <i>and</i> blyþe, And lette shape a robe swyȝe, Of þat cloth of golde; And when hyt was don her vpon), She semed non erpely wommon, That marked was of molde. Then seyde þe emperour so fre, "Dowȝtyr, y wolle wedde þe, Thow art so fresh to be-holde." Then sayde þat wordy vnȝur wede, "Nay, syr, God of heuen hyt for-bede, þat euer do so we shulde!"</p>	<p>243</p> <p>246</p> <p>249</p> <p>252</p>
---	--	---

¹ G. semblant.

⁴ R. soun.

² G. Before.

⁵ R. durst.

³ R. doun.

(22)

- 3yf hyt so be-tydde þat 3e me wedde,
And we shulde play to-gedur in bedde,
Bothe we were for-lorne! 255
þe worde shulde sprynge fer *and* wyde,
In alle þe worlde on euery syde,
þe worde shulde be borne. 258
3e ben a lorde of gret pryce,
Lorde, lette neuur such¹ sorow a-ryce,
Take God 3ou be-forne! 261
That my fadur shulde wedde me,
God forbede þat I hyt so se,
That wered þe crowne of þhorne²!'' 264
- If we should marry, we should both be lost.
The news would go all over the world.
You are a great lord; let not such sorrow arise.
God forbid that my father should marry me!''

(23)

- The emperour was ryght wrothe,
And swore many a grete othe,
That deed shulde she be. 267
He lette make a nobulle boot,
And dede her þer-yn, God wote,
In þe robe of nobulle ble. 270
She moste haue wyth her no spendyng,
Nopur mete ne drynke³;
But shate⁴ her yn-to þe se. 273
Now þe lady dwelled þore,
Wyth-owte anker or⁵ ore,
And þat was gret pyte! 276
- The emperor was furious, and swore great oaths that she should die. He had a boat made, and put her therein, in her splendid dress, without food or drink;
and cast her into the sea without anchor or oar.

(24)

- Ther come a wynd, y vnþurstonde,
And blewe þe boot fro þe londe,
Of her þey lost þe syghit. 279
The emperour hym be-þowght
That he hadde alle mysrowhit,
And was a sory kny3te. 282
- A wind arose and blew the boat out of their sight.
The emperor bethought himself, and grieved so at his misdeed that he fell to the earth in a swoon.

¹ R. suche.

² R. thorne.

³ MS. drynke. R. adds [givyng]. G. suggests n[ōp]e[r]. Cf. l. 593 below. I should suggest drynkyng in the sense of something to drink; but the first instance of this use quoted in the Oxford Dictionary is 1552. See note on the line. ⁴ R. shote.

⁵ G. suggests o[pe]r ore, which improves the metre.

10 *Emaré's Father repents his Sin. She is sought for in vain.*

	And as he stode yn studyynge, He felle down in sowenyng, To þe yrþe was he dyght.	285
The great lords that stood by, took him up and com- forted him.	Grete lordes stode þer-by, And toke v[p] ¹ þe emperour hastyly, And confortd hym fayr <i>and</i> ryght.	288

(25)

When he was recover- ed, he wept sore and said, "Alas, my daughter! Alas, that I was made man!	When he of sownyng kouered was, Sore he wepte <i>and</i> sayde, "Alas, For my dowhter dere! Alas, þat y was made man! Wrecched kaytyf þat I hyt am!" The teres ronne by hys lere.	291 294
I went against God's law, and she was true. Alas, that she were here!"	"I wrowght ² a-ȝeyn Goddes lay, To her þat was so trewe of fay. Alas, why ner ³ she here!" The teres lashed out of hys yȝen; The grete lordes þat hyt syȝen, Wepte <i>and</i> made ylle chere.	297 300
The great lords wept with him.		

(26)

There was none that did not weep for that comely maid.	Ther was noþur olde ny ȝynge, That kowþe stynte of wepyng, For þat comely vnþur kelle.	303
They thron- ged into ships to seek her; but although they sought everywhere on the sea, they came back without her.	In-to shypys faste gañ þey pryng, For to seke þat mayden ȝynge, þat was so fayr of flesh <i>and</i> felle. They her sowȝt ouur-alle yn þe see, And myȝte not fynde þat lady fre, A-ȝeyn þey come fulle snelle.	306 309
Now let us leave the emperour and speuk of the lady.	At þe emperour now ⁴ leue we, And of þe lady yn þe see, I shalle be-gynne to telle.	312

(27)

She floated forth alone, praying to God and His mother.	The lady fleted forth a-lone; To God of heuen she made her mone, And to hys modyr also.	315
---	---	-----

¹ MS. vn.

² R. wrowght.

³ MS. vowel blotted.

⁴ MS. inserts in the margin, with a caret to show that it should be placed between emperour and leue.

She was dryuen *wyth* wynde *and* rayn,
Wyth stronge stormes her a-gayn,
 Of þe watur so blo.
 As y haue herd menstrelles syng yn sawe,
 Hows ny lond myȝth she non knowe,¹
 A-ferd she was to go.
 She was so dryuen fro wawe to wawe,
 She hyd her hede *and* lay fulle lowe,²
 For watyr she was fulle woo.

318 She was
 driven on
 with strong
 storms of
 wind and
 rain against
 her.
 321 As I have
 heard min-
 strels sing,
 she could not
 find house
 or land;
 but in her
 fear of the
 water, hid
 her head.
 324

(28)

Now þys lady dwelled þore,
 A good seuen-nyȝth *and* more,
 As hyt was Goddys wylle;
Wyth carefull herte *and* sykyng sore,
 Such sorow was here ȝarked ȝore,
 And euer lay she styлле.
 She was dryuen yn-to a lond,³
 Thorow þe grace of Goddes sond,
 That alle þyng may fulfyllе;
 She was on þe see so harde be-stadde,
 For hungur *and* thurst almost madde,
 Woo worth wederus ylle!

327 Now she re-
 mained thus,
 lying still in
 her sorrow,
 a good seven-
 night and
 longer,
 330
 until by
 God's grace
 she was
 driven
 ashore.
 333 So hard was
 [leaf 78]
 she bestad
 that she was
 nearly mad
 with hunger
 and thirst.
 336

(29)

She was dryuen in-to a lond,
 That hyȝth Galys, y vnþurstond,
 That was a fayr countre.⁴
 þe kyngus steward dwelled þer by-syde,
 In a kastelle of mykylle pryde;
 Syr Kadore hyȝht he.
 Euery day wolde he go,
 And take *wyth* hym a sqwyer or two,
 And play hym by þe see.
 On a tyme he toke þe eyr,
Wyth two knyȝtus gode *and* fayr;
 The wedur was lythe of le.

339 She was
 driven into
 a land called
 "Galys."
 342 The king's
 steward,
 Sir Kadore,
 who dwelled
 there in a
 great castle,
 every day
 went down
 to the sea
 with a squire
 or two.
 345
 Once he was
 taking the
 air with two
 knights,
 348

¹ R. knawe. ² R. lawe.

³ L. 331, in MS. is followed by l. 338 crossed out.

⁴ R. cuntre.

12 *Emaré is taken to Sir Kadore's Castle. She teaches Silk-work.*

(30)

and found a boat ashore, in it a glistering thing that amazed them; but they went up to the lady, who had been so long "meat- less," that it grieved them to see she was almost dead.	A boot he fond by þe brym, And a glysteryng þyng þer-yn, Ther-of þey hadde ¹ ferly.	351
	They went forth on þe sond To þe boot, y vnþurstond, And fond þer-yn þat lady.	354
	She hadde so longe meteles be, That hym þowht gret dele to se; She was yn poyn[t] to dye.	357
They asked her name; but she changed it to Egare.	They askede her what was her name; She chaunged hyt þer a-none, And sayde she hette Egare.	360

(31)

Sir Kadore, full of pity, took the lady home.	Syr Kadore hadde gret pyte; He toke vp þe lady of þe see, And hom gan he[r] lede.	363
She was lean as a tree through lack of food.	She hadde so longe meteles be, She was wax lene as a tre, That wordy vnþur wede.	366
They took her into a room of the castle, and fed her with all kinds of delicious meat and drink.	In-to hys castelle when she came, In-to a chawmbyr þey her nām, And fayr þey gan ² her fede, Wyth alle delycyus mete <i>and</i> drynke, That þey myȝth hem on þynke, That was yn alle þat stede.	369 372

(32)

When the fair lady was recovered,	When þat lady, fayr of face, Wyth mete <i>and</i> drynke keuered was, And had colour a-gayne,	375
she taught them to sew and mark all kind ^s of silk- work. They were full iain of her; she was courteous to all,	She tawȝte hem to sewe <i>and</i> marke Alle maner of sylky ^s werke; Of her þey wer fulle fayne. She was curteys yn alle þyng, Bothe to olde <i>and</i> to ȝynge, I say ȝow for corteyne.	378 381

¹ R. had.

² R. gaun.

³ R. sylkyn. MS. sylky, but a letter has evidently been erased after it.

The King of Galys falls in love with Emare. His Council. 13

She kowþe¹ werke alle maner þyng,
That felle to emperour, or to kyng,
Erle, barown or swayne.

384 and could do
work suited
to emperor,
king, earl,
baron, or
swain.

(33)

Syr Kadore lette make a feste,
That was fayr *and* honeste,
Wyth hys lorde, þe kyng.
Ther was myche menstralse,
Trommpus, tabours² *and* sawtre,
Bothe harpe *and* fydylleyng.
The lady, þat was gentylle *and* smalle,
In kurtulle alone serued yn halle,
By-fore þat nobulle kyng.
þe cloth vpon her shone so bryȝth,
When she was þer-yn y-dyȝth,
She semed non erdly þyng.

387 Sir Kadore
made a
goodly feast
for the king,
with min-
strelsy of
trumpet,
tabour,
psaltery,
harp, and
fiddle.

390 The gentle
lady, in her
kirtle alone,
served before
the king;

393 but in her
shining robe
she seemed
no earthly
thing.

396

(34)

The kyng loked her vp-on,
So fayr a lady he syȝ neuur non,
Hys herte she hadde yn wolde.
He was so an-amered of þat syȝth,
Of þe mete non he myȝth,
But faste gan her be-holde.
She was so fayr and gent,
The kynges loue on her was lent,
In tale as hyt ys tolde.
And when þe metewhyle was don,³
In-to þe chambur he wente son,⁴
And called hys barouns bolde.

399 The king
looked at her,
and became
so enamoured
of her fair-
ness that he
could not eat,

402 but stared at
her fixedly.

405

408 When the
meal was
done, he went
into the
chamber and
called his
barons,

(35)

Fyrst he calle[d] Syr Kadore,
And opur knyȝtes þat þer wore,
Hastely come hym tylle.⁵
Dukes *and* erles, wyse of lore,
Hastely come þe kyng be-fore,
And askede what was hys wylle.

411 Sir Kadore,
and other
knights to
come hastily
to him;
and wise
dukes and
earls came
and asked the
king's will.

414

¹ R. kowthe. ² R. Trompus, tabors.

³ R. down. ⁴ R. soun.

⁵ MS., l. 411 is omitted and written in the margin.

14 *The King of Galys wishes to wed Emaré. His Mother objects.*

Then he said to Sir Kadore, "Tell me whence is that lovely maid [leaf 78, bk.] that served in hall to-day?"	Then spakke þe ryche yn ray, To Syr Kadore gan he say, Wordes fayr <i>and</i> styлле : "Syr, whēns ys þat louely may, That yn þe halle serued þys day? Telle me, 3yf hyt be þy wylle."	417 420
---	---	----------------------------

(36)

Then said Sir Kadore: "An earl's daughter from a far land. I sent for her to teach my children courtesy. She is the cunningest woman in her work that I have seen in christen- dom." Then said the king: "I will make her my queen."	Then sayde Syr Kadore, y vnþurstonde, "Hyт ys an erles þowztur of ferre londe, That semely ys to sene. I sente aftur her, certeynlye, To teche my chylderen curtesye, In chambur wyth hem to bene. She ys þe konnyngest wommon, I trowe, þat be yn Crystendom, Of werk þat y haue sene." Then sayde þat ryche raye, "I wylle haue þat fayr may, And wedde her to my quene!"	423 426 429 432
--	--	--

(37)

The king sent for his mother, and showed her the fair maid in her shining robe. The old queen said, "I never saw a woman half so fair."	The nobulle kyng, verament, Aftyr ¹ hys modyr he sent, To wyte what she wolde say. They browzt[e] forth hastely That fayr mayde Egarye; She was bry3th as someris day. The cloth on her shon so bryght, When she was þer-yn dyght, And her-self a gentelle may, The olde qwene sayde a-non, "I sawe neuer wommon Haluendelle so gay!"	435 438 441 444
---	---	--

(38)

The old queen said ungra- ciously, "Son, this is a fiend.	The olde qwene ² spakke wordus vnhende, And sayde, "Sone, þys ys a fende, ³ In þys wordy wede!	447
---	--	-----

¹ R. After.

² R. old quene.

³ MS. *as in text*, not sende as G. says.

As þou louest my blessinge,
 Make þou neuur þys weddyng,
 Cryst hyt de forbede!"
 Then spakke þe ryche ray,
 "Modyr, y wylle haue þys may!"
 And forth gan her lede.
 The olde qwene,¹ for certayne,
 Turnede wyth ire hom a-gayne,
 And wolde not be at þat dede.

Do not marry
 her, if you
 love my bless-
 ing."
 450
 Then the
 king said,
 "Mother, I
 will," and led
 her forth.
 453
 The old queen
 went home in
 anger, and
 would not be
 present.
 456

(39)

The kyng wedded þat lady bryght;
 Grete puruyance þer was dyȝth,
 In þat semely sale.
 Grete lordes wer serued a-ryght,
 Duke, erle, baron and knyȝth,
 Both of grete and smale.
 Myche folke for soþe þer was,
 And þer-to an huge prese,
 As hyt ys tolde yn tale.
 Ther was alle maner þyng,
 That felle to a kyngus weddyng,
 And mony a ryche menstrale.

The king
 married the
 lady with
 great pur-
 veyance.
 459
 Great lordes
 were well
 served,
 and there was
 a huge crowd,
 462
 and all thing
 that belong
 to a king's
 wedding,
 including
 minstrels.
 465
 468

(40)

When þe mangery was done,
 Grete lordes departed sone,
 That semely were to se.²
 The kyng be-lafte wyth þe qwene,
 Moch loue was hem be-twene,
 And also game and gle.
 She was curteys and swete,
 Such a lady herde y neuur of zete;
 They loued both wyth herte fre.
 The lady þat was both meke and mylde,
 Conceyued and wente wyth chylde,
 As God wolde hyt sholde be.

After the
 feast was
 done, the
 great lordes
 departed,
 471
 and left the
 king and
 queen to-
 gether in
 love and joy.
 474
 477
 The lady,
 that was
 courteous and
 sweet, con-
 ceived a child,
 as it was
 God's will.
 480

¹ R. quene.

² R. see.

(41)

The king of France, at that time beset with Saracens,	The kyng of Fraunce, yn þat tyme, Was be-sette <i>wyth</i> many a Sarezyne, And cumbered alle in tene ;	483
sent for the king of "Galys" and other lorde.	And sente aftur þe kyng of Galys, And oþur lordys of myche prys, That semely were to sene.	486
The king of "Galys" gathered men from all sides,	The kyng of Galys, in þat tyde, Gedered men on euery syde, In armour bryght and shene.	489
and said to Sir Kadore and other lorde, "Take heed to my queen."	Then sayde þe kyng to Syr Kadore, And oþur lordes þat ther wore, " Take good hede to my qwene."	492

(42)

The king of Fraunce sent for them all, king, knight, and clerk ;	The kyng of Fraunce spared none, But sent for hem euerychone, Both kyng, knyȝth <i>and</i> clerke.	495
but the steward remained at home to take care of the queen. She went with child, according to God's will,	The stward ¹ by-laft at home, To kepe þe qwene whyte as fome, He come not at þat werke.	498
till she gave birth to a goodly child with a double king's mark.	She wente <i>wyth</i> chylde yn place, As longe as Goddus wyll was. That semely vnþur serke ;	501
	Thylle þer was of her body, A fayr chylde borne <i>and</i> a godele, Hadde a dowbylle kyngus marke.	504

(43)

They christened him Segramour with great honour.	They hyt crystened <i>wyth</i> grete honour, And called hym Segramour ; Frely was þat fode.	507
[leaf 74] Then Sir Kadore made in haste a noble letter and sent it to the king.	Then þe steward, Syr Kadore, A nobulle lettur made he thore, And wrowȝte hyt alle <i>wyth</i> gode.	510
	He wrowȝte hyt yn hyȝynges, And sente hyt to hys lorde þe kynges, That gentylle was of blode.	513

¹ R. stiward.

Emaré's Mother-in-law forges a Letter about Emaré's Boy. 17

The messenger forth gan wende,
And wyth þe kyngus modur gan lende,
And yn-to þe castelle he ȝode.

The messenger went forth, and stopped at the castle of the king's mother.

516

(44)

He was resseyued rychely,
And she hym askede hastyly,
How þe qwene hadde spedde.
"Madame, þer ys of her y-borne
A fayr man-chylde, y telle ȝou be-forne,
And she lyth in her bedde."
She ȝaf hym for þat tydyng
A robe *and* fowrty shylyng,
And rychely hym cladde.
She made hym drouken of ale *and* wyne,
And when she sawe þat hyt was tyme,
The chambur she wolde¹ hym lede.

She received him graciously, and asked how the queen had sped.
"Madam, she has a fair man-child, and lies ill."

519

522

She gave him a robe and forty shillings for that news,

525

made him drunk with ale and wine, and led him to his room.

528

(45)

And when (s)he was on slepe browȝt,
The qwene þat was of wykked þowȝt,
The chambur gan she wende.
Hys letter she toke hym fro,
In a fyre she brente hyt do;
Of werkes she was vnhende.
Anopur lettur she made wyth euylle,
And sayde þe qwene had born a deuylle,
Durst no mon come her hende.
Thre heddes hadde he there,²
A lyon, a dragon *and* a beere,
A fowlle, feltred fende.

When he was asleep the wicked queen went to his room,

531

and took and burned the letter.

534

Another she made, saying that the queen had borne a devil

537

with three heads (of a lion, a dragon and a bear), and none dared approach her.

540

(46)

On þe morn, when hyt was day,
The messenger wente on hys way,
Bothe by styre *and* strete;

On the morrow, the messenger continued his journey

543

¹ R. wole. G. suggests she hym led[d]e, which is better for rhyme as well as for metre.

² MS., hole in there, but the vowel is probably e.

18 *Emaré's Husband is deceived by his Mother's forged Letter.*

<p>till he came to the king, greeted him, and gave him the letter.</p>	<p>In trwe story as y say, Tylle he come þer as þe kynges laye, And speke wordus swete. He toke þe kyng þe lettur yn honde, And he hyt redde, y vnþurstonde, The teres downe gan he lete. And as he stode yn redyng, Downe he felle yn sowenyng, For sorow hys herte gan blede.</p>	<p>546 549 552</p>
--	---	--

(47)

<p>Great lordes took him up;</p>	<p>Grete lordes þat stode hym by, Toke vp þe kyng hastely; In herte he was fulle woo. Sore he grette <i>and</i> sayde, "Alas, That y euur man born was! That hyt euur shulde be so!"¹ Alas, þat y was made a kynges, And sygh wedded þe fayrest þyng, That on erpe myght go! That euur Jhesu hym-self wolde sende Such a fowle, lonly fende, To come by-twene vs too!"</p>	<p>555 561 564</p>
--------------------------------------	---	--

(48)

<p>When he saw that it might be no better, he made and sealed an- other letter, commanding</p>	<p>When he sawe hyt myȝt no bettur be, Anopur lettur þen made he, And seled hyt wyth hys sele. He commanded yn alle þynges, To kepe welle þat lady ȝynges, Tylle she hadde her hele; Bothe gode men <i>and</i> ylle, To serue her at her wyll, Bothe yn wo and wele. He toke þys lettur of hys honde, And rode þorow þe same londe, By þe kyngus modur castelle.</p>	<p>567 570 573 576</p>
--	--	--

¹ MS. That hyt euur so shulde be.

The mes-
senger took
the letter,
and rode
home
through the
same land, by
the king's
mother's
castle.

(49)

And þen he dwelled þer alle nyȝt;
 He was resseyued *and* rychely dyȝt,
 And wyste of no treson.
 He made hym welle at ese *and* fyne,¹
 Bothe of brede, ale *and* wyne,
 And þat be-rafte hym hys reson.
 When he was on slepe browȝt,
 The false qwene hys lettur sowȝt;²
 In-to þe fyre she kaste hyt downe.
 A-nopur lettur she lette make,
 That men sholde þe lady take,
 And lede her owt of towne.

He stopped
 there all
 night, was
 well received,
 and knew of
 no treason.
 He was well
 at ease with
 food, ale,
 and wine,
 and lost his
 senses.
 And when he
 was asleep,
 the false
 queen sought
 and burned
 his letter;
 and made
 another, that
 the lady
 should be
 seized and
 led out of
 town,

(50)

And putte her yn-to þe see,
 In þat robe of ryche ble,
 The lytylle chyldre her' wyth;
 And lette her' haue no spendyng,
 For no mete ny for drynke,³
 But lede her' out of þat kygh.⁴
 "Vpon) payn) of chyldre *and* wyfe,
 And also vpon) ȝour owene lyfe,
 Lette her' haue no gryght!"
 The messenger knewe no gyle,
 But rode hom mony a myle,
 By forest *and* by fryght.

and put into
 the sea,
 with her rich
 robe and her
 child, with
 no money
 [leaf 74, bk.]
 for food or
 drink.
 "Upon pain
 of child and
 wife and your
 own life,
 grant her no
 pardon."
 The mes-
 senger knew
 nothing of
 this guile as
 he rode home.

(51)

And when þe messenger' come home,
 The steward toke þe lettur sone,
 And by-gan to rede.
 Sore he syght and sayde, "Alas,
 Sertes, þys ys a fowle case,
 And a de[l]fulle dede!"
 And as he stode yn redyng,
 He felle downe yn swonynge,⁵
 For sorow hys hert gan blede.

When the
 steward read
 the letter,
 he sighed and
 said, "Alas,
 this is a bad
 case!"
 He fell down
 in a swoon,

¹ Probably a-fyne, as G. suggests. Cf. l. 913 below.

² After t in MS., a small round blot, which does not seem to be intended for an e. G., however, sowȝte.

³ R. drynkyng. ⁴ R. kyght. ⁵ R. swounyng.

and they all
wept with
him for that
good woman.

Ther was noþur olde ny 3ynge,
That my3te for-bere of wepynge,
For þat worpy vnþur wede.

612

(52)

The lady,
hearing the
outcry, called
to the
steward,
"What is
this?"

The lady herde gret dele yn halle,
On þe steward gan she calle,
And sayde, "What may þys be?
3yf any-þyng be a-mys.

615

Tell me what
is wrong."

Telle me what þat hyt ys,
And lette not for me."

618

The steward
said, "Here
is a letter
from my lord
that grieues
me."
She read how
she must into
the sea.

Then sayde þe steward, verament,
"Lo, her, a lettur my lord hath sente,
And þer-fore woo ys me!"

621

She toke þe lettur *and* by-gan to rede;
Then fonde she wryten alle þe dede,
How she moste yn-to þe see.

624

(53)

The queen
bade him be
still,

"Be styлле, syr," sayde þe qwene,
"Lette syche mornynge¹ bene;
For me haue þou no kare.

627

and do the
command of
his lord,

Loke þou be not shente,
But do my lordes commāundement,²
God for-bede þou spare!

630

who was
ashamed
of his
"simple
lady,"

For he weddede so porely,
On me, a sympulle lady,
He ys a-shamed sore.

633

and yet would
never again
get one so
gentle of
blood.

Grete welle my lord fro me,
So gentylle of blo(1)de³ yn Cristyante,
Gete he neuur more!"

636

(54)

There was
great weep-
ing and
wringing of
hands when
the lady with
her child
entered the
ship.

Then was þer sorow *and* myche woo,
When þe lady to shype shulde go;
They wepte *and* wronge her hond[e].⁴
The lady, þat was meke *and* mylde,
In her arme she bar her chylde,
And toke leue of þe londe.

639

642

¹ MS., o in mornynge blotted.

² R. commaundement.

⁴ R. honde. MS hondus.

³ R. blode.

When she wente yn-to þe see, In þat robe of ryche ble, Men sowened on þe sonde.	When in her rich robe she went into the sea,	645
Sore þey wepte <i>and</i> sayde, "Alas, Certys, þys ys a wykked kase! Wo worth dedes wronge!"	men wept and said this was a wicked deed.	648

(55)

The lady <i>and</i> þe lytylle chyld Fleted forth on þe watur wylde, Wyth fulle harde happes.	The lady and child floated on with hard- ship.	651
Her surkote þat was large <i>and</i> wyde, Ther-wyth her vysage she gan hyde, Wyth þe hynþur lappes;	She covered her face with her surcoat.	654
She was aferde of þe see, And layde her gruf vpon a tre, The chyld to her pappes.	In her fear, she lay down, with the child to her breast,	657
The wawes, þat were grete <i>and</i> strong, On þe bote faste þey þonge, ¹ Wyth mony vnsemely rappes.	while the great waves beat on the boat.	660

(56)

And when þe chyld gan to wepe, Wyth sory herte she songe hyt a-slepe, And putte þe pappe yn hys mowth, And sayde, "Myȝth y onus gete lond, Of þe watur þat ys so stronge, By northe or by sowthe, Wele owth y to warye þe, see, I haue myche shame yn the!"	When the child cried, she nursed it and sang it asleep, and said, "If ever I get to land, I ought to curse the sea that puts me to so much shame."	663
And euur she lay <i>and</i> growht. ² Then she made her prayer, To Ihesu <i>and</i> hys modur dere, In alle þat she kowþe.	She prayed to Jesus and His mother.	666 669 672

(57)

Now þys lady dwelled thore, A fulle seuene ³ nyght <i>and</i> more, As hyt was Goddys wylle;	Thus the lady con- tinued a seven-night and more in her sorrow.	675
---	--	-----

¹ R. thronge.

² G. *emends* to on grōwf, a reading suggested by Holthausen.
See note on this line.

³ MS., a letter seems to have been erased before nyght.

22 *Emaré and her Boy land near Rome, & are housd by a Merchant.*

	Wyth karefulle herte and sykyng sore, Such sorow was her ³ jarked zore, And she lay fulle styлле.	678
[leaf 75]	She was dryuen toward Rome, Thorow þe grace of ¹ God yn trone, That alle þyng may fulfyllе.	681
By God's grace she was driven to- wards Rome,	On þe see she was so harde be-stadde, For hungur and thurstе alle-most madde, Wo worth chawnses ylle!	684
almost mad with hunger and thirst.		

(58)

In that city dwelled a rich mer- chant called Jurdan,	A marchaunte dw[el]led ² yn þat cyte, A ryche mon of golde and fee, Iurdan was hys name.	687
who every day went to take the air by the sea.	E(e)uery day wolde he Go to playe hym by þe see, The eyer for to tane.	690
On this occasion,	He wente forth yn þat tyde, Walkynge by þe see syþe, Alle hym-selfe a-lone.	693
he went forth alone, and found a boat with a woe-begone fair lady.	A bote he fonde by þe brymme, And a fayr lady ther-ynne, That was ryght wo-by-gone.	696

(59)

He was frightened	The cloth on her shon so bryth, He was a-ferde of þat syght, For glysteryng of þat wede;	699
by the glitter of the bright cloth, and thought she was no earthly being.	And yn hys herte he þowzth ryght, That she was non erdyly wyght, He sawe neuur non s(h)uch yn leede.	702
He asked her name, and she said "Egarye."	He sayde, "What hette ze, fayr ladye?" "Lord," she sayde, "y hette Egarye, That lye her ³ yn drede."	705
Then he took home the fair lady and her child.	Vp he toke þat fayre ladye, And þe zonge chylde her by, And hom he gan hem lede.	708

¹ MS., o in of is corrected from y.

² A hole in MS. where el should be.

³ R. here.

(60)

When he come to hys byggyng,
 He welcomed fayr þat lady 3ynge,
 That was fayr and bryght ;
 And badde hys wyf yn alle þynge,
 Mete *and* drynke for to brynge,
 To þe lady ryght.
 “ What þat she wylle craue,
 And her mowth wylle hyt haue,
 Loke hyt be redy dyght.
 She hath so longe meteles be,
 That me þynketh grette pyte ;
 Conforte her 3yf þou myght.”

When he
 came home
 he welcomed
 the lady,
 711
 and bade his
 wife bring
 her meat and
 drink.
 714
 “ Look to it
 that she has
 what she
 would like ;
 717
 and comfort
 her for the
 privation she
 has endured.”
 720

(61)

Now þe lady dwelles ther,
 Wyth alle mete þat gode were ;
 She hedde at her wylle.
 She was curteys yn alle þyng,
 Bothe to olde *and* to 3ynge ;
 Her loued bothe gode *and* ylle.
 The chylde by-gan for to pryfe,
 He wax þe fayrest chyld onlyfe,
 Whyte as flour on hylle ;
 And she s[h]ewed¹ sylke werk yn bour,
 And taw3te her sone nortowre ;
 But euyr she mornede styлле.

Now the lady
 dwells there
 in comfort,
 723
 and by her
 courtesy wins
 the love of all.
 726
 The child
 throve, and
 became the
 fairest child
 alive.
 729
 And while she
 sewed silk-
 work, and
 taught her
 son, she still
 mourned in
 secret.
 732

(62)

When þe chylde was seuen 3er olde,
 He was bothe wyse *and* bolde,
 And wele made of flesh *and* bone ;
 He was worþy vnþur wede,
 And ryght welle kowþe prike a stede,
 So curtays a chylde was none.
 Alle men louede Segramowre,
 Bothe yn halle *and* yn bowre,
 Wher-so-euwr he gan gone.

When the
 child was
 seven years
 old, he was
 clever, and
 bold, and
 well-made,
 735
 and could
 manage a
 horse.
 738
 Everybody
 loved him for
 his courtesy.
 741

¹ MS. has dots under h, seemingly to show erasure.

24 *The King of Galys is shown his Mother's forged Letter.*

Now let us
leave the lady
and speak of
the king of
Galys, when
he came
home.

Lene we at þe lady, clere of vyce,
And speke of the kyng of Galys,
Fro þe sege when he come home.

744

(63)

The siege
is broken,
and the king
comes home
in triumph,

Now þe sege broken ys,
The kyng come home to Galys,
Wyth mykylle myrthe *and* pride.

747

with great
lords riding
by his side.

Dukes *and* erles of ryche asyce,
Barones *and* knyghtes of mykylle pryse,
Come rydyng be hys syde.

750

Sir Kadore
rode to meet
him,

Syr K[a]dore¹, hys steward þanne,
A-ȝeyn hym rode wyth mony a man,
As faste as he myght ryde ;

753

and told him
the news.

He tolde þe kyng a-ventowres,
Of hys halles *and* hys bowres,
And of hys londys wyde.

756

(64)

The king
blamed him
for not speak-
ing first of
Egare,

The kyng sayde, " By Goddys name,
Syr Kadore, þou art to blame,
For þy fyrst tellynge !

759

Thow sholdest fyrst haue tolde me
Of my lady Egare,
I loue most of alle þyng ! "

762

whom he
loved best.
Then the
steward was
grieved, and
cried : " Are
ys no true
king ?
[leaf 75, bk.]
Here is your
letter.
I have obeyed
you."

Then was þe stewardes herte wo,
And sayde, " Lorde, why sayst þou so ?
Art not þou a trewe kynge ?

765

Lo her, þe lettur ȝe sente me,
ȝowr owene self þe soþe may se ;
I haue don ȝour byddyng."

768

(65)

The king read
the letter,
and turned
pale,
crying,
" Alas, that
ever I was
born !

The kyng toke þe lettur to rede,
And when he sawe þat ylke dede,
He wax alle pale *and* wanne.

771

Sore he grette *and* sayde, " Alas,
That euur born y was,
Or euur was made manne !

774

¹ MS. Kodore.

Syr Kadore, so mot y the,
Thys lettur come neuur fro me,

I telle¹ þe her a-none!"

777. This letter
never came
from me."

Bothe þey wepte *and* ʒaf hem ylle.

"Alas," he sayde, "saf Goddys wyll!"

And both þe[y] sowened þen.

780 They lamented
together,
and then
swooned.

(66)

Grete lordes stode by,

And toke vp þe kyng hastily,

Of hem was gret pyte;

783 The great
lords took up
the king;

And when þey both keuered were,

The kyng toke hym þe letter þer,

Of þe heddys þre.

786 and when
the two were
recovered,
the king took
the letter

"A, lord," he sayde, "be Goddus grace,

I sawe neuur þys lettur yn place!

Alas! how may þys be?"

789 and said that
he could not
understand
it.

Aftur þe messenger' þer þey sente,

The kyng askede what way he went:²

"Lor,³ be ʒour modur fre."

792 They sent for
the messenger
and asked
how he went.
"Lord, by
your mother's
castle."

(67)

"Alas!" þen sayde þe kyng,

"Wheþur my modur wer' so vnhende,

To make þys treson?

795 "Alas," said
the king,
"was it my
mother then?"

By my krowne, she shalle be brent,

Wyth-owten any opur jugement,

That thenketh me best reson!"

798 She shall be
burned with-
out trial!"

Grete lordes toke hem be-twene,

That þey wolde exyle þe qwene,

And be-refe her' hyr renowne.

801 Great lords
decided to
exile the
queen and
attaint her.

Thus þey exiled þe false qwene,

And by-rafte her' hyr lyfþe clene,

Castelle,⁴ towre *and* towne.

804 Thus they
did,
and deprived
her of her
property.

(68)

When she was fled ouur þe see fome,

The nobulle kyng dwelled at hoīm,

Wyth fulle heuy chere;

807 When she
had fled over-
sea, the king
remained at
home, sor-
rowing

¹ R. tell.

² R. wente.

³ R. Lord.

⁴ MS., *between* Castelle and towre are the words town & with a dotted line beneath them to signify erasure.

	Wyth karefulle hert and drury mone, Sykynges made he many on,	
for Egaré.	For Egarye þe clere.	810
And when he saw children play, he wept for his son.	And when he sawe chylderen play, He wepte and sayde, " Welle-a-vey, For my sone so dere ! "	813
Thus he lived	Such lyf ¹ he lyued mony a day, That no mon hym stynte may,	
for seven years,	Fully seuen yere.	816
(69)		
till he re- membered how his lady was drowned for his sake,	Tylle a thougth yn hys herte come, How hys lady, whyte as fome, Was drowned for hys sake.	819
and he de- cided to go to Rome for penance.	" Thorow þe grace of God yn trone, I wolle to þe pope of Rome, My penans for to take ! "	822
He prepared many ships and lilled them with goods for his men, gave alms for his soule's sake,	He lette ordeyne shypus fele, And fylled hem fulle of wordes wele, Hys men mery wyth to ² make.	825
and went aboard.	Dolys he lette dyzth and dele, For to wynnen hym sowles hele, To þe shyp he toke þe gate.	828
(70)		
The sailors made ready,	Shypmen, ³ þat wer' so mykylle of price, Dyght her' takulle on ryche a-cyse, That was fayr and fre.	831
drew up sail and laid out oar, with a fair wind and fine weather.	They drow3 vp sayl and leyd out ore, The wynde stode as her' lust wore, The weþur was lype on le.	834
They sailed over the salt foam, by God's grace.	They sayled ouer' þe salt fome, Thorow þe grace of God in trone, That most ys of powste.	837
He took his inn at the house of the burgess with whom Emaré dwelled.	To þat ⁴ cyte when þe[y] come, At þe burgeys hous hys yn he nome, ⁵ Ther-as woned Emarye. ⁶	840

¹ MS., after *lyf a hole*, covering space enough for a letter, perhaps e. ² MS. after *to*, be crossed out.

³ MS., *h* is written over *y*, in Shypmen. ⁴ R. the.

⁵ L. 837 follows in MS., but is crossed out and underlined.

⁶ G. Emaré.

(71)

Emaré called he[r] sone,

Emaré called
her son,

Hastely to here come,

843

Wyth-oute ony lettynge,

and bade him
do her bid-
ding,

And sayde, "My dere sone so fre,

Do a lytulle aftur me,

846

And þou sha[l]t¹ haue my blessyng.

To-morowe þou shalle serue yn halle,

On the mor-
row he should
serue in the
hall before
the king,

In a kurylle of ryche palle,

849

By-fore þys nobulle kyng;

Loke, sone, so curtays² þou be,

[leaf 76]

That no mon fynde chalange to þe,

so courte-
ously
that no man
could take
exception to
anything.

In no manere þynge!

852

(72)

When þe kyng ys serued of spycerye,

"When the
king is served
with spicery,
kneel down
and take his
hand,

Knele þou downe hastlye,

855

And take hys hond yn þyn;

And when þou hast so done,

Take þe kuppe of golde sone,

858

And serue hym of þe wyne.

and offer him
wine,
and come tell
me what he
says."

And what þat he speketh to þe,

Cum a-non and telle me,

861

On Goddus blessyng and myne!"

The chyld wente yn-to þe halle,

The child
wente into the
hall among
the great
lords.

Among³ þe lordes grete and smalle,

864

That lufsumme⁴ wer' vnþur lyne.

(73)

Then þe lordes þat wer' grete,

They washed
and went
to meat,
and minstrels
brought in
the courses.
The child
serued so
courteously
as to win the
love and
admiration
of all.

Wysh and wente to her mete,

867

Men[s]trelles browȝt yn þe kowrs.

The chyld hem serued so curteysly,

Alle hym loued þat hym sy,

870

And spake hym gret honowres.

Then sayde alle þat loked hym vpon,

So curteys a chylde sawe þey neuur non,

In halle ny yn bowres.

873

¹ R. shalt.

² R. curteys.

³ R. Amonge.

⁴ R. lufsume.

The king
asked his
name, and
he said, "Se-
gramowres."

The kynge sayde to hym yn game,
"Swete sone, what ys þy name?"
"Lorde,"¹ (he seyð) "y hyȝth Seggramowres." 876

(74)

Then the
king sighed,

for this was
his son's
name.

He wept and
was sorrow-
ful;

but still he
"let be,"
as he looked
at the child
and loved
him.

But he asked
the burgesse,
"Is this thy
son?" and
was answer-
ed, "Yes."

Then þat nobulle kyng
Toke vp a grete sykyng,
For hys sone hyghte so ; 879
Certys, wyth-owten lesyng,
The teres out of hys yen gan wryng ;
In herte he was fulle woo. 882
Neuer-þe-lese, he lette be,
And loked on þe chylde so fre,
And mykelle he louede hym þoo. 885
The kyng sayde to þe burgeys a-non,
"Swete syr, ys þys þy sone?"
The burgeys sayde, "ȝoo." 888

(75)

Then the
great lords
washed after
meat before
the spicery.

The child
kneeled,

and served
the king so
well that he
called the
burgess,
and said:
"Give me
that little
boy, and I
will make
him a great
lord."

Then þe lordes þat wer grete,
W(h)esshen a-ȝeyn aftyr mete,
And þen come spycerye. 891
The chyld þat was of chere swete,
On hys kne downe he sete,
And serued hym curteyslye. 894
The kynge called þe burgeys hym tylle,
And sayde, "Syr, yf hyt be þy wylle,
ȝyf me þys lytylle² body!" 897
I shalle hym make lorde of town and towre,
Of hye halles and of bowre,
I loue hym specyally." 900

(76)

When he had
served the
king, he went
and told his
mother what
had hap-
pened.
"When he
shall go to
chamber,
take his hand,
for he is thy
father,

When he had serued þe kyng at wylle,
Fayr he wente hys modyr tylle,
And tellys her how hyt ys. 903
"Soone when he shalle to chambur wende,
Take hys hond at þe grete ende,
For he ys þy fadur, y-wysse ; 906

¹ R. Lord.

² MS., after lytylle, chylde is written and crossed out.

And byd hym come speke wyth Emare,
That changed her name to Egare,
In the lond¹ of Galys!"

909 and bid him
come speak
with Emaré,
who called
herself Egare
in Galys."

The chylde wente a-3eyn to halle,
A-monge þe grete lordes alle,
And serued on ryche a-syse.

912 Then the
child re-
turned to his
serving.

(77)

When þey wer welle at ese, a-fyne,
Bothe of brede, ale and wyne,
They rose vp, more and myn.
When þe kyng shulde to chambur wende,
He toke hys hond at þe grete ende,
And fayre he helpe hym yn;
And sayde, "Syr, yf 3our wyll be,
Take me 3our honde and go wyth me,
For y am of 3owr kynne!
3e shulle come speke wyth Emare,
That chaunged² her nome to Egare,
That berys þe whyte chynne!"

915 When they
were satisfied,

they rose up;

918 and when the
king was
going to his
chamber,
the child led
him in,

921

and gave him
Emaré's
message.

924

(78)

The kyng yn herte was fulle woo,
When he herd mynge þo,
Of her þat was hys qwene;
And sayde, "Sone, why sayst þou so?
Wher-to vmbaydest þou me of my wo?
That may neuer bene!"
Neurpeles wyth hym he wente;
A-3eyn hem come þe lady gent,
In þe robe bryght and shene.
He toke her yn hys armes two,
For joye þey sowened, both to,
Such loue was hem by-twene.

927 The king was
sorrowful
when he
heard of her
who had been
his queen;
but although
he said this
was impos-
sible,

930

933 he went with
the child,
and the lady
came to meet
him in her
bright robe.

936 He took her
in his arms,
and they both
swooned for
joy and love.

(79)

A joyfull metyng was þer þore,
Of þat lady, goodly vnþur gore,
Frely in armes to folde.

939 There was
great

¹ R. lond.

² R. changed.

30 *Emaré's Father decides to pray the Pope to forgive him.*

rejoicing over	Lorde! gladde was Syr Kadore, And oþur lordes þat þer wore, Semely to be-holde,	942
the recovery of the lady that had been put into the sea.	Of þe lady þat wa[s] ¹ put yn þe see, Thorow grace of God in Trinite, þat was keuered of cares colde.	945
[leaf 76, bk.] Now speak we of the emperor,	Leue we at þe lady whyte as flour, And speke we of (her' fadur) þe emperour, That fyrste þys tale of y-tolde.	948

(80)

who was now old,	The emperour her fadyr þen Wa[s] ² woxen an olde man, And þowȝt on hys synne;	951
and remem- bered his sin against his daughter.	Of hys þowȝtyr Emaré, That was putte yn-to þe see, That was so bryght of skynne.	954
He decided to go to the Pope for penance,	He þowȝt[e] that he wolde go, For hys penance to þe Pope þo, And heuen for to wyne.	957
and sent mes- sengers to find him an inn at Rome.	Messengeres he sente forth sone, And þey come to þe kowrt of Rome, To take her lordes inne.	960

(81)

Emaré prayed her	Emaré prayde her lord, ³ þe kyng, "Syr, a-byde þat lordys komyng, That ys so fayr and fre.	963
	And, swete syr, yn alle þyng, A-qweynte ȝou wyth þat lordyng; Hyȝt ys worshyp to þe."	966
lord to ac- quaint him with the emperor.	The kyng of Galys seyde þan, "So grete a lord ys þer non, ȝn alle Crystyante."	969
He agreed, and she bade him ride with his knights to meet that great lord.	"Now, swete syr, what-euȝr be-tyde, A-ȝayn þat grete lord ȝe ryde, And alle þy knyȝtys wyth þe."	972

¹ MS. wat.

² MS. Wax.

³ R. lorde.

(82)

Emare thawȝte her sone ȝynge,	Emaré taught her son that if
A-ȝeyn þe emperour komyng,	
How þat he sholde done :	975
“Swete sone, yn alle þyng,	
Be redy <i>wyth</i> my lord þe kyng,	
And be my swete sone !	978
When þe emperour kysseth þy fadur ¹ so fre,	
Loke ȝyf he wylle kysse the,	the emperor kissed him, he should say, “Come speak with Emaré, that was put into the sea.”
A-bowe þe to hym sone ;	981
And bydde hym come speke <i>wyth</i> Emare,	
That was putte yn-to þe see,	
Hym-self ȝaf þe dome.”	984

(83)

Now kometh þe emperour of pryse ;	Now the king
A-ȝeyn hym rode þe kyng of Galys,	
<i>Wyth</i> fulle mykulle pryde.	987
The chyld was worpy vnþur wede,	
A ² satte vpon a nobylle stede,	and the child with him rode to meet the emperor,
By <i>hys</i> fadyr syde ;	990
And when he mette þe emperour,	
He valed <i>hys</i> hode <i>wyth</i> gret honour,	
And kyssed hym yn þat tyde ;	993 and was kissed by him and other gret lords.
And oþur lordys of gret valowre,	
They also kessed Segramowre ;	
In herte ys not to hyde.	996

(84)

The emperours hert ³ anamerad gretlye,	The emperor greatly loved the child.
Of þe chyld þat rode hym by,	
<i>Wyth</i> so louely chere.	999
Segramowre, he s[t]ayde <i>hys</i> stede,	
<i>Hys</i> owene fadur ⁴ toke good hede,	Segramowre, in the hearing of his father and other lords,
And oþur lordys þat þer were.	1002
The chyld spake to þe emperour,	
And sayde, “Lord, for þyn honour,	bade the emperor
My worde þat þou wylle here :	1005

¹ R. fadyr.

² R. And ; G. A[nd]. See note on this line.

³ R. herte.

⁴ R. fadyr.

32 *Emaré's Father, Husband, and Son rejoice together.*

come speak with his daughter Emaré.	3e shulle come speke wyth Emaré, That changede her name to Egare, That was þy þowȝpur dere."	1008
--	--	------

(85)

The emperor grew pale, and asked why he was reminded of his sorrow;	The <i>emperour</i> wax alle pale, And sayde, "Sone, why <i>vmbra</i> ydest me of bale, And þou may se no bote?"	1011
	"Syr, and 3e wylle go wyth me, I shalle þe brynge wyth þat lady fre, þat ys louesom on to loke."	1014
but was re- assured, and went with the child to meet the lady.	Neur-þe-lesse, wyth hym he wente; A-ȝeyn hym come þat lady gent, Walkynge on her fote.	1017
	And þe <i>emperour</i> a-lyȝte þo, And toke her yn hys armes two, And clypte and kyssed her sote.	1020

(86)

There was a	Ther was a joyfulle metynge Of þe <i>emperour</i> and of þe kynge, And also of Emaré;	1023
joyful re- union,	And so þer was of Syr [S]egramour, That aftyr was <i>emperour</i> ; A fulle gode man was he.	1026
and a grent feast was given.	A grette feste þer was holde, Of erles and barones bolde, As testimonyeth þys story.	1029
This is one of the old lays of Britain.	Thys ys on of Brytayne layes, That was vsed by olde dayes, Men callys "playn þe garye." ¹	1032
Jesus, bring us to Thy per- petual glory.	Iheso, ² þat settes yn þy trone, So graunte vs wyth þe to w[o]ne, ³ In þy perpetualle glorie! Amen. ⁴	1035

Explicit Emaré.

¹ Playn[t] þ' E-garye? See note on the line.

² R. Jhesu. ³ MS. wene.

⁴ R. omits Amen and Explicit Emaré.

NOTES.

1/1-12. THE longest introductory prayer in any English romance. The Thornton *Morte Arthure* comes next with 11 lines. The explanation (13-18) seems to be unique.

1/3. Probably *pat* should be omitted as Gough (G.) suggests (*On the Middle English Metrical Romance of Emaré*, Kiel, 1900, p. 37). Cf. *Duke Rowlande and Sir Ottuell of Spayne* (*Eng. Charl. Rom.*, Part II): "God," he said, "*pat alle schaff dighle & dele*" (490); "*—godde pat diede on rode pat atte schaff deme & dighle*" (1268-69); "*I vowe to god pou schaff a-bye, pat atte schaffe deme & dele*" (1316-17). The three attributes alluded to are the powers of governing, apportioning, and judging. In l. 42, Arthur has the power to apportion gifts and govern; in l. 826, these terms are applied to alms-giving.

1/6. On the genitive without ending, cf. G. (*Dissertation*, p. 7). It is impossible to say whether this usage is due to minstrel or scribe.

1/7. Probably *þy* should be omitted (G., following Holthausen, *Dissertation*, p. 37).

1/9. One of the numerous conventionalisms in which the romances, especially those written in the tail-rhyme stanzas, abound. About 140 lines of *Emaré* are found elsewhere, often identical, sometimes with slight changes. The number of romances in which the same expression occurs (often more than once in several) is sometimes nearly 20, and rarely less than 5. I have collected repetitions, to the extent of many hundreds, of conventional phrases in the text; but as limited space will not admit the complete list, I quote them only when they have some peculiar interest. Collections may be found in editions of various romances by Kölbing, Zupitza, Zielke and others. A detailed study of this subject might throw light on the relationships of various members of the different "schools" of romance-makers, which I believe existed in mediæval England.

1/14. *every a*. Originally, doubtless, *ylke a*. Cf. ll. 114, 166.

1/16-17. *sholde—speke*. Here as elsewhere G. emends to avoid hiatus; but I am not sure how far this offended the minstrel's ear. I have noticed 36 cases of its occurrence, and 13 others which are doubtful. In ll. 16, 17, 275, 302, 437, 611, 743, it is avoided by adding an *-n*, thus giving the poem a more pronouncedly Midland character; in ll. 41, 65, 380, 725 (identical), 35, 113, 481, 581, 666, 740, 914 it occurs in connection with a pause in the sense, and was therefore perhaps not felt; in 18 other cases, noted under the different lines, it may be avoided by some slight change or addition. But the popular character of these *rime coude* romances leads me to think that all such improvements, unless warranted by other MSS., are too arbitrary to be of much use.

2/25-27. The title *emperour* suggests the seven versions in which the father is the head of the Holy Roman Empire; but the name

4/113. *asowr*. Cf. *N. E. D.* for quotations. The colour seems to have been greatly beloved in the Middle Ages.

4/116. G. clōth[e].

4/118. Cf. *Sir Guwayne*, l. 613: "As mony burde þer-aboutē had ben seuē wynter in tounē."

5/122. G. [Dāme] Idoynē. Perhaps Ydoynē? But the word is a dissyllable in *Cursor Mundi* (20) and Gower's *Confessio Amantis* (VI, 879), where the romance is mentioned; also in *Sir Degrevant* (1477-78), where the tale is said to have been represented on the tapestry of a bed. The story seems to have originated in England in the 12th century (*An English Miscellany*, Oxford, 1901, p. 386 ff.); but the English romance *Sir Amaḡas* (*Amadace*) borrows nothing but the hero's name from the French.

5/125. *trewe-loue flour*. Herb Paris (*Paris Quadrifolia*), similar to trillium. The setting of its four leaves was supposed to resemble a true-love knot. Cf. *Sir Degrevant* (1032, 1039, 1484); the *Auntys off Arthure* (354, 510); *Sir Guwayne* (612); *Rauf Coilyear* (473). Here the flower seems to have been used to help the love-charm in the magic robe.

5/127. *carbunkulle*. Supposed to shine with a red light in darkness. *saferē*. Good for the general health, especially diseases of the eyes, head and tongue, a safe-guard against poverty, prison, and the machinations of enemies (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

5/128. *Kassydonys*. Its qualities are given vaguely as contributing to health and prosperity. Cf. *casydoynes* (*Cleanness*, 1471), *calcydoynē* (*Pearl*, 1002); also *calcidoyne*, *Wars of Alexander* (5274). *onyx*. An evil stone which brings bad dreams and strife (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

5/130. *Deamondes*. Especially prized for the working of enchantment and against enchantment by others (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

5/132. *And*. Possibly repeated from l. 131. Qy. Sing? Cf. note on l. 151 below.

5/134. *Trystram and Isowde*. From the 12th century on, one of the most influential of romances. Here the forms of the names seem to be English (cf. *Cursor Mundi*, 17).

5/136. G. [a-]ryght.

5/137-44. These lines, almost identical with 89-96, may have been copied twice by mistake; but the detail suits the context here better than in stanza 8, hence, I judge that they may have been used there in place of lost matter giving more account of Tergaunte.

5/146. This romance, arising in the 12th century, was almost as popular as the two preceding; and like them was early known in England, even if it did not actually originate there.

5/151. *knyztus and senatowres*. Possibly here as in l. 131 the pattern suddenly intrudes upon the materials; but names of stones are expected. If the poem was at any time taken down from hearing, the line might have been corrupted from "Ther wer onyx and centaureus," which would rhyme correctly with *vertues*. My authority for *centaureus* is Heinrich von Neustadt (quoted by Smith, *Shakespeare's Pericles and Apollonius of Tyre*, Philadelphia, 1898, pp. 75-76); the nearest that Pannier gives is *ceraunus*. The plant, *centaurus*, was well known.

5/152. The "vertues" of emeralds were supposed to foretell the

future, cure tertian fever, bring wealth, protect in battle, storm and lightning, cool the passions, strengthen the sight, give eloquence, etc.

6/154. *Koralle*. Protects against storm and lightning, increases crops, and chases devils.

6/155. *Perydotes*. Supposed to be a protection at night against devils and bad dreams. *crystalle*. Valued for its use in lighting fire, and supposed to increase nurses' milk. (Fannier, *op. cit.*)

6/156. *garnettes*. See *N. E. D.* for origin and quotations of this word. Not mentioned by the French lapidaries.

6/157. *oon*. G. was [þēr] ðōn. Cf. *Dissertation*, p. 41, note on l. 157, for this use of *one*. But perhaps we should read *don*. Cf. *made* (121) and *dyght* (133).

6/158 ff. The "sowdan" of Babylon was a familiar figure in English romances of the 14th century. Cf. especially the two redactions of *Fierabras*, known as *Sir Ferumbras* and the *Sowdone of Babylone*; also, the southern *Octavian*, in which he is said to have conquered "Gales and Spayne" among other lands (907 ff.); in the northern *Octavian* also, the "sowdan" is presumably of Babylon. The allusion is not, of course, to the city of that name, but vaguely to the Orient, according to Graf (*op. cit.* 4. 552), to the sovereigns Ajubidi of Egypt and Syria (cf. *Archivio . . . di Storia Patria*, IV, 552). Undoubtedly the passage alludes to some romance, perhaps of the *Guillaume d'Orange* cycle, influenced by the Crusades. In *Foulque de Candie* (by Herbert le Duc, *circ.* 1170) the hero loves a Saracen princess who gives him a sleeve embroidered with gems, and also conquers the Sultan of Babylon. The poem called *Tancrē* I have not been able to find. Again, Richard Cœur de Lion (in the English romance) fights with Saladin at Babylon and there wins much treasure.

6/162. *testymoyeth*. "Si con l'escriture tesmoigne" (*La Mule sans Frein*, 885), "Si'com tiesmogne li escriis" (Mouskes, 18695), and elsewhere. The line is almost certainly translated, as is l. 1029. The verb, which I have not seen elsewhere, looks like a hybrid of *testifies* and *tesmoigner*, or else is formed from the noun *testimony*. *Sir Gowther* (309) doubtless translates the same expression: "þo testamentys þus þei sey."

6/163-64. A maiden was supposed to be able to tame the unicorn. The two are represented, also with flowers and birds, on a 15th century tapestry in the Musée de Cluny at Paris.

6/168. On the extensive use of "ymagerye" in Sicilian work, cf. *Introduction*, p. xxxi, with n. 1. Romances, legends of saints, historic characters were attempted.

6/170. *sone*. Qy. *sone* or *soen*? Cf. ll. 158, 173.

6/175. G. grē[e] loue.

6/176. *in specyalle*. Perhaps, as in Barbour's *Bruce* (VII, 246), the sense is, in special liking or partiality.

6/181-82. I see no reason for the optative here. Perhaps we should read *þar* or *þor(e)* and *wor(e)* (also in 721-22) as in 832-33, this last being singular=was, as it is still used in Mid-Yorkshire to-day.

6/182. G. lóng[e]. Cf. ll. 355, 364, 718. This causes hiatus.

6/184. G. wolde [hōm hym] wéndē.

6/185. léue át. Hiatus.

7/187-88. *Kyng* evidently refers to Tergaunte, and l. 188 has been corrupted by introducing the word *emperour* to show the change of

4/113. *asowr*. Cf. *N. E. D.* for quotations. The colour seems to have been greatly beloved in the Middle Ages.

4/116. G. clōth[e].

4/118. Cf. *Sir Gawayne*, l. 613: "As mony burde þer-aboutē had ben seuē wynter in tounē."

5/122. G. [Dāme] Idoynē. Perhaps Ydoynē? But the word is a dissyllable in *Cursor Mundi* (20) and Gower's *Confessio Amantis* (VI, 879), where the romance is mentioned; also in *Sir Degrevant* (1477-78), where the tale is said to have been represented on the tapestry of a bed. The story seems to have originated in England in the 12th century (*An English Miscellany*, Oxford, 1901, p. 386 ff.); but the English romance *Sir Amadas* (*Amadace*) borrows nothing but the hero's name from the French.

5/125. *trewe-love flour*. Herb Paris (Paris Quadrifolia), similar to trillium. The setting of its four leaves was supposed to resemble a true-love knot. Cf. *Sir Degrevant* (1032, 1039, 1484); the *Awentyrs off Arthure* (354, 510); *Sir Gawayne* (612); *Rauf Coilyear* (473). Here the flower seems to have been used to help the love-charm in the magic robe.

5/127. *carbunkulle*. Supposed to shine with a red light in darkness. *safere*. Good for the general health, especially diseases of the eyes, head and tongue, a safe-guard against poverty, prison, and the machinations of enemies (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

5/128. *Kassydoyns*. Its qualities are given vaguely as contributing to health and prosperity. Cf. *casydoynes* (*Cleanness*, 1471), *calcydoynne* (*Pearl*, 1002); also *calcidoynes*, *Wars of Alexander* (5274). *onyx*. An evil stone which brings bad dreams and strife (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

5/130. *Deamondes*. Especially prized for the working of enchantment and against enchantment by others (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

5/132. *And*. Possibly repeated from l. 131. Qy. Sing? Cf. note on l. 151 below.

5/134. *Trystram and Isowde*. From the 12th century on, one of the most influential of romances. Here the forms of the names seem to be English (cf. *Cursor Mundi*, 17).

5/136. G. [a-]ryght.

5/137-44. These lines, almost identical with 89-96, may have been copied twice by mistake; but the detail suits the context here better than in stanza 8, hence, I judge that they may have been used there in place of lost matter giving more account of Tergaunte.

5/146. This romance, arising in the 12th century, was almost as popular as the two preceding; and like them was early known in England, even if it did not actually originate there.

5/151. *knyztus and senatowres*. Possibly here as in l. 131 the pattern suddenly intrudes upon the materials; but names of stones are expected. If the poem was at any time taken down from hearing, the line might have been corrupted from "Ther wer onyx and centaureus," which would rhyme correctly with *vertues*. My authority for *centaureus* is Heinrich von Neustadt (quoted by Smith, *Shakespeare's Pericles and Apollonius of Tyre*, Philadelphia, 1898, pp. 75-76); the nearest that Pannier gives is *ceraunus*. The plant, *centaurus*, was well known.

5/152. The "vertues" of emeralds were supposed to foretell the

future, cure tertian fever, bring wealth, protect in battle, storm and lightning, cool the passions, strengthen the sight, give eloquence, etc.

6/154. *Koralle*. Protects against storm and lightning, increases crops, and chases devils.

6/155. *Perydotes*. Supposed to be a protection at night against devils and bad dreams. *crystalle*. Valued for its use in lighting fire, and supposed to increase nurses' milk. (Fannier, *op. cit.*)

6/156. *garnettes*. See *N. E. D.* for origin and quotations of this word. Not mentioned by the French lapidaries.

6/157. *oon*. G. was [þēr] ðōn. Cf. *Dissertation*, p. 41, note on l. 157, for this use of *one*. But perhaps we should read *don*. Cf. *made* (121) and *dyght* (133).

6/158 ff. The "sowdan" of Babylon was a familiar figure in English romances of the 14th century. Cf. especially the two redactions of *Fierabras*, known as *Sir Ferumbras* and the *Sowdone of Babylone*; also, the southern *Octavian*, in which he is said to have conquered "Gales and Spayne" among other lands (907 ff.); in the northern *Octavian* also, the "sowdan" is presumably of Babylon. The allusion is not, of course, to the city of that name, but vaguely to the Orient, according to Graf (*op. cit.* 4, 552), to the sovereigns Ajubidi of Egypt and Syria (cf. *Archivio . . . di Storia Patria*, IV, 552). Undoubtedly the passage alludes to some romance, perhaps of the *Guillaume d'Orange* cycle, influenced by the Crusades. In *Fouilque de Candie* (by Herbert le Duc, *circa* 1170) the hero loves a Saracen princess who gives him a sleeve embroidered with gems, and also conquers the Sultan of Babylon. The poem called *Tancre* I have not been able to find. Again, Richard Cœur de Lion (in the English romance) fights with Saladin at Babylon and there wins much treasure.

6/162. *testymoyeth*. "Si con l'escriture tesmoigne" (*La Mule sans Frein*, 885), "Si'com tiesmogne li escriis" (Mouskes, 18695), and elsewhere. The line is almost certainly translated, as is l. 1029. The verb, which I have not seen elsewhere, looks like a hybrid of *testifies* and *testmoigner*, or else is formed from the noun *testimony*. *Sir Gowther* (309) doubtless translates the same expression: "þo testamentys þus þei sey."

6/163-64. A maiden was supposed to be able to tame the unicorn. The two are represented, also with flowers and birds, on a 15th century tapestry in the Musée de Cluny at Paris.

6/168. On the extensive use of "ymagerye" in Sicilian work, cf. *Introduction*, p. xxxi, with n. 1. Romances, legends of saints, historic characters were attempted.

6/170. *sone*. Qy. *sone* or *soon*? Cf. ll. 158, 173.

6/175. G. *grē!*[e] louē.

6/176. *in specyalte*. Perhaps, as in Barbour's *Bruce* (VII, 246), the sense is, in special liking or partiality.

6/181-82. I see no reason for the optative here. Perhaps we should read *þar* or *þor(e)* and *wor(e)* (also in 721-22) as in 832-33, this last being singular = was, as it is still used in Mid-Yorkshire to-day.

6/182. G. *lóng*[e]. Cf. ll. 355, 364, 718. This causes hiatus.

6/184. G. wolde [hōm hym] wénde.

6/185. *léue* át. Hiatus.

7/187-88. *Kyng* evidently refers to Tergaunte, and l. 188 has been corrupted by introducing the word *emperour* to show the change of

subject. This breaking of the thought between the seventh and eighth lines may be a sign that the robe passage (78-187) has been foisted in from another source. This may have been a longer version of the same story (*Mai* describes an azure samite, set with gold and precious stones, and a magic robe appears in many versions and kindred folk-tales). The character of the passage bears out this hypothesis: it is altogether out of scale for a lay, but can be paralleled by many descriptive passages in romances, French and English, particularly the former; it contains more than a tenth part of the poem, but is mechanical and full of repetitions, as if the author had remembered but imperfectly, and so was thrown upon his own invention, which was not great (cf. the robe passage in *Erec et Enide* (6735-809), which is on a similar plan and scale).

7/195. G. forth [þan].

7/200. G. gō[e]th. But *goth* is a common spelling in the N.E. Midlands, though here it makes the line short.

7/201. *chare*. This vehicle is mentioned frequently and much earlier than the quotations given in *N.E.D.* (cf. *Kyng of Tars*, 339, 354, and for a long description of a hunting-chare, *Squire of Low Degree*, 739 ff.).

7/210. Liȝte óf. Hiatus.

7/211. Qy. both [vp-]on?

7/211-12. Probably *fōte*—*swōte* (cf. 1017, 1020), as G. suggests; otherwise, we have seven successive e-rhymes.

8/223-24. G. paraphrases, according to *Amis*, 571-2, but this is unnecessary. In *Sir Degarre* (Auchinleck MS. 827-28) we find:

"That all his herte and his thout,
Hire to loue was i-browt."

8/226. *an-amored*. The word seems rare until much later. *N.E.D.* quotes Robert of Brunne (8170) and Chaucer (*L. G. W.*, 1606).

8/229. *metewhyle*. I have not found this word elsewhere; but *Morte Arthure* gives *mette-while* (3903) = measured, i. e. little while; and also *mette* = *mete* (2491).

8/239. *Popus Bullus*. Cf. *Porculus Pystolus* and *Parabolus of Solomon* (*Degrevant*, 1438-39). Possibly, attempts at Latinization without knowledge of the language, perhaps to give a learned effect, but more probably to be regarded only as W. Midland endings.

Here the Pope's assent is taken for granted; elsewhere, he is bribed by help against the Saracens, and then consents only because it is revealed to him in a vision that no harm shall come.

8/244. "And whén vpón her hýt was dón," improves the rhythm.

8/245-46. She seemed untainted by earth, that is, supernatural in her beauty. Cf. G. (*Dissertation*, 37-39) on a possible mythological significance for the robe.

8/251. G. omits *syr*.

9/261. G. ȝōū [ay], but ȝou [now] would be more to the point.

9/264. *þhorne*. An indication that þ was little more than d or t for the scribe. In other cases: s(h)uch (702), she s(he)wed (730), w(h)esshen (890), the proximity of an h may have led to its repetition.

9/265. Qy. right[e] (adverb)?

9/266. G. [myʒtʃ] ðthe. But cf. *Degrevant* (193-94):

"Than the eorl wax worth (= wroth)
And swore many a gret owth."

grete is probably right, notwithstanding the hiatus.

9/270. G. [ryche], to avoid repetition of *nobulle* (268). Cf. ll. 590, 644.

9/271-72. *drynke*. Cf. *Amis and Amiloun*. drink (2191) rhyming with leaing (2192), with leaing-ping-king (1587-90-93-96), with ping (1666-67), with ping-zing-wepeing (1707-10-13-16). For dryng = drink, cf. *ibid.*, ed. Kölbing, p. xxi; for thing = think (seem), and thinke = thing (object) cf. Robson, *Three Metrical Romances*, index.

9/273. *shate*. Cf. *Ayenbite of Inwit*, ssat (45). The form is rare but a correct development of O.E. *scēat*.

9/275. G. Wyth-ðwte[n].

9/278. G. [fer] frō. Cf. ll. 349, 353 suggest that *boot* was long enough to stand for a metrical unit itself; l. 674 contains an inorganic -e.

9/280. Qy. hym [vm] be-þowght? Cf. *Isumbras*, l. 426, *Eglamour*, l. 73, *Towneley Plays*, 5/123, *Ywaine*, l. 1583, *Alexius* (598).

9/281. *hadde alle*. Hiatus. Qy. *hadde* [hyt]?

10/287. G. And tōkē [hym] up [full] hāstylȳ. The line scans, as it is, though anapæstic.

10/295. G. aʒeyn[es]. Qy. *a-ʒeijn*, or *wrowghte*, with hiatus? The former reads better.

10/298. *lasshed*. In this sense the word seems peculiarly Northern. Cf. *York Plays* (xxx, 10, xlv, 37), *Cleanness* (707), *Morte Arthure* (2801, 1459), *Destruction of Troy* (6789). In Jamison, the word has similar meanings, and, according to the quotation, also in the *Mid-Yorks. Glossary*, although Clough Robinson makes a special application of it.

10/307. G. They sowȝt her, etc.

11/326. Practically the same time as in *La Manekine*, where the heroine drifted from Hungary to Berwick (eight days, l. 1168), and from Berwick to Rome (twelve days, 4761). According to Trivet, she was first three, and then five years at sea (*Originals and Analogues*, pp. 13, 39).

11/329. *ʒarked ʒore*. The idea here is probably *ordained*. The word *ʒarked* occurs repeatedly in *Cleanness* (652, 758, 1708), *Wars of Alexander* (114, 2449, 4894), in *Destruction of Troy* (414, 5595, 10738, 11265, etc.), sometimes from O.E. *gearcian* = to prepare, sometimes from a word akin to the modern *jerk*, meaning, to rain upon, as blows.

11/335. G. thurstē and hunger, which reads much better. The phrase is repeated in l. 683.

11/338. *Galys*. G. (*Dissertation*, 31-32) sums up the evidence for Wales and Galicia. This form occurs, alike for each country, with the accent on either syllable. The attempt to connect the poem with the Arthur cycle suggests that the French author intended Wales, while the English minstrel may have translated Galicia, through the popularity of St. James of Compostella, to whom there are many allusions in 14th century literature. But for an additional reason favouring Galicia, see note on l. 481 ff.

11/342. *Kadore*. Cadwr, Cadeir, son of Geraint map Erbin, mentioned in a triad, was Arthur's sword-bearer (*Romania*, xxx, 11-13).

Mouskes (21009 ff.) mentions an historic Kados (= Cadoc, also Kadore), Seigneur of Gaillon (in Normandy, but suggestive of Gaille = Galles = Gaule), who was prominent at the battle of Bouvines (1212), and may have suggested the introduction of this name into the *lai*.

11/348. *le*. Perhaps *shore* as in *Destruction of Troy* (2806).

12/349 ff. Cf. G. (*Emaré*, p. 36, note on 349 seq.) for an interesting emendation of this stanza; but the participle in *and* is not warranted. Cf. on l. 793 below.

12/352. went[e] forth [vp]-lon? G. went forth [up]-lon.

12/360. Only in *La Manekine* is the change of name emphasized as here. There also the two names *Joie* and *Manekine* have meanings. This idea is carried further in *Emaré*. In the concealment of origin, the influence of the Swan-maiden stories appears, in the opening that it affords for a false accusation.

12/363. Qy. hom[e] or (G.) hōm [hē]? Cf. l. 708.

12/365. Cf. *Havelok*, ll. 1022, 1821, 1843, 1882 for this use of the word. I have not found the simile elsewhere.

12/371. G. myȝht[en]. Qy. myȝt[e]?

13/387. *Wyth* = in company with, or in honour of?

13/391 ff. That this detail was in the original is suggested by *La Filla de l'Emperadar Contasti* (*Romania*, xxx, 528):

"E lo rey . . . menga molt volenter, e la donzella lo servi molt cortesament al mils que ella poch, e lo rey se pres molt esment del gran servey que la donzella feya e de la sua bellesa e de les sucs fayssens qui eran tant plagents e tan humils."

13/392. *kurtulle*. Evidently both this and the surcoat were made of the magic cloth. The allusion to the child's kirtle (848) seems to be a reflection of this passage.

13/397. G. kyng [hē].

13/398. So fáyr a ládý he sýz neuur nóni, or, So fáyr a ládý he sýz neuur nóni, or, So fáyr a ládý he sýz néuur nóni?

14/415. Cf. G. (*Dissertation*, p. 43). The phrase is too common in 14th and 15th century works to need special quotation. The stuff was evidently fashionable. Cf. note on l. 430.

14/422 f. This applies more nearly to *La Comtesse d'Anjou*, in which the steward (constable) did send for the heroine to teach his children (not "courtesy" but needlework). Why Kadore makes up this story, I fail to see.

14/428. *be*. Optative, perhaps to qualify the very strong statement.

14/430. Probably, as also 451, corrupted from 415. Ray = rei, king, and "ryche ray" = *riche rei*, occur commonly in earlier works, as *Sir Perceval of Galles*, the *Aventyrs off Arthure*, and others; also ray is found in the *Towneley Plays*, *Wars of Alexander*, etc., but roy in the *Morte Arthure*, *Torrent of Portyngale*, etc.

14/433. G. [full] verament. But *verament* is usually unmodified. The line is short, unless *kyng* was written with an inorganic -e, or the pause represented a syllable.

14/434. Aftyr hýs modýr he sént, or, módýr he sént?

14/436. G. browȝt[e] forth [full] hāstels.

14/439. G. The clōth [up-]on, etc.

14/440. G. [y-]dyght. Cf. l. 395.

14/441. *And* is perhaps superfluous; the line is seemingly appositive with *she*, perhaps with *being* understood.

14/443. G. I sawe neuer [anȳ] wommon. The implication was that she was a fairy. Cf. *Mai*, col. 60, ll. 5-7.

15/458 ff. Usually the feast is described at length (notably in *La Manekine*, ll. 2153-2361). Cf. also other romances, *Squire Low Deg.*, 313-26, *Morte Arthure*, 176-238, *Rauf Coilyear*, 183-221. The brevity here shows how out of proportion is the passage concerning the robe.

15/461. G. Dūke [and]. But the line is conventional as it stands. Possibly the -e was silent and the pause filled the foot. Cf. *La Manekine*, 2365 ff.:

"Li rois est demourés arrier,
Et avoeques li sa moillier.
Tant s'entraiment andui de cuér," etc.

15/472. G. Moch[e].

15/479. G. (note on l. 479), following Morsbach, Conceyued[e]. From parallel cases, I should read *Conceijued*.

16/481 ff. The King of France may be Charlemagne, and the allusion to his wars in Spain (cf. note on l. 158 ff.), but I think not. I have given reasons in the *Introduction* for holding that the French lay arose in the first half of the 13th century. In 1212 occurred the last great Saracenic attempt upon Europe. The King of Castile, hard pressed by the Moors, sent abroad for help, especially to France, in that his daughter Blanche had married Louis VIII. At the battle of Tolosa the Moors were utterly routed, and all Christendom rejoiced. Such an event must have influenced poetic imaginations long after, perhaps the more so because at this very period Carolingian traditions (which deal so largely with Saracenic wars) were deliberately fostered (Petite Dutailis, *Louis VIII*, Paris, 1894, 12-14). After some time, the King of France would naturally become the chief personage (perhaps through reflection from Charlemagne), and Galicia might replace Castile as being more familiar. A degree of support is given to this hypothesis by the facts that in *La Filla de l'Emperador Contasti*, the husband is King of Castile; and in *Mai*, the king's uncle is King of Castile and oppressed by Saracens (col. 99 ff.).

16/484. [He] sente? Ll. 483-84-85 all begin with *And*. G. After þe kyng sente of Galȳs.

16/494. G. sent[e].

16/495. Cf. note on l. 461.

16/496. G. st[e]ward [hē]. But perhaps *st[e]ward* alone would suffice, *w* being vocalic, as in *Havelok*, 281, 453, 1144, etc.; *Pearl*, 821, 830, 942, and elsewhere.

16/499. G. yn [þylke] plāce. If *yn place* can bear the meaning "as it was her place to do," the short line must be emended differently, perhaps *wente* [þan].

16/503. A fáyr chýld borne and a gódelé.

16/504. *Kyngus marke*. In *Havelok* (604, 2139-47) the hero had on his right shoulder a cross which shone like a carbuncle at night. In *La Filla del Rey di Dacia*: "una rosetta la quale egli avea nella gola, che nacque con essa" (Wesselofsky, p. 32). Here, a double

crown? In several versions, the union of the two kingdoms, France and England, by this marriage is emphasized (notably, *Yst*, *Faz*).

16/505. "They crystened hýt," reads better.

16/506. G. And hym called, etc.

16/511. G yn [grēt] hȳȳnge. From the repetition of *hȳt* in three successive lines, I judge that l. 511 may have read: "He wrouȳte [þe lettur]," etc.

17/523. G. hym ȳaf. Qy. ȳaf [to], or ȳaf[e]?

17/524. The same sum paid in *La Manekine* (*quarante sols*, 3060). Read fowrtȳ? Cf. note on l. 496.

17/532. G. letter [þan].

17/538. G. "Heddes thrē hē hadde thēre."

17/539. The most monstrous creation in any version. In *La Manekine*, it had four feet and was hideous to look upon.

17/540. *feltred*. This occurs in *Cleanness* (224), *Morte Arthure* (1078), *Sir Gowther* (74, 748), *Towneley Plays* (377/318, 102/65), and in *Mid-Yorks. Glossary* to-day, meaning clotted.

18/554. G. kyng [full], and omits *full* from l. 555.

18/557. G. That euer ȳ man [y-]bōr[e]n was. Qy. That éuur mán y bōr[e]n wás?

18/572. G. "Her tō serue[n] at her wyllē."

18/575. The messenger's journey was entirely by land, and according to Trivet, "der Böheler" and others, the old queen's castle seems to have been mid-way in a two-days' journey. This geography is reasonable only in the case of Trivet, as "der Böheler" places the court at London.

19/582. G. þat rafte hym, etc.

19/585. G. In fȳre.

19/588. *towne*. A word often on the lips of minstrels of the marketplace.

19/598-99. "The méssengér || knéwē no gýle,
But ródē hóm || mónȳ a mýle."

19/606. *de[l]fulle*. Warranted by *Cursor Mundi* (MS. Fairfax, 768), *Sir Gauwayne* (560), *Roberd of Cysyle* (Utterson, p. 14), *Cleanness* (400), etc.; but *Cath. Anglic.* gives also *drefulle* = *terribilis*.

19/607. *stode yn*. Hiatus. G. stōde yn [hys].

19/608. *swonyng*. Probably *sowenȳng*, cf. l. 284.

20/616. G. [þēr] bē.

20/625. G. [þan] sayde.

20/628. Loke [þat], etc.?

20/632. He is ashamed on me, a simple lady, is the construction.

20/635. So in *Dacia* (pp. 18-19): "ella non puote quasi essere più gentile donna ch'ella èe, nè meglio nata."

20/639. *hondȳe*. The scribe wrote the abbreviation of what was perhaps to him the more familiar plural.

21/652-54. This description of costume seems peculiar to *Emaré*. It suggests a time when short surcoats were the fashion, but long surcoats were still remembered. From its explanatory character, I judge that it may have been an addition by the English minstrel.

21/655. G. a-fēr[e]dē. Also in l. 698.

21/657. G. chýlde [un]tō.

21/660. Cf. Būh (3047). "Das das schiff nam manigen stosz."

21/661. G. chýld [by-]gan. Cf. l. 727.

21/661 ff. Curiously enough, Gower's version is the only other in which this detail occurs. Cf. ll. 1078-81:

"And tho sche tok hire child in honde
And yaf it sowke, and evere among
Sche wepte, and otherwhile song
To rocke with hire child aslepe."

But it is probable, in the absence of other close correspondences, that the two descriptions are independent of each other.

21/669. The emendation on *grōwf* is admissible as far as rhymes go (cf. 219-222-225-228); but seems unnecessary. The form growth may be the *gruzt* of *Cleanness* (810) from *grucchen* (= usually *complain* but there *accost*). But in Mid-Yorks. to-day there is a preterite *gruot*, of which in this MS. *growht* may be a corruption.

22/685-87. In the versions in which the second flight is to Rome, the rescuer is often a senator, sometimes the Pope or a cardinal. In *La Belle Hélène* he is called Joseran, a name which might have been corrupted to Iurdan; but the exile whom he and his wife receive is the princess Plaisance, whose sufferings form a parallel to those of the heroine. According to Enikel and Būheler, as in *Emaré*, he is a burgess.

22/688-89. Cf. 343-44. G. Equeṛy [mornyng].

22/691. G. þ[y]lke.

22/692. G. [wāter-]sýdē. Possibly [Tiber] as this river is mentioned in *Mai*, *Enikel* and *La Manekine*—all fairly closely related to *Emaré*.

22/694. Does *by þe brymme* mean by the shore, or by the sea? In the sense of torrent, flood, it occurs in *Sir Gawayne* (2172), *Cleanness* (365), *Wars of Alexander* (4080), seemingly in a Northern usage. This passage is uncertain, but ll. 352-53 suggest that the boat was *on* the shore, therefore *by* the sea. But the other interpretation is usually given.

22/697. G. The clōth [up-]on.

22/700. G. [a-]ryght. Or, þouȝt[e]?

22/704. "Lórd," she sayde, "y hette Égarye."

23/715. G. What þat [euer]. Or, Whát [so] þát she wýlle cráue?

23/716. G. hyt wyll[e].

23/722. G. mēte[s]. But cf. 7/218, 13/401, and note on l. 181 above.

23/723. Cf. *La Manekine* (6403): "Tout a son vouloir a esté."

23/727. G. [Segramōūr] by-gan, both for the rhythm and to avoid repetition of *child*.

23/731. G. nor[i]tōwre = curtesye and thewe, l. 38.

23/732. So in *Mai*, she had not laughed in eight years; and in *La Manekine* (6267-72):

"Mais onques une fois n'i rist,
Ne un mot de canchon n'i dist,
Ne ne vesti dras de couleur.
Tousjors en dolour u en pleur
Ou en grieté ou en pensee
Est toute sa vie tornee."

23/733-38. Cf. *Sir Degarre* (273-74):

"Bi that hit was ten ȝer old,
Hit was a fair child, and a bold."

23/737. So *Mai* (col. 196, ll. 25-26):

"dô wart er sô kurtis
daȝ er an lobe behielt den prîs,"

and ll. 21-22: "man lêrte in ze allen zîten
diu ors schône rîten."

24/742. *cler of vyce*. Perhaps taken directly from the Fr. *à cler vis*. The word *vyce* for face is uncommon, but occurs as *vyse* in *Pearl* (254), *vys* in *Richard Cœur de Lion* (3187, 3406).

24/754. G. [of] *aventowres*.

24/757. G. *kyng* [hē]. Or, [Then] *sayde* the *kýng*?

24/764-68. A singular disregard of the usage of *thou* and *ye*. Cf. also ll. 965-66, 971-72, 1005-8.

24/769. G. The *kyng* þe letter *tôke* *tô rêde*.

24/773. Usually, "Allas!" he seide, "that I was boren!" (*Degarre*, 83; similarly, *Havelok*, *Robert of Cysyle*, and others.) G. *euer* [on *érpe*] born *ȝ* was. "That *ȝ* *eúur* bór[e]n wás" introduces less change. Cf. note on l. 557.

25/776. G. *Thys* letter *neuer* *cômę* *frô mē*.

25/779. The sense is: but for God's will, i. e. I must bow to God's will.

25/780. So likewise in *La Manekine* (4259-60).

25/782. And *tôke* þe *kýng* vp *hástylý*.

25/784. G. *bôth*[e].

25/793. G. [sô *ġent*]; but this rhyme with *nd* does not occur in *Emaré*. Qy. þe *kyng*e [so or full *kende*]? Cf. *Sege of Melayne* (1437): "pat wele for *kene* are *kende*." In the sense of known, renowned, the word is not uncommon, especially in the North. *Kende* for *kynde* = race, family, also occurs, and the line may have read: þen *sayde* þe *kyng*e of noble or *ryche* *kende*. It is tempting to suggest: "Alas," þen *sayde* þe *kyng*e *sykende*." Then, when the participle became *sykyng*e, it might easily have been lost through the repetition of the syllable *kyng*e. Cf. note on l. 877, below.

25/797. G. omits *any*.

25/799 ff. The remission of punishment is peculiar to *Emaré*. In *La Manekine* and *Enikel's* chronicle she is immured; in *Mai* and in *Trivet's Constance*, killed with a sword; in the other chief versions, burned.

25/805. When *shé* was *fléd* *ouur* þe (see) *fôme*?

26/815. So *Mai* (col. 197, l. 24) "nieman kunde im trôst gegeben."

26/819 ff. for his sake. He could not possibly blame himself. The penance is usually, as in *Mai*, *Trivet*, and elsewhere, for killing his mother.

26/824. *wordes*. Not uncommon for *worldes*. *Prompt. Parv.* has *wordely* = *mundanus*; *word* occurs in the York Plays, in *Havelok*, in *Wars of Alex.*, *Auntys off Arthure*, *Sir Gowther*, and elsewhere.

26/832-34. These details are closely paralleled in *Mai* (col. 203, ll. 35-39).

26/833. G. *lust[es]*. But *wore* may be singular. Cf. note on ll. 181-82.

26/835. G. *salt[e]*.

27/841 ff. Here Trivet approaches *Emaré* most closely. Cf. "Cist estoit apris priuement de sa mere Constance, qe, quant il irreit a la feste . . . que, totes autres choses lessetz, se meit de-uant le Roi dengleterre, quant il fust assis a manger, pur li seruier; Et que de nule part se renuat hors del regard al Roi, e qe il se afforsat bien & curteisement lui seruir." The heroine's instructions, as far as they go, agree with the *Babees Book* (ed. Furnivall, 1868), much of which was written at about this time.

27/842. G. to here [tð] come. But "to hérë côme" is possible.

27/847. G. *shal[t]*, and *shalle* may have come by anticipation of *halle*; but it occurs for the second person in the *Sege of Melayme*. Cf. quotation in note on 1/3.

27/850. *Lókë, sône*, so *curtáys pou bé*. Or, *Lóke, sône*, two monosyllabic feet with a pause between them.

27/852. Cf. 3/75.

27/856. G. [y-]dōnɛ.

27/864. The only meaning that I can get out of this archaic phrase "lovable or amiable under linen" is that the wearing of linen, instead of the peasants' wool, was once associated with the idea of good manners because only gentlemen could afford linen. The phrase seems to occur chiefly in Northern texts. It is equivalent to "goodly under gore" and "seemly under sark."

27/867. *kours*. Plural in idea.

27/871. Then *sâyde álle þat lóked hym vpón*. The hiatus could easily be avoided by an -n.

27/873. G. *halle[s]*. Cf. ll. 898-9, where *halles* should be *halle* to accord. But the minstrel was not troubled by the juxtaposition of the plural and the generalized singular. Cf. ll. 389-90, also 26, 28, 29; 94, 142; 125-26, 127-28, 149-50, 154-55.

28/874. The *kýnge sâyde*.

28/876. G. omits *he seyð*. Here again Trivet is very similar: "A ceo le Roi demaunda del Iuencel son noun; Et il respondi que son noun fu Moris."

28/877. G. *þat [ylke]*. Or, *The[re upo]n*? Or, originally:

"Then þat kynge of noble kende,
Toke vp a grete sykende"?

28/878 ff. *Tókë vp*. Hiatus. So in *La Manekine*, 6017-20:

"Quant je regardai cest enfant,
D'un mien fil m'alai a pensant,
Que j'euch, bien a passé set ans."

So, *Emaré*, ll. 811-16, suggests *La Manekine* in the length of time, and in the incident of ll. 811-13, which is seemingly generalized, while in the French poem it is his own son playing unrecognized in the senator's hall, who causes his emotion.

28/880. G. adds [anȳ], but the line is conventional as it stands.

28/887. So *La Manekine*, 6003-5:

"Or me dites voir, biaux dous ostes,
Si cis enfes ichi est vestres."

"Oil, sire, voir, il est miens."

And Gower (1387): "He seide: Yee, so I him calle."

28/890. W(h)esshen a-ȝēyn aftyr méte. G. a-ȝeyn [hem]; but the verb is not usually reflexive.

28/893. G. [a-]dōwne.

28/895. G. The kyngȝ þe burȝeys called hym tyll.

28/897. *body* in the sense of *person* has been and still is used, especially in the North.

28/901-3. *serued—wente—tellys*. The minstrel does not pay much heed to sequence of tenses. Cf. ll. 200-1, 721-23, 745-46, etc.

28/904. *Soone*. *Son* or *soon*?

28/905. *grete ende*. Cf. l. 917. G. reads *grece ende* (i. e. top of the steps); but the MS. has clearly t. The "great end" of the hand would naturally be the thumb (cf. Italian *dito grosso*, Catalan *dit gros*, English *great toe*).

29/909. In the lóndȝ of Galyȝ, to avoid hiatus.

29/916. G. Tō chāmbȝer when þe kyng shuldȝ wéndȝ.

29/918. G. helpe[d].

29/924. A curious synecdoche, which must have arisen in a period when chins were not hidden under wimples.

29/926. G. herd[e].

29/929. This scans with two anapests. *vmbraydest*. This spelling is not uncommon, especially in the North. Cf. *R. Mannyng* (3485, 8004), *Cleanness* (1622, but meaning to accost), *Wars of Alexander* (1800), *Destruction of Troy* (9903).

29/935. G. bōth[e] t[h]ō.

30/940. The exclamation is singularly modern; but cf. *Perceval of Galles* (1691), *Amadace* (Robson, 7/9), *Patience* (264), *Pearl* (108, 1148), etc.

30/948. G. tólde. *Y-tolde* is here the preterite representing O.E. *getealde*, not the past participle.

30/950. G. Was [y-]woxen.

30/951. G. And thowȝt [up-]on.

30/968. G. grēte a lōrd[ȝng].

31/979. Almost entirely anapestic.

31/984. G. Hym-self [hē] ȝaf.

31/989. *A* for *he* may be due to the scribe. It occurs in *Wars of Alexander* (4777, and Ashmole MS. only, 1492), in *Sir Ferumbras* passim, and is found in various dialects to-day, including districts of Yorkshire.

31/992. One of the special directions in the *Babees Book*.

31/997. Almost anapestic.

31/1000. G. (*Dissertation*, p. 3) at first *stayde*, afterwards *say[s]de*. Perhaps 'sayde = assayde. Cf. *Florence of Rome* (397):

"And sye the garsons assay þer stedys";

also, *Eglam* (1191):

"He rode a course to assay his stede."

Cf. Sc. say = assay.

31/1003. The chýlde spákke to.

32/1009-10. G. The emperōur sayde and wax all pāle, 'Sone, why umbraydest mē of bāle?'

32/1009-14. G. changes the order to 1012-14 following 1008, then 1009-11, which improves the sense.

32/1012. G. [right] joyfull.

32/1013. *wyth* = into the presence of.

32/1024. G. of Segramōūr. Possibly the scribe momentarily confused the name with *Sir Eglamour*, which he had already copied often in the romance of that name.

32/1031. *used by* = familiar or well known in? The general sense is clear.

32/1032. The relative *which* seems to be omitted. In connection with the name *Egare*, *Sir Degarre* has an interesting explanation in regard to the hermit's christening of the child:

"He hit nemnede Degarre:

 Degarre nowt elles ne is

 But thing that not neuer whar hit is,

 O the thing that is negth forlorn al so,

 For thi the schild he nemnede thous tho."—(252-256.)

Evidently Emaré had some such thought in mind when she changed her name to Egaré.

GLOSSARIAL INDEX.

- A, *interj.* 25/787, ah.
A, *pron.* (?) 31/989, he.
A-bowe, *v. refl.* 31/981, bow.
A-cyse, *n.* 26/830, a-syse, 29/912, manner; asyce, 24/748, estate. Cf. N. E. D. *Assize*, 8.
A-ferd, *adj.* 11/321; aferde, 21/655, a-ferde, 22/698, afraid.
A-fyne, *adv.* 29/913, finally; and fyne, 19/580, probably a corruption of the same. Fr. *à fin*.
A-gayn, A-gayne. See A-3eyn.
A-lyzte, *v. pret.* 32/1018, dismounted.
Amerayle, *n.* 4/109, emir; amerayles, 6/159.
Anamerd, *v. pret.* 31/997 (of), was charmed with; an-amerd, *pp.* 13/400 (of), anamored, 8/226 (tylle), enamoured. Cf. N. E. D. *Enamoured*.
And, *conj.* 32/1011, 1012, if.
Anker, *n.* 9/275, anchor.
A-non, *adv.* 14/442, 27/860, 28/886; a-none, 25/777, presently, soon.
A-qweynte, *v. refl.* 30/965, become acquainted with.
Arunde, *n.* 1/8, errand, message.
A-ryce, *v.* 9/260, arise, begin.
Asowr, *n.* 4/113, azure.
Asyce, Asyse. See A-cyse.
A-ventowres, *n.* 24/754, adventures.
A-3eyn, *prep.* 7/203, 24/752, 29/932, 31/986, 32/1016, towards; 7/206, opposite; 31/974, on the occasion of; 10/295, contrary to; *adv.* 10/309, 28/890, 29/910, again.
A-gayn, *prep. postpos.* 11/317, against; a-jayne, *adv.* 15/455, again; a-3ayn, *prep.* 30/971, towards.
Bale, *n.* 32/1010, sorrow.
Be, *prep.* 25/787, by.
Beere, *n.* 17/539, bear.
Be-3eten, *pp.* 2/44, begotten.
Be-lafte, *v. pret.* 15/472; by-laft, 16/496, remained.
Be-refe, *v. tr.* 25/801, deprive of; *pret.* be-rafte, 19/582; by-rafte, 25/803.
Be-sette, *pp.* 16/482, attacked, surrounded.
Be-stadde, *pp.* 11/334, 22/682, be-stead.
Be-powght, *v. refl. pret.* 9/280 = [vm]-bepowght, reflected. See *note*.
Be-tydde, *v.* 9/253, be-tyde, 30/970, happen.
Ble, *n.* 9/270, 19/590, 21/644, colour.
Blo, *adj.* 11/318, dark, *here applied to a stormy sea*.
Blode, *n.* 3/73, 16/513, 20/635, race, lineage.
Body, *n.* 28/897, creature. Cf. N. E. D. III, 13, *for early quotations*.
Bote, *n.* 32/1011, help.
Bour, *n.* 23/730; bowre, 3/63, 23/740, 28/899; bowres, 24/755, 27/873; bowrys, 2/28, bower, lady's chamber.
Brede, *n.* 19/581, 29/914, roast meat.
Brente, *v. pret.* 17/533; *pp.* 25/796, burned.
Bryddes, *n.* 6/166, birds.
Brym, *n.* 12/349; brymme, 22/694, shore.
Bullus, *n.* 8/239, papal bull.
Burgeys, *n.* 26/839, 28/886, 888, 895, Burgess.
By, *prep.* 10/294, along.
Byddyng, *n.* 24/768, command.
By-forn, *prep.* 6/163, before.
Byggyng, *n.* 23/709, dwelling.
By-laft. See Be-lafte.
By-rafte. See Be-refe.

- Carbunkulle, *n.* carbuncle, 5/127.
 Carefulle, *adj.* 11/328, full of care;
 karefulle, 22/676, 26/808.
 Case, *n.* 19/605, chance; kase, 21/
 647.
 Certys, *adv.* 28/880, certainly;
 sertes, 19/605.
 Chalange, *n.* 27/851 (to), fault. Cf.
 N. E. D. *Challenge*, *sb.* 3.
 Chare, *n.* 7/201, travelling-carriage.
 Chawnses, *n.* (ylle), 22/684, mis-
 fortunes.
 Chere, *n.* 7/214, 10/300, 25/807,
 frame of mind (cf. N. E. D. *Cheer*,
 2 and 3); 28/892, 31/999, face.
 Chynne, *n.* 29/924, chin (synecdoche
 for face).
 Clere, *adj.* 5/128, 8/234, 24/742, 26/
 810, beautiful.
 Clypte, *v. pret.* 32/1020, embraced;
 klypped, 7/212.
 Crapawtes, *n.* 5/142, toad-stones;
 crapowtes, 4/94. Cf. N. E. D.
Crapaud, *Crapautee*.
 Crystalle, *n.* 6/155, crystal.
 Crystendom, *n.* 14/428, christendom.
 Crystyante, *n.* 4/108, 20/635, 30/
 969, christendom.
 Cumbered, *pp.* 16/483, oppressed.
 Curtays, *adj.* 2/36, 40, 3/64, 27/850;
 curteys, 3/74, 23/724, 738, 27/850,
 872, courteous.
 Curtesye, *n.* 3/58, 14/425, good
 manners.
 Curteysly(e), *adv.* 27/868, 28/894,
 mannerly, with good manners.
- Deamondes, *n.* 5/130, deamoundes,
 6/153, diamonds.
 Dede, *v. pret.* 9/269, put.
 Dele, *n.* 12/356, sorrow; 20/613,
 lamentation.
 Dele, *v. tr.* 1/3, 2/42, 26/826, dis-
 tribute.
 De[l]fulle, *adj.* 19/606, doleful. *See*
note.
 Delycyus, *adj.* 12/370, delicious.
 Deuylle, *n.* 17/536, devil.
 Do. *See* *po*.
 Dolys, *n.* 26/826, alms.
 Dome, *n.* 31/984, judgment.
 Dowbylle, *adj.* 16/504, double.
 Dragon, *n.* 17/539.
 Drow3, *v. pret.* 26/832, drew.
 Drury, *adj.* 26/808, dreary.
- Dwelle, *v.* 1/19, dwelles, 23/721:
pret. dwelled, 9/274, 11/325, 19/
 577, 21/673, remained; 11/340,
 22/686, dwelled.
 Dyght, *v. tr.* 2/42, ordain, govern,
 prepare, arrange; dyghte, 1/3;
pret. dyght, 26/830; dy3te, 7/193;
 dy3th, 26/826; *pp.* dyght, 4/88,
 5/133, 137, 6/177, 10/285, 14/440,
 23/717; dy3t, 19/578; dy3th,
 15/458; y-dy3th, 13/395.
- Ellys, *adv.* 4/105, else.
 Emerawdes, *n.* 5/152, emeralds.
 Erdly, *adj.* 13/396, earthly; erdlyly,
 22/701; erpely, 8/245.
 Eyer, *n.* 22/690, air; eyr, 11/346.
- Fare, *v.* 7/195, go.
 Fay, *n.* 10/296, faith.
 Fayry, *n.* 4/104, magic contrivance.
 Cf. N. E. D. *Fairy*, A. 3.
 Fee, *n.* 22/686, property.
 Fele, *adj.* 26/823, many.
 Felle, *n.* 10/306, skin.
 Feltred, *adj.* 17/540, with matted
 hair. Cf. N. E. D. *Feltered*.
 Fende, *n.* 14/446, 17/540, 18/563,
 fiend.
 Fere, *n.* 7/215 (in), 8/237 (yn), in
 company, together.
 Ferly, *n.* 12/351, wonder.
 Fleted, *v. pret.* 10/313, 21/650,
 drifted.
 Fode, *n.* 16/507, nurseling, i. e. child.
 Folde, *v. tr.* 29/939, embrace.
 Fome, *n.* 16/497, 25/805, 26/818,
 foam; 26/835 (synecdoche for
 sea).
 For-bere, *v.* 20/611 (of), forbear.
 For-lorne, *pp.* 9/255, lost, here
 damned.
 Fre, *adj.* 1/10, 22, 3/71, 8/247, 10/
 308, 25/792, 26/831, 27/844, 28/
 884, 30/963, 31/979, 32/1013, of
 gentle birth and breeding. Cf.
 N. E. D. *Free*, I, 3.
 Frely, *adj.* 16/507, 29/939, a *syno-
 nym of the preceding*.
 Fro, *prep.* 2/53, 17/532, 24/744,
 25/776, from.
 Fryght, *n.* 19/600, frith, i. e. en-
 closed land (field or forest);
 frythles, 2/29.
 Fydylleing, *n.* 13/390, fiddling.

- Fyne. *See* A-fyne.
- Game, *n.* 15/474, pleasure; 28/874, jest.
- Gare, *n.* 7/198, gore (synecdoche for gown); gore, 29/938.
- Garnettes, *n.* 6/156, garnets.
- Gate, *n.* 26/828, way.
- Gay, *adj.* 14/444, beautiful.
- Gedered, *v. tr. pret.* 16/488, gathered.
- Gent, *adj.* 2/55, 7/191, 13/403, 29/932, 32/1016, gentle.
- Gentelle, *adj.* 14/441, noble-looking (?); gentyll, 3/73, 16/513, 20/635, noble, high-born; gentyll, 13/391, noble-looking (?).
- Gle, *n.* 5/132, music; 15/474, joy.
- Glysteryng, *adj.* 4/100, 12/350, 22/699, glittering.
- Godele, *adj.* 16/503; godely, 87/198, goodly.
- Gore. *See* Gare.
- Grete ende, 28/905, 29/917, thumb (?). *See note on l.* 905.
- Grette, *v.* 18/556, 24/772, wept.
- Growht, *v. pret.* 21/669, lamented (?). *See note.*
- Gruf, *adj.* 21/656, face downwards.
- Gryght, *n.* 19/597 = O.E. *grið*, protection.
- Haluendelle, *adv.* 14/444, half.
- Happes, *n.* 21/651, fortunes.
- Harpe, *n.* 13/390.
- Hele, *n.* 18/570, health.
- Hende, *adj.* 3/84 (used substantively), courteous; *adv.* 17/537, near.
- Hette, *v. pres.* 22/703, 704, are called, am called; *pret.* 2/34, 12/360; *pref.* hyght, 11/342, 28/879; hyzte, 3/85, 7/199; or *pres.* (?) hyzth, 11/338; *pres.* 28/876.
- Hepennes, *n.* 4/109, heathendom.
- Hode, *n.* 31/992, hood.
- Honeste, *adj.* 13/386, honourable, fitting.
- Horn, *n.* 6/165.
- Hye, *adj.* 6/165, high.
- Hye, *n.* 7/193 (in), haste; 4/103, hygh (on).
- Hyght. *See* Hette.
- Hynpur, *adj.* 21/654, hinder.
- Hyzyng, *n.* 16/511 (yn), haste.
- Hyzte, hyzth. *See* Hette.
- Inne, *n.* 30/960, inn; yn, 26/839.
- Ire, *n.* 15/455, anger.
- Jwelle, *n.* 4/107, jewel.
- Karefulle. *See* Carefulle.
- Kase. *See* Case.
- Kassydonys, *n.* 5/128, chalcedony.
- Kaytyf, *n.* 10/293, caitiff.
- Kelle, *n.* 10/303, hair-net.
- Kessed, *v. pret.* 31/995, kissed.
- Keured, *pp.* 12/374, 25/784, 30/945, recovered; kouered, 10/289.
- Klypped. *See* Clypte.
- Knyztus, *n.* 5/151. *See note.*
- Konnyngeest, *adj.* 14/427, most skilful.
- Koralle, *n.* 6/154, coral.
- Kouered. *See* Keured.
- Kowrs, *n.* 27/867, course (of a meal).
- Kowth, *v. pret.* 2/42; kowþe, 2/54, 21/672, 23/737; kowþe, 13/382, could.
- Kurtulle, *n.* 13/392, kirtle, under-robe; kurtylle, 27/848.
- Kygh, *n.* 19/594 = kith, i.e. native land. Cf. N. E. D. *Kith*, 3.
- Kyngus marke, 16/504, birth-mark signifying royalty.
- Lappes, *n.* 21/654, folds. Cf. N. E. D. *Lap*.
- Lashed, *v. pret.* 10/298, fell in showers.
- Lay, *n.* 10/295, law.
- Layes, *n.* 32/1030, lays, songs.
- Le, *n.* 11/348 (of), 26/834 (on). *See* Lythe.
- Leede, *n.* 22/702, people (yn = among).
- Lees, *n.* 4/110, falsehood.
- Lende, *v.* 17/515, arrive.
- Lene, *v. tr.* 1/4, grant.
- Lene, *adj.* 12/365, lean.
- Lent, *pp.* 13/404, bestowed.
- Lere, *n.* 10/294, cheeks, face.
- Lesynge, *n.* 28/880, falsehood.
- Lette, *v.* 20/618, stop.
- Lettyng, *n.* 27/843, impediment, delay.
- Lor, *n.* 25/792, lord.
- Lorde, *n.* used as interj. 30/940, Lord.
- Loply, *adj.* 18/563, hateful.
- Lufsumme, *adj.* 27/864, lovable.
- Lust, *n.* 26/833, wish.

- Lyflope, *n.* 25/803, means of support.
 Lylye, *n.* 3/66, 7/205, lily.
 Lyne, *n.* 27/864, linen.
 Lyon, *n.* 17/539, lion.
 Lythe, *adj.* 11/348, 26/834, pleasant,
 combined with *le* (cf. N. E. D. *Lee*,
 especially I, 1, 2, 3) calm. *But*
also, see note on l. 348.
 Lyzte, *v. pret.* 7/206, 210, dis-
 mounted.

 Madde, *adj.* 11/335, 22/683, insane.
 Mangery, *n.* 15/469, feast.
 Marke, *v.* 12/376, mark, *i. e.* paint,
 embroider, or perhaps mark for
 embroidering; marked, *pp.* show-
 ing marks of.
 Maystrye, *n.* 6/174, power.
 Menske, *n.* 3/69, respect, dignity.
 Menstralle, *n.* 15/468, minstrel;
 menstrelles, 1/13, 11/319; men-
 [s]trelles, 27/867; menstrellys,
 5/132.
 Menstralse, *n.* 13/388, minstrelsy.
 Mete, *n.* 7/218, 13/401, 23/722, food.
 Meteles, *adj.* 12/355, 364, 23/718,
 without food.
 Metewhyle, *n.* 8/229, 13/406, meal.
 Moch. *See* Myche.
 Molde, *n.* 8/246, mould, earth.
 Mone, *n.* 10/314, lamentation.
 Moo, *adj.* 3/60, more.
 Mornede, *v. pret.* 23/732, mourned.
 Mornying, *n.* 1/21, mourning; 20/
 626, mornynge.
 Mot, *v.* 25/775, must.
 Myche, *adj.* 3/78, 4/92, 5/140, 13/
 388, 15/463, 16/485, 20/637, 21/
 668; mychyl, 3/69; mychylle,
 5/131; mykelle, 28/885; mykylle,
 1/20, 11/341, 24/747, 749, 26/892;
 mykulle, 31/987; moch, 15/43,
 much.
 Myn, *adj.* 29/915, less.
 Mynge, *v.* 29/926, remind, tell.
 Myrghyt, *n.* 1/20, mirth.
 Myswrowht, *pp.* 9/281, done amiss.

 Nakette, *n.* 4/94, 5/142, a precious
 stone. Agate? *See note.*
 Näm, *v. pret.* 12/368, took.
 Ner, *v. pret.* 10/297, were not.
 Nome, *n.* 2/27, name.
 Nortur, *n.* 3/62, nortowre, 23/731,
 good manners.

 Norysse, *n.* 7/199, nurse.

 Onus, *adv.* 21/664, once.
 Onyx, *n.* 5/128.
 Ordeyne, *v. tr.* 26/823, equip, pre-
 pare.
 Ore, *n.* 9/275, 26/832, oar.
 Owth, *v.* 21/667, ought.

 Palle, *n.* 27/848, pall, fine cloth.
 Cf. N. E. D. *Pall*, I, 1.
 Pappe, *n.* 21/663, breast; pappes,
 21/657.
 Payn, *n.* 19/595, penalty.
 Perydotes, *n. plur.* 6/155, greenish
 chrysolite. (O.Fr. *peridot*, *peri-*
don, *pelidor*, derivation uncertain.)
 Place, *n.* 16/499, 25/788 (yn), in
 the course of experience? *See note*
on l. 499.
 Play, *v. refl.* 6/183, 11/345, 22/689,
 amuse one's self; 9/254, have
 sexual intercourse.
 Playnge, *vb. n.* 3/78. *See* Play.
 Pope, *n.* 8/233, 30/956; Popus, 8/239.
 Powste, *n.* 26/837, power.
 Poyn, *n.* 12/357, yn poyn[t] to, at
 the point of.
 Prese, *n.* 15/464, crowd.
 Price, *n.* 26/829, pryce, 9/259, prys,
 16/485, pryse, 24/749, 31/985,
 renown; prys, 4/92, pryse, 5/131,
 140, value.
 Prike, *v. tr.* 23/737, spur.
 Puruyance, *n.* 15/458, provision.
 Pyght, *pp.* 4/89, set.

 Rappes, *n.* 21/660, blows.
 Ray(e), *n.* 14/415, striped cloth; 14/
 430, 15/451, the same, or rei =
 king? *See note.*
 Remeueth, *v.* 7/187, departs.
 Resseyued, *pp.* 17/517, 19/578,
 received.
 Romans, *n.* 7/216, romance (French?).
 Rubyes, *n.* 4/91, 5/130, 139, rubies.
 Ryche, *adj.* 3/80, 82, 4/100, 107, 113,
 14/415, 430, 15/451, 468, 19/590,
 21/644, 22/686, 27/848, 28/912,
 splendid.
 Ryghtwes, *adj.* 1/17, righteous.

 Saf, *conj.* 25/779, save, *i. e.* except
 (it be).
 Safere, *n.* 5/127, sapphire.

Sale, *n.* 3/62, 15/459, hall.
 Sawe, *n.* 11/319, story.
 Sawtre, *n.* 13/389, psaltery.
 See-fome, *n.* 25/805, sea-foam.
 Sembelant, *n.* 8/220, appearance.
 Semely, *adj.* 1/9, 2/32, 48, 4/93, 5/135, 141, 6/171, 14/423, 15/459, 471, 16/486, 501, 30/942, fair, seemly.
 Senatowres, *n.* 5/152. *See note on l.* 151.
 Serke, *n.* 16/501, smock.
 Sertes. *See* Certys.
 Seuene-nyth, *n.* 11/326; seuene nyght, 21/674, week.
 Shate, *v. tr. pret.* 9/273, pushed.
 Shene, *adj.* 5/150, 16/489, 29/933, shining.
 Shente, *pp.* 20/628, ruined.
 Shypmen, *n.* 26/829, sailors.
 Shoope, *v. tr. pret.* 1/2, created.
 Shylynge, *n.* 17/524, shilling.
 Shype, *n.* 20/638, to shype = aboard.
 Slye, *adj.* 3/67, skilful.
 Smalle, *adj.* 13/391, slender.
 Snelle, *adv.* 10/309, quickly.
 Sond, *n.* 11/332, dispensation.
 Sond(e), *n.* 1/18, 12/352, 20/645, sand.
 Sowdan, *n.* 6/158, 170, 173, sultan.
 Sowed, *v. pret.* 21/645; 25/780, 29/935, swooned.
 Sowenyng, *n.* 10/284, 18/551; sownyng, 10/289; swonyng, 19/608; swooning.
 Specyally, *adv.* 28/900, specially.
 Specyalte, *n.* 6/176, in specyalte, as a special gift.
 Spedde, *pp.* 17/519, prospered.
 Spendyng, *n.* 9/271, 19/592, money to spend.
 Sprynge, *v.* 9/256, he spread abroad.
 Spycerye, *n.* 27/853, 28/891, the sweet course.
 S[t]ayde (?), *v. tr. pret.* 31/1000, reined in? *But see note on l.* 1000.
 Stede, *n.* 12/372, place.
 Stounde, *n.* 1/19, while.
 Stronge, *adj.* 21/665, rough.
 Stuffed, *pp.* 6/168, thickly crowded.
 Styte, *n.* 7/196, 17/543, path.
 Stynte, *v.* 10/302; *tr.* 26/815, stop.
 Surkote, *n.* 21/652, surcoat, upper dress.
 Swayne, *n.* 13/384, countryman.
 Swyde, *adv.* 7/219, swyfe, 8/242, quickly.

Sy, *v. tr. pret.* 27/869; sye, 3/68; sy3, 13/398; syzen, 10/299, saw.
 Syche, *adj.* 20/626, such.
 Sygh, *adv.* 18/560 = syfe, afterwards.
 Sykyng, *n.* 11/328, 22/676; sykynges, 26/809, sighing.
 Sympulle, *adj.* 20/632, of humble origin.
 Sype, *n.* 22/692, side.
 Sype, *n.* 8/225, time. Ofte sipe, often.
 Tabours, *n.* 13/389, drums.
 Take, *v. tr. pret.* 29/920, give; toke, 18/547; toke hem be-twene, 25/799, decided.
 Takulle, *n.* 26/830, tackle.
 Tane, *v. tr.* 22/690, take.
 Taw3te, *v. tr. pret.* 3/61, 12/376, 23/731; thaw3t, 3/58; thaw3te, 31/973, taught.
 Tene, *n.* 16/483, distress.
 Testymonyeth, *v.* 32/1029; testimonyeth, 6/162, testifies.
 Thaw3th. *See* Taw3te.
 The, *v.* 25/775, thrive.
 Thewe, *n.* 3/58, behaviour.
 Tho, *prep.* 17/528, to.
 Po, *adv.* 29/926, 30/956, 32/1018; po, 2/51, 28/885; do, 17/533, then.
 Ponge, *v. pret.* 21/659 = dong, struck.
 Powht, *v. pret.* 12/356; pow3t[e], 30/951, 955, pow3th, 8/227, 22/700, thought.
 Pow3t(h), *n.* 8/223, 227, 17/530, thought.
 Pow3tur, *n.* 8/226, 14/422; pow3pur, 32/1008, daughter.
 Prynge, *v.* 10/304, throng.
 Thylle. *See* Tylle.
 Pyng(e), *n. plur.* 2/41, 3/64, 75, 11/333, 12/379, 13/382, 15/466, 18/560, 22/681, 23/712, 724, 24/762, 27/852, 30/964, 31/976, things.
 Topase, *n.* 5/139, topaze, 4/91, topaz.
 Tre, *n.* 12/365, staff or stick; 21/656, probably, thwart. *See note on l.* 365.
 Trewe-loue-flour, *n.* 5/125, 149, Herb Paris. *See note on l.* 125.
 Trommpus, *n.* 13/389, trumpets.
 Trone, *n.* 1/1, 22/680, 26/820, 836, throne.
 Tyde, *n.* 16/487, 22/691, 31/993, time.

- Tylle, *prep. postpos.* 8/226, 13/411, 28/895, 902, to; *conj.* 18/545, 570, thylle, 16/502, until.
- Valed, *v. pret.* 31/992, doffed, pushed down.
- Vanyte, *n.* 4/105, illusion.
- Verament, *adv.* 14/433, 20/619, truly.
- Vertues, *n.* 5/152, magic powers.
- Vmbraydest, *v. tr.* 29/929, 32/1010, upbraideest.
- Vnhende, *adj.* 14/445, discourteous; 17/534, 25/794, evil.
- Vnsemely, *adj.* 21/660, rude.
- Vnykorn, *n.* 6/164, unicorn.
- Vseden, *v. pret.* 3/62, practised; *pp.* vsed, 32/1031, familiar.
- Vyce, *n.* 24/742; Vysage, *n.* 21/653, face.
- Wan, *v. tr. pret.* 6/173, won.
- Wanne, *adj.* 24/771, wan.
- Warye, *v. tr.* 21/667, curse.
- Wawe, *n.* 11/322; wawes, 21/658, wave.
- Wax, *v. pret.* 23/728, 24/771, 32/1009, grew; woxen, 30/950.
- Weddewede, *n.* 3/77 (yn), widowhood, *i. e.* as a widower.
- Wede, *n.* 8/250, 12/366, 14/447, 20/612, 22/699, 23/736, 31/988, dress.
- Wedur, *n.* 11/348, weather; wederus, 11/336; wepur, 26/834.
- Wele, *n.* 26/824, wealth.
- Welle-a-vey, *interj.* 26/812, alas.
- Wende, *v.* 3/81, 6/184, 17/514, 531, go.
- Wene, *n.* 5/153, doubt.
- Wesh, *v. pret.* 7/218, washed; w(h)eshen, 28/890; wysh, 27/866.
- Whales bone, 2/33, walrus-ivory. *See note.*
- Wolde, *n.* 13/399, power.
- Wone, *v.* 1/5, 32/1034, dwell; woned, 26/840.
- Woo, *n.* 11/324, 336, 18/555, 20/621, 637, 21/648, 22/684, 28/882, 29/925; wo, 18/573, 24/763.
- Worche, *v. tr.* 8/227, work, do.
- Wordes, *n.* 26/824, world's. *See note.*
- Wordy, *adj.* 8/250, 12/366, 14/447; worpy, 20/612, 23/736, 31/988, worthy.
- Wordyly, *adv.* 3/83, worthily.
- Worslypp, *n.* 30/966, honour.
- Worth, *v.* 21/648, 22/684, come upon (wo . . . worth).
- Wote, *v. tr. pres. indic.* 9/269, knows; *pret.* wyste, 19/579; *infin.* wyte, 5/153, 14/435.
- Wryng, *v.* 28/881, force their way.
- Wyght, *n.* 22/701, being.
- Wyght, *adj.* 2/39, brave.
- Wynne, *v. tr.* 30/957, wynnen, 26/827, win.
- Wysh. *See* Wesh.
- ȝaf hem ylle, 25/778, lamented.
- ȝarked, *v.* 11/329, 22/677 (ȝore), prepared ready, *i. e.* ordained. *See note.*
- Y-dyȝth. *See* Dyght.
- ȝede, *v. pret.* 7/213, 215, went; ȝode, 17/516.
- Ylke, *adj.* 4/114, 6/166, each; 24/770, same.
- Ymagerye, *n.* 6/168, figures.
- ȝode. *See* ȝede.
- ȝonge. *See* ȝynge.
- ȝoo, *adv.* 28/888, yea.
- ȝore, *adv.* 11/329, 22/677, ready. *See* ȝarked.
- Yrpe, *n.* 10/285, earth.
- Y-wysse, *adv.* 28/906, certainly.
- ȝen, *n.* 10/297, eyes.
- ȝyf, *conj.* 20/616, 31/980, if.
- ȝynge, *adj.* 2/41, 3/65, 10/301, 305, 12/380, 18/569, 20/610, 23/710, 725, young; ȝonge, 22/707.

INDEX OF NAMES.

Abro, 2/57, 3/61, 7/199, Abra.

Amadas, 5/122.

Artyus, 2/27, 37, Arthur.

Babylone, 6/158.

Blawncheffour, 5/146.

Brytayne, 32/1030.

Cesyle, 3/80, 6/181, Sicily.

Egare, 12/360, 24/761, 29/908, 923,
32/1007; Egarye, 14/437, 22/704,
26/810, 32/1007, 1032.

Emare, 1/23, 2/47, 27/841, 29/907,
922, 30/952, 961, 31/973, 982, 32/
1006, 1023; Emarye, 26/840.

Erayne, 2/34.

Florys, 5/146.

France, 16/481.

Galys, 11/338, 16/484, 487, 24/743,
746, 29/909, 30/967, 31/986.

Isowde, 5/134.

Iurdan, 22/687.

Kadore, 11/342, 12/361, 13/385, 409,
14/416, 421, 16/490, 508, 24/758,
25/775, 30/940; Kodore, 24/751.

Rome, 8/233, 238, 22/679, 30/959.

Sarezyne, 16/482.

Segramour, 16/506; Segramowre,
23/739, 31/995, 31/1000; Segra-
mowres, 28/876; [S]egramour,
32/1024.

Tergaunte, 3/85.

Trystram, 5/134.

Ydoyne, 5/122.

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED,
BREAD STREET HILL, E.C., AND
BUNGAY, SUFFOLK.

Among the MSS. and old books which need copying or re-editing, are:—

ORIGINAL SERIES.

- English Inventories and other MSS. in Canterbury Cathedral (5th Report, Hist. MSS. Com.).
Maumetrie, from Lord Tollemache's MS.
The Romance of Troy. Harl. 525, Trentham.
Biblical MS., Corpus Cambr. 434 (ab. 1375).
Hampole's unprinted Works.
The Clowde of Unknowyng, from Harl. MSS. 2373, 959, Bibl. Reg. 17 C 26, &c. Univ. Coll. Oxf. 14.
A Lanterne of Light, from Harl. MS. 2324.
Soule-hele, from the Vernon MS.
Lydgate's unprinted Works.
Boethius de Consol.; Pilgrim, 1426, &c. &c.
Early Treatises on Music: Descent, the Gamme, &c.
Skelton's englisshing of Diodorus Siculus.
Boethius, in prose, MS. Auct. F. 3. 5, Bodley.
Penitential Psalms, by Rd. Maydenstoon, Brampton, &c. (Rawlinson, A. 389, Douce 232, &c.).
Documents from the early Registers of the Bishops of all Dioceses in Great Britain.
Ordinances and Documents of the City of Worcester.
Breus's Passion of Christ, 1423. Harl. 2338.
Dr. Crophill or Crephill's Tracts, Harl. 1735.
Burgh's Cato.
Memoriale Credencium, &c., Harl. 2398.
Book for Recluses, Harl. 2372.
Lollard Theological Treatises, Harl. 2348, 2380, &c.
H. Selby's Northern Ethical Tract, Harl. 2388, art. 20.
Hilton's Ladder of Perfection, Cott. Faust. B 6, &c.
Supplementary Early English Lives of Saints.
Select Prose Treatises from the Vernon MS.
Metrical Homilies, Edinburgh MS.
Lyrical Poems from the Fairfax MS. 16, &c.
Prose Life of St. Audry, A.D. 1595, Corp. Oxf. 120.
English Miscellanies from MSS., Corp. Oxford.
Miscellanies from Oxford College MSS.
Disce Mori, Jesus Coll. Oxf. 39; Bodl. Laud 99.
Mirror of the blessed liyf of Ihesu Crist. MSS. of Sir Hy. Ingilby, Bart., Lord Aldenham, Univ. Coll. Oxf. 123, &c.
Poem on Virtues and Vices, &c., Harl. 2260.
Maundevyle's Legend of Gwydo, Queen's, Oxf. 383.
Book of Warrants of Edw. VI., &c., New Coll. Oxf. 328.
Adam Loutfut's Heraldic Tracts, Harl. 6149-50.
Rules for Gunpowder and Ordnance, Harl. 6355.
John Watton's englisht Speculum Christiani, Corpus, Oxf. 155, Laud G.12, Thoresby 530, Harl. 2250, art. 20.
Verse and Prose in Harl. MS. 4012.
The Englisht Disciplina Pastoralis, and Statutes of Black Roger, in Worcester Cathedral MS. 172.

EXTRA SERIES.

- Erle of Tolous.
Epotis.
Sir Eglamour.
Sir Gowther.
Jame Siriz, &c.
Arfeo (Digby, 86).
Dialogues between the Soul and Body.
Barlaam and Josphat.
Amis and Amiloun.
Sir Generides, from Lord Tollemache's MS.
The Troy-Book fragments once call'd Barbour's, in the Cambr. Univ. Library and Douce MSS.
Poems of Charles, Duke of Orleans.
Carols and Songs.
Songs and Ballads, Ashmole MS. 48.
The Siege of Rouen, from Harl. MSS. 2256, 753, Egerton 1995, Bodl. 3562, E. Museo 124, &c.
Octavian.
Libeaus Desconus.
Ywain and Gawain.
Sir Perceval of Gallas.
Sir Isumbras.
Pilgrimage to Jerusalem, Queen's Coll. Oxf. 357.
Other Pilgrimages to Jerusalem, Harl. 2333, &c.
Horn, Penitential Psalms, &c., Queen's Coll. Oxf. 207.
St. Brandan's Confession, Queen's Coll. Oxf. 210.
Scotch Heraldry Tracts, copy of Caxton's Book of Chivalry, &c., Queen's Coll. Oxford 161.
Stevyn Scrope's Doctryne and Wyse dome of the Auncyent Philosophers, A.D. 1450, Harl. 2266.

The Subscription to the Society, which constitutes membership, is £1 1s. a year for the ORIGINAL SERIES, and £1 1s. for the EXTRA SERIES, due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid by Cheque, Postal Order, or Money-Order, crossed 'Union of London and Smith's Bank,' to the Hon. Secretary, W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N. Members who want their Texts posted to them must add to their prepaid Subscriptions 1s. for the Original Series, and 1s. for the Extra Series, yearly. The Society's Texts are also sold separately at the prices put after them in the Lists; but Members can get back-Texts at one-third less than the List-prices by sending the cash for them in advance to the Hon. Secretary.

Early English Text Society.

ORIGINAL SERIES.

The Publications for 1907 (one guinea) are:—

133. *The English Register of Osney Abbey*, by Oxford, edited by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Part I. 18s.
134. *The Coventry Leet Book*, edited by Miss M. Dorman Harris. Part I. 15s.

The Publications for 1908 and 1909 will be chosen from:—

- The Coventry Leet Book*, edited by Miss M. Dorman Harris. Part II. [At Press].
Copgrave's Lives of St. Augustine and St. Gilbert of Sempringham, edited from the MS. by J. J. Moore. [At Press].
The English Register of Gislewode Nunnery, edited by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Part III. [At Press].
The English Register of Osney Abbey, by Oxford, ed. by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Part II. [At Press].
The Brut, or *The Chronicle of England*, edited from the best MS. by Dr. F. Bell. Part II. [At Press].
An Alphabet of Tales in Northern English, from the Latin, ed. Miss M. M. Danks. Part III.
The Wars of Alexander the Great, *Theories*, MS., ed. J. H. Wadham, M.A., and L. A. Morgan, LL.D. [At Press].
Twenty-six Political and other Poems from Digby MS. 302, &c., edited by Dr. J. Hall. Part II.
The Leet Book, edited from the unique MS. Leet 200, by Dr. J. Ernest Walling. Part III.
The Old-English Rune of St. Guthlac, and *the Capitula of St. Theophylact*, ed. Prof. Napier, Ph.D. [At Press].
Robert of Brunne's Handlyng-Synne (1360), and its French original, re-ed. by Dr. Furnivall. Part III.
The Afflictive Siege of Jerusalem, edited by Prof. G. Helling, Ph.D., and Prof. Kuhn, Ph.D. [At Press].
Alain Chartier's Quadrilogue, English, edited from the unique MS. by Prof. J. W. H. Aldrich, M.A.
Minor Poems of the Vernon MS. Part III. Introduction and Glossary by H. Hartley, M.A.
Sir David Lindsay's Works. Part VI. and last. Edited by the Rev. Wm. Baggie, M.A. [At Press].
Jason's Well, edited from the unique Salisbury Cathedral MS. by Dr. A. Drenth. Part II. [At Press].
Vices and Virtues, from the unique MS., 1240 A.D., ed. Prof. Dr. F. Hultmann. Part II. [At Press].
The Easter Book (Anglo-Saxon Poems), re-ed. from the unique MS., by Prof. Gollancz, M.A. Part II. [At Press].
Prayers and Devotions, from the unique MS., Cotton Vesp. C. 12, ed. Hy. Litchfield, Nov. [English].
North-English Metrical Romances, from Ashmole MS. 22. 22. ed. G. H. Goss, D.Litt.
Verities on the Art of War, edited from the MSS. by L. C. Wharton, M.A.
Whitby's Book of Gods Masters, edited from the unique MS. by Hermann Gollancz, Ph.D.

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1908 (one guinea) will be:—

- XCVII. *Lydgate's Troy Book*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Hy. Bergen. One l. 7s.
XCVIII. *Robert's Magnificence*, edited by Dr. Robert L. Barnett, with an Introduction. 7s. 6s.
XIX. *The Romance of Rosset*, re-edited from the MS. by Miss Edith Dobson. 7s. 6s.

The Publications for 1907 will probably be:—

- C. *The Harrowing of Hell*, and *The Gospel of Nicodemus*, re-edited by Prof. Halm, Ph.D. [At Press].
CI. *Ballads, Carol, &c.* from J. Hyde's MS. Ballad 25A, edited by Dr. R. Dyke, Ph.D. [At Press].

The Publications for 1905 and 1909 will be chosen from:—

- Lydgate's Troy Book*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Hy. Bergen. Part II.
Lydgate's Minor Poems, with the *Lydgate Canon*, edited by Dr. H. N. MacCracken.
The New-Cycle Miracle Plays, re-edited by O. Waterhouse, B.A. [At Press].
Lydgate's Siege of Thebes, re-edited from the MSS. by Prof. Dr. A. Bruns, [At Press].
The Owl and Nightingale, 2 Texts parallel, ed. G. F. H. Squire, Nov. [At Press].
The Court of Sapience, once thought Lydgate's, edited by Dr. Jagger.
Mirk's Festial, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Kuhn. Part II.
William of Shoreham's Poems, re-edited by Dr. M. Kourou. Part II. [At Press].
Winnor and Waster, &c., two Alliterative Poems, re-edited by Prof. I. Gollancz, Ph.D.
De Medicina, a 15th-century English text, edited by Prof. Joseph Delcourt.
Medieval Manuscripts, from the unique MS., 1150, ed. A. K. Duguid, B.A. 18s. 6s. [At Press].
Geordie's Romance of St. John, edited from the unique MS. by Dr. E. A. Kosk, Nov. 11s.
Prætorianus Paterfamilias, c. 1440, from the Woodstock MS., ed. Rev. A. F. Maitland, M.A. Part I. [At Press].
Lydgate's Death of Death, edited from the MSS. by Miss Florence Warren.
Wynken on Wende's English and French Phrase-book, &c., edited by Hermann Delcourt, Ph.D.
Beata Beatrix: three prose fragments, c. 1440, ed. R. Steele, B.A. Part II. [At Press].
The Craft of Nuremberg, the earliest English Treatise on Arithmetic, ed. R. Steele, B.A. [At Press].
The Book of the Foundation of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, London, MS. 1425, ed. Dr. Hermann Delcourt. [At Press].
Carte's Mirror of the World, with 57 Woodcuts, ed. by G. B. Peck, B.A.
The Gower Plays, Part II., re-edited by Dr. Matthews. [At Press].
Lichfield Gilds, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall. Introduction by Prof. H. C. E. Goossens. [At Press].
John Hart's Orthographie, from his unique MS. 1511, with MS. 1511-1512 text, ed. Prof. H. C. E. Goossens, Ph.D.
John Hart's Methodes to teach Reading, 1510, ed. Prof. H. C. E. Goossens, Ph.D.
Extracts from the Rochester Diocesan Registers, ed. Hy. Litchfield, Nov.
The Three Kings' Song, Part II., French collection, Introduction, &c., by Dr. L. Kuhn.
The Gower Plays, re-edited from the unique MS. by Dr. Matthews.
The Amores Elise, edited from the five MSS., by the late Prof. H. Kuhn, Ph.D., and Dr. H. C. E. Goossens.
Geordie's History of the Holy Grail, Part VI., ed. P. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D.
Ignorance, edited by Dr. A. T. B. Hall.
The Adventure of Arthur, 2 Texts from the 2 MSS., edited by Wilhelm Wulf.

LONDON: KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LTD.
BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 13, UNDER DEN LINDEN.

This book should be returned to
the Library on or before the last date
stamped below.

A fine of ~~five cents a day~~ is incurred
by retaining it beyond the specified
time.

Please return promptly.

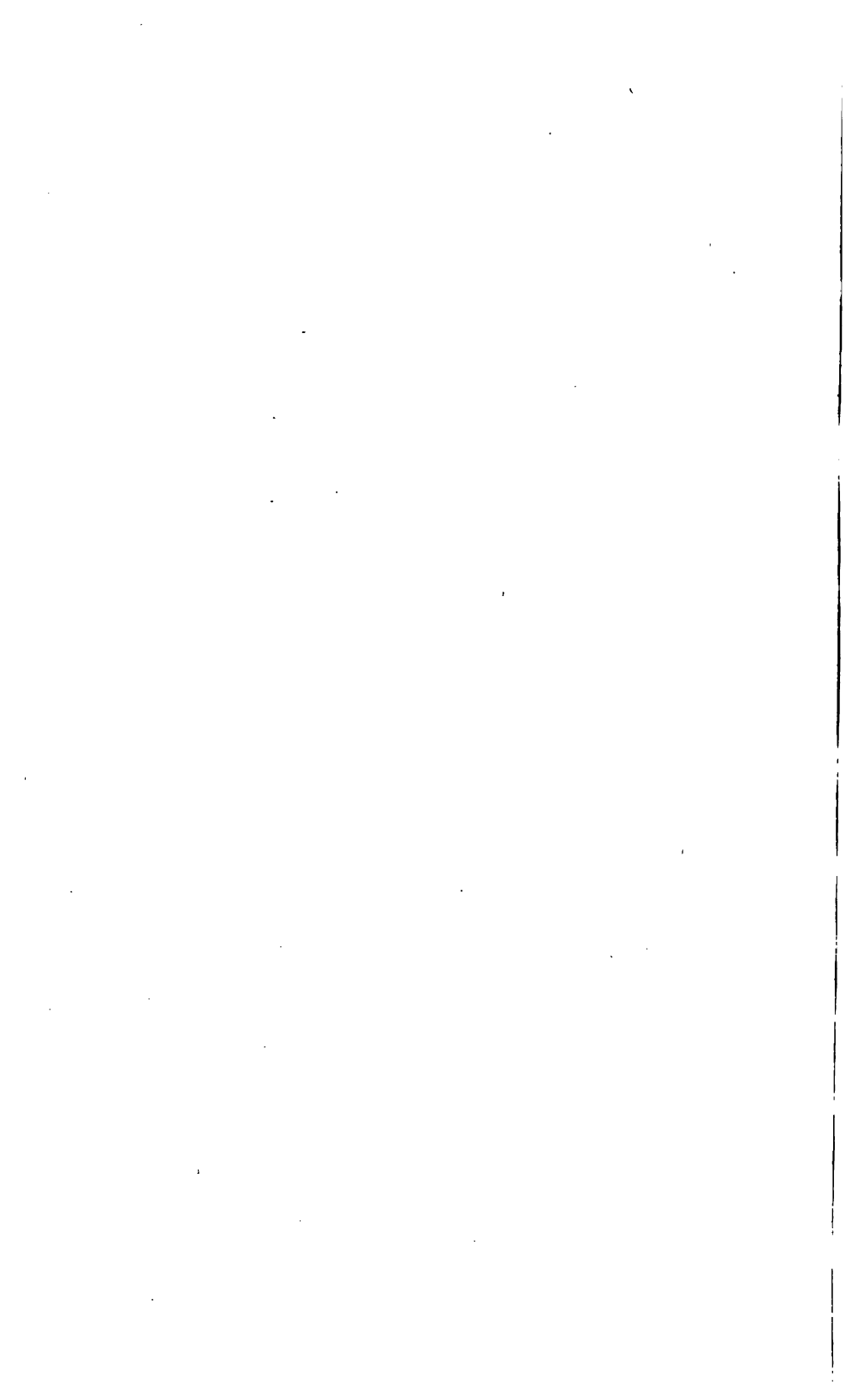
~~JAN 29 '53 H~~

~~JAN 12 '54 H~~

~~NOV 22 '58 H~~

APR 1 '68 H

1925887





11473.99

Bound

A

JUN 1 - 1908

Harvard College Library

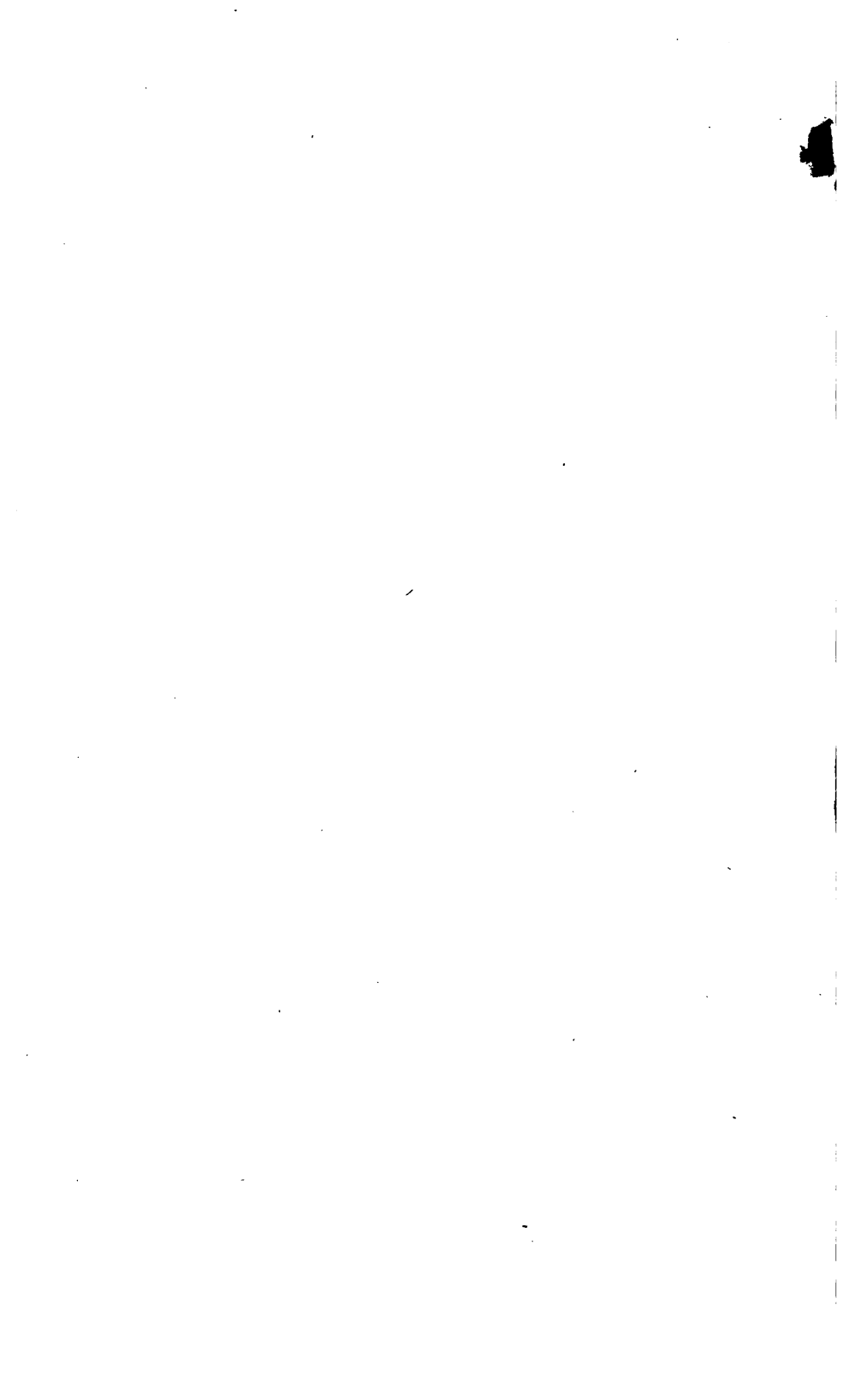


FROM THE

SUBSCRIPTION FUND

BEGUN IN 1858







1000
1000
1000
1000

1000

Early English Text Society.

Extra Series, XCIX.

Eng. Lit. 1582

11473-99

A

The Romance of Emaré.

HARVARD
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY



RE-EDITED FROM THE MS.,

WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY,

BY

EDITH RICKERT, PH.D.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY
BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LIMITED,
DRYDEN HOUSE, 43, GERRARD STREET, SOHO, W.

1906.

Price Seven and Sixpence.

Early English Text Society.

Committee of Management:

Director: DR. FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, M.A.

Treasurer: HENRY B. WHEATLEY, Esq.

Hon. Sec.: W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67 VICTORIA ROAD, FINSBURY PARK, N.

Hon. Secs. { North & East: Prof. G. L. KITTRIDGE, Harvard Coll., Cambr., Mass.
for America: { South & West: Prof. J. W. BRIGHT, Johns Hopkins Univ., Baltimore.

LORD ALDENHAM, M.A.

PROF. NAPIER, M.A., Ph.D.

REV. DR. ANDREW CLARK, M.A.

EDWARD B. PEACOCK, Esq.

PROF. ISRAEL GOLLANCZ, D.LIT.

ALFRED W. POLLARD, M.A.

SIDNEY L. LEE, M.A., D.LIT.

REV. PROF. WALTER W. SKEAT, Litt.D.

HENRY LITTLEHALES, Esq.

DR. HENRY SWEET, M.A.

REV. PROF. J. E. B. MAYOR, M.A.

DR. W. ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A.

DR. J. A. H. MURRAY, M.A.

(With power to add Workers to their number.)

Bankers:

THE UNION OF LONDON AND SMITH'S BANK, 2, PRINCES STREET, E.C.

THE Early English Text Society was started by Dr. Furnivall in 1864 for the purpose of bringing the mass of Old English Literature within the reach of the ordinary student, and of wiping away the reproach under which England had long rested, of having felt little interest in the monuments of her early language and life.

On the starting of the Society, so many Texts of importance were at once taken in hand by its Editors, that it became necessary in 1867 to open, besides the *Original Series* with which the Society began, an *Extra Series* which should be mainly devoted to fresh editions of all that is most valuable in printed MSS. and Caxton's and other black-letter books, though first editions of MSS. will not be excluded when the convenience of issuing them demands their inclusion in the Extra Series.

During the forty-three years of the Society's existence, it has produced, with whatever shortcomings, and at a cost of over £30,000, an amount of good solid work for which all students of our Language, and some of our Literature, must be grateful; and which has rendered possible the beginnings (at least) of proper Histories and Dictionaries of that Language and Literature, and has illustrated the thoughts, the life, the manners and customs of our forefathers and foremothers.

But the Society's experience has shown the very small number of those inheritors of the speech of Cynewulf, Chaucer, and Shakspeare, who care two guineas a year for the records of that speech. 'Let the dead past bury its dead' is still the cry of Great Britain and her Colonies, and of America, in the matter of language. The Society has never had money enough to produce the Texts that could easily have been got ready for it; and many Editors are now anxious to send to press the work they have prepared. The necessity has therefore arisen for trying to increase the number of the Society's members, and to induce its well-wishers to help it by gifts of money, either in one sum or by instalments. The Committee trust that every Member will bring before his or her friends and acquaintances the Society's claims for liberal support. Until all Early English MSS. are printed, no proper History of our Language or Social Life is possible.

The Subscription to the Society, which constitutes membership, is £1 1s. a year for the ORIGINAL SERIES, and £1 1s. for the EXTRA SERIES, due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid by Cheque, Postal Order, or Money-Order, crossed 'Union of London and Smith's Bank,' to the Hon. Secretary, W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Rd., Finsbury Park, London, N. Members who want their Texts posted to them, must add to their prepaid Subscriptions 1s. for the Original Series, and 1s. for the Extra Series, yearly. The Society's Texts are also sold separately at the prices put after them in the Lists; but Members can get back-Texts at one-third less than the List-prices by sending the cash for them in advance to the Hon. Secretary.

☞ The Society intends to complete, as soon as its funds will allow, the Reprints of its out-of-print Texts of the year 1866, and also of nos. 20, 26, and 33. Dr. Otto Glauning has undertaken *Seinte Marherete*; and Dr. Furnivall has *Hali Meidenhad* in type. As the cost of these Reprints, if they were not needed, would have been devoted to fresh Texts, the Reprints will be sent to all Members in lieu of such Texts. Though called 'Reprints,' these books are new editions, generally with valuable additions, a fact not noticed by a few careless receivers of them, who have complained that they already had the volumes.

Sept. 1907. A gratifying gift is to be made to the Society. The American owner of the unique MS. of the Works of John Metham—whose Romance of Amoryus and Cleopas was sketched by Dr. Furnivall in his new edition of *Political, Religious and Love Poems*, No. 15 in the Society's Original Series—has promised to give the Society an edition of his MS. prepared by Dr. Hardin Craig of Princeton, and it will be issued next year as No. 132 of the Original Series. The giver hopes that his example may be followed by other folk, as the support hitherto given to the Society is so far below that which it deserves.

The Original-Series Texts for 1906 were No. 130, Part II of the englishting, ab. 1450 A.D., of the Deeds in the *Register of Godstow Nunnery*, edited from the unique MS. by the Rev. Andrew Clark, LL.D.; No. 131, *The Brut*, or *The Chronicles of England*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. F. Brie, Part I. No. 132, *John Metham's Works* mentioned above is at press, and will probably be issued in 1908 for 1906.

The Original-Series Texts for 1907 are, No. 133, Part I of the *English Register of Osney Abbey*, by Oxford, edited by the Rev. Andrew Clark, LL.D., already issued, and No. 134, Part I of the *Coventry Leet Book*, copied and edited for the Society by Miss M. Dormer Harris—helped by a contribution from the Common Council of the City,—which is published by the Society as its contribution to our knowledge of the provincial city life of the 15th century.

Among the Texts for 1908 and 1909 will be Part II of the *Coventry Leet Book*, copied and edited by Miss M. Dormer Harris; Capgrave's *Lives of St. Augustine and St. Gilbert of Sempringham*, edited from the unique MS. by Mr. J. J. Munro; *The Wars of Alexander* from the unique Thornton MS. edited by J. S. Westlake, M.A., and L. A. Magnus, LL.B.; Part II of *The Brut*; Part III of the *Alphabet of Tales*, edited by Mrs. M. M. Banks; Part III of the *English Register of Godstow Nunnery*; and Part II of the *English Register of Osney Abbey*, edited by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Future Texts will be Part III of Robert of Brunne's *Handlyng Synne*, edited by Dr. Furnivall, with a Glossary of Wm. of Wadington's French words in his *Manuel des Pechez*, and comments on them, by Mr. Dickson-Brown; Part II of the *Exeter Book*—Anglo-Saxon Poems from the unique MS. in Exeter Cathedral—re-edited by Israel Gollancz, M.A.; Part II of Prof. Dr. Holt-hausen's *Vices and Virtues*; Part II of *Jacob's Well*, edited by Dr. Brandeis; the Alliterative *Siege of Jerusalem*, edited by the late Prof. Dr. E. Kölbing and Prof. Dr. Kaluza; an Introduction and Glossary to the *Minor Poems of the Vernon MS.* by H. Hartley, M.A.; Alain Chartier's *Quadrilogue*, edited from the unique MS. Univ. Coll. Oxford No. 85, by Prof. J. W. H. Atkins. Canon Wordsworth of Marlborough has given the Society a copy of the Leofric Canonical Rule, Latin and Anglo-Saxon, Parker MS. 191, C. C. C. Cambridge, and Prof. Napier will edit it, with a fragment of the englisht Capitula of Bp. Theodulf: it is now at press.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1906 are to be No. XCVII, *Lydgate's Troy Book*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Hy. Bergen, Part I; No. XCVIII, *Skelton's Magnificence*, edited by Dr. R. L. Ramsay, with a special Introduction; No. XCIX, *The Romance of Emaré*, re-edited by Miss Edith Rickert, Ph.D. The first and last have been issued.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1907 will be No. C. *The Harrowing of Hell*, three parallel Texts, with *The Gospel of Nicodemus*, four parallel Texts, re-edited by Prof. Hulme; No. CI. *Ballads and Carols* from Jn. Hyde's Balliol MS., edited by Dr. R. Dyboski.

Further Extra-Series Texts for 1908, &c., will be *Lydgate's Troy Book*, Parts II and III, edited by Dr. Hy. Bergen; *Lydgate's Minor Poems*, with a settlement of the Lydgate Canon, ed. by Dr. H. N. MacCracken; *The Owl and Nightingale*, two parallel Texts, edited by Mr. G. F. H. Sykes; Dr. Erbe's re-edition of *Mirk's Festial*, Part II; Dr. M. Konrath's re-edition of *William of Shoreham's Poems*, Part II; Prof. Erdmann's re-edition of *Lydgate's Siege of Thebes* (issued also by the Chaucer Society); Prof. I. Gollancz's re-edition of two Alliterative Poems, *Winner and Waster*, &c., ab. 1360; Dr. Norman Moore's re-edition of *The Book of the Foundation of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, London*, from the unique MS. ab. 1425, which gives an account of the Founder, Rahere, and the miraculous cures wrought at the Hospital; *The Craft of Nombrynge*, with other of the earliest englisht Treatises on Arithmetic, edited by R. Steele, B.A.; and Miss Warren's two-text edition of *The Dance of Death* from the Ellesmere and other MSS.

These Extra-Series Texts ought to be completed by their Editors: the Second Part of the prose Romance of *Melusine*—Introduction, with ten facsimiles of the best woodblocks of the old foreign black-letter editions, Glossary, &c., by A. K. Donald, B.A. (now in India); and a new edition of the famous Early-English Dictionary (English and Latin), *Promptorium Parvulorum*, from the Winchester MS., ab. 1440 A.D.: in this, the Editor, the Rev. A. L. Mayhew, M.A., will follow and print his MS. not only in its arrangement of nouns first, and

verbs second, under every letter of the Alphabet, but also in its giving of the flexions of the words. The Society's edition will thus be the first modern one that really represents its original, a point on which Mr. Mayhew's insistence will meet with the sympathy of all our Members.

Later Texts for the Extra Series will include *The Three Kings' Sons*, Part II, the Introduction, &c., by Prof. Dr. Leon Kellner; Part II of *The Chester Plays*, re-edited from the MSS., with a full collation of the formerly missing Devonshire MS., by Mr. G. England and Dr. Matthews; Prof. Jespersen's editions of John Hart's *Orthographie* (MS. 1551 A.D.; blackletter 1569), and *Method to teach Reading*, 1570; Deguilleville's *Pilgrimage of the Soule*, in English prose, edited by Mr. Hans Koestner. (For the three prose versions of *The Pilgrimage of the Life of Man*—two English, one French—an Editor is wanted.) Members are asked to realise the fact that the Society has now 50 years' work on its Lists,—at its present rate of production,—and that there is from 100 to 200 more years' work to come after that. The year 2000 will not see finished all the Texts that the Society ought to print. The need of more Members and money is pressing. Offers of help from willing Editors have continually to be declined because the Society has no funds to print their Texts.

An urgent appeal is hereby made to Members to increase the list of Subscribers to the E. E. Text Society. It is nothing less than a scandal that the Hellenic Society should have over 1000 members, while the Early English Text Society has not 300!

Before his death in 1895, Mr. G. N. Currie was preparing an edition of the 15th and 16th century Prose Versions of Guillaume de Deguilleville's *Pilgrimage of the Life of Man*, with the French prose version by Jean Gallopes, from Lord Aldenham's MS., he having generously promised to pay the extra cost of printing the French text, and engraving one or two of the illuminations in his MS. But Mr. Currie, when on his deathbed, charged a friend to burn all his MSS. which lay in a corner of his room, and unluckily all the E. E. T. S.'s copies of the Deguilleville prose versions were with them, and were burnt with them, so that the Society will be put to the cost of fresh copies, Mr. Currie having died in debt.

Guillaume de Deguilleville, monk of the Cistercian abbey of Chaalis, in the diocese of Senlis, wrote his first verse *Pèlerinage de l'Homme* in 1330-1 when he was 36.¹ Twenty-five (or six) years after, in 1355, he revised his poem, and issued a second version of it,² a revision of which was printed ab. 1500. Of the prose representative of the first version, 1330-1, a prose Englishing, about 1430 A.D., was edited by Mr. Aldis Wright for the Roxburghe Club in 1869, from MS. Ff. 5. 30 in the Cambridge University Library. Other copies of this prose English are in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, Q. 2. 25; Sion College, London; and the Laud Collection in the Bodleian, no. 740.³ A copy in the Northern dialect is MS. G. 21, in St. John's Coll., Cambridge, and this is the MS. which will be edited for the E. E. Text Society. The Laud MS. 740 was somewhat condensed and modernised, in the 17th century, into MS. Ff. 6. 30, in the Cambridge University Library:⁴ "The Pilgrime or the Pilgrimage of Man in this World," copied by Will. Baspoole, whose copy "was verbatim written by Walter Parker, 1645, and from thence transcribed by G. G. 1649; and from thence by W. A. 1655." This last copy may have been read by, or its story reported to, Bunyan, and may have been the groundwork of his *Pilgrim's Progress*. It will be edited for the E. E. T. Soc., its text running under the earlier English, as in Mr. Herrtage's edition of the *Gesta Romanorum* for the Society. In February 1464,⁵ Jean Gallopes—a clerk of Angers, afterwards chaplain to John, Duke of Bedford, Regent of France—turned Deguilleville's first verse *Pèlerinage* into a prose *Pèlerinage de la vie humaine*.⁶ By the kindness of Lord Aldenham, as above mentioned, Gallopes's French text will be printed opposite the early prose northern Englishing in the Society's edition.

The Second Version of Deguilleville's *Pèlerinage de l'Homme*, A.D. 1355 or -6, was Englished in verse by Lydgate in 1426, and, thanks to the diligence of the old Elizabethan tailor and manuscript-lover, John Stowe, a complete text of Lydgate's poem has been edited for the Society by Dr. Furnivall. The British Museum French MSS. (Harleian 4399,⁷ and Additional 22,937⁸ and 25,594⁹) are all of the First Version.

Besides his first *Pèlerinage de l'homme* in its two versions, Deguilleville wrote a second, "de l'ame separee du corps," and a third, "de nostre seigneur Iesus." Of the second, a prose Englishing of 1413, *The Pilgrimage of the Soule* (with poems by Hoccleve, already printed for the Society with that author's *Regement of Princes*), exists in the Egerton MS. 615,¹⁰ at

¹ He was born about 1295. See Abbé GOUJER's *Bibliothèque française*, Vol. IX, p. 78-4.—P. M. The Roxburghe Club printed the 1st version in 1893.

² The Roxburghe Club's copy of this 2nd version was lent to Mr. Currie, and unluckily burnt too with his other MSS.

³ These 3 MSS. have not yet been collated, but are believed to be all of the same version.

⁴ These were printed in France, late in the 15th or early in the 16th century.

⁵ Another MS. is in the Pepys Library.

⁶ According to Lord Aldenham's MS.

⁷ 15th cent., containing only the *Vie humaine*.

⁸ 15th cent., containing all the 3 Pilgrimages, the 3rd being *Jesus Christ's*.

⁹ 14th cent., containing the *Vie humaine* and the 2nd Pilgrimage, de *l'Ame*: both incomplete.

¹⁰ Ab. 1480, 106 leaves (leaf 1 of text wanting), with illuminations of nice little devils—red, green, tawny &c.—and damned souls, fires, angels, &c.

Hatfield, Cambridge (Univ. Kk. 1. 7, and Caius), Oxford (Univ. Coll. and Corpus), and in Caxton's edition of 1483. This version has 'somewhat of additions' as Caxton says, and some shortenings too, as the maker of both, the first translator, tells us in the MSS. Caxton leaves out the earlier englisier's interesting Epilog in the Egerton MS. This prose englisying of the *Sowle* has been copied and will be edited for the Society by Mr. Hans Koestner. Of the Pilgrimage of Jesus, no englisying is known.

As to the MS. Anglo-Saxon Psalters, Dr. Hy. Sweet has edited the oldest MS., the Vespasian, in his *Oldest English Texts* for the Society, and Mr. Harsley has edited the latest, c. 1150, Eadwine's Canterbury Psalter. The other MSS., except the Paris one, being interlinear versions,—some of the Roman-Latin redaction, and some of the Gallican,—Prof. Logeman has prepared for press a Parallel-Text edition of the first twelve Psalms, to start the complete work. He will do his best to get the Paris Psalter—tho' it is not an interlinear one—into this collective edition; but the additional matter, especially in the Verse-Psalms, is very difficult to manage. If the Paris text cannot be parallelised, it will form a separate volume. The Early English Psalters are all independent versions, and will follow separately in due course.

Through the good offices of the Examiners, some of the books for the Early-English Examinations of the University of London will be chosen from the Society's publications, the Committee having undertaken to supply such books to students at a large reduction in price. The net profits from these sales will be applied to the Society's Reprints.

Members are reminded that *fresh Subscribers are always wanted*, and that the Committee can at any time, on short notice, send to press an additional Thousand Pounds' worth of work.

The Subscribers to the Original Series must be prepared for the issue of the whole of the Early English *Lives of Saints*, sooner or later. The Society cannot leave out any of them, even though some are dull. The Sinners would doubtless be much more interesting. But in many Saints' Lives will be found valuable incidental details of our forefathers' social state, and all are worthful for the history of our language. The Lives may be lookt on as the religious romances or story-books of their period.

The Standard Collection of Saints' Lives in the Corpus and Ashmole MSS., the Harleian MS. 2277, &c. will repeat the Laud set, our No. 87, with additions, and in right order. (The foundation MS. (Laud 108) had to be printed first, to prevent quite unwieldy collations.) The Supplementary Lives from the Vernon and other MSS. will form one or two separate volumes.

Besides the Saints' Lives, Trevisa's englisying of *Bartholomæus de Proprietatibus Rerum*, the mediæval Cyclopædia of Science, &c., will be the Society's next big undertaking. An Editor for it is wanted. Prof. Napier of Oxford, wishing to have the whole of our MS. Anglo-Saxon in type, and accessible to students, will edit for the Society all the unprinted and other Anglo-Saxon Homilies which are not included in Thorpe's edition of Ælfric's prose,¹ Dr. Morris's of the Blickling Homilies, and Prof. Skeat's of Ælfric's Metrical Homilies. The late Prof. Kölbing left complete his text, for the Society, of the *Ancoren Riple*, from the best MS., with collations of the other four, and this will be edited for the Society by Dr. Thümmel. Mr. Harvey means to prepare an edition of the three MSS. of the *Earliest English Metrical Psalter*, one of which was edited by the late Mr. Stevenson for the Surtees Society.

Members of the Society will learn with pleasure that its example has been followed, not only by the Old French Text Society which has done such admirable work under its founders Profs. Paul Meyer and Gaston Paris, but also by the Early Russian Text Society, which was set on foot in 1877, and has since issued many excellent editions of old MS. Chronicles, &c.

Members will also note with pleasure the annexation of large tracts of our Early English territory by the important German contingent, the late Professors Zupitza and Kölbing, the living Hausknecht, Eikenkel, Haenisch, Kaluza, Hupe, Adam, Holthausen, Schick, Herzfeld, Brandeis, Sieper, Konrath, Wülfing, &c. Scandinavia has also sent us Prof. Erdmann and Dr. E. A. Kock; Holland, Prof. H. Logeman, who is now working in Belgium; France, Prof. Paul Meyer—with Gaston Paris as adviser (alas, now dead);—Italy, Prof. Lattanzi; Austria, Dr. von Fleischhacker; while America is represented by the late Prof. Child, by Dr. Mary Noyes Colvin, Miss Rickert, Profs. Mead, McKnight, Triggs, Perrin, Craig, &c. The sympathy, the ready help, which the Society's work has cald forth from the Continent and the United States, have been among the pleasantest experiences of the Society's life, a real aid and cheer amid all troubles and discouragements. All our Members are grateful for it, and recognise that the bond their work has woven between them and the lovers of language and antiquity across the seas is one of the most welcome results of the Society's efforts.

¹ Of these, Mr. Harsley is preparing a new edition, with collations of all the MSS. Many copies of Thorpe's book, not issued by the Ælfric Society, are still in stock.

Of the Vercelli Homilies, the Society has bought the copy made by Prof. G. Lattanzi.

ORIGINAL SERIES.

1. *Early English Alliterative Poems*, ab. 1380 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 16s. 1864
2. *Arthur*, ab. 1440, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 4s. "
3. *Lauder on the Dewtie of Kyngis*, &c., 1556, ed. F. Hall, D.C.L. 4s. "
4. *Sir Gawayne and the Green Knight*, ab. 1380, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. "
5. *Hume's Orthographie and Congruitie of the Britan Tongue*, ab. 1617, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4s. 1865
6. *Lancelot of the Laik*, ab. 1500, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 8s. "
7. *Genesis & Exodus*, ab. 1260, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 8s. "
8. *Morte Arthure*, ab. 1440, ed. E. Brock. 7s. "
9. *Thynne on Speght's*, ed. of Chaucer, A.D. 1599, ed. Dr. G. Kingsley and Dr. F. J. Furnivall. 10s. "
10. *Merlin*, ab. 1440, Part I., ed. H. B. Wheatley. 2s. 6d. "
11. *Lyndesay's Monarcho*, &c., 1552, Part I., ed. J. Small, M.A. 3s. "
12. *Wright's Chaste Wife*, ab. 1462, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 1s. "
13. *Sainte Marherete*, 1200-1380, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne; re-edited by Dr. Otto Glauning. [Out of print. 1866
14. *Kyng Horn, Floris and Blanchefour*, &c., ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby, D.D., re-ed. Dr. G. H. McKnight. 5s. "
15. *Political, Religious, and Love Poems*, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 7s. 6d. "
16. *The Book of Quinte Essence*, ab. 1460-70, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 1s. "
17. *Parallel Extracts from 45 MSS. of Piers the Plowman*, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 1s. "
18. *Hali Meidenhad*, ab. 1200, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne, re-edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall. [At Press. "
19. *Lyndesay's Monarcho*, &c., Part II., ed. J. Small, M.A. 3s. 6d. "
20. *Hampole's English Prose Treatises*, ed. Rev. G. G. Perry. 1s. [At Press. "
21. *Merlin*, Part II., ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4s. "
22. *Partenay or Lusignen*, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6s. "
23. *Dan Michel's Ayenbite of Inwyrt*, 1340, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. 6d. "
24. *Hymns to the Virgin and Christ; the Parliament of Devils*, &c., ab. 1430, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 8s. 1867
25. *The Stations of Rome, the Pilgrims' Sea-voyage*, with *Glene Maydenhod*, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 1s. "
26. *Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse*, from R. Thornton's MS., ed. Rev. G. G. Perry. 2s. [At Press. "
27. *Levin's Manipulus Vocabulorum, a ryming Dictionary*, 1570, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 12s. "
28. *William's Vision of Piers the Plowman*, 1362 A.D.; Text A, Part I., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6s. "
29. *Old English Homilies* (ab. 1220-30 A.D.). Series I, Part I. Edited by Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 7s. "
30. *Pierce the Ploughmans Crede*, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 2s. "
31. *Myro's Duties of a Parish Priest*, in Verse, ab. 1420 A.D., ed. E. Peacock. 4s. 1868
32. *Early English Meals and Manners: the Boke of Nourture of John Russell, the Bokes of Keruyage, Curtasye, and Demeanor, the Babees Boke, Urbanitatis*, &c., ed. F. J. Furnivall. 12s. "
33. *The Knight de la Tour Landry*, ab. 1440 A.D. A Book for Daughters, ed. T. Wright, M.A. [Reprinting. "
34. *Old English Homilies* (before 1300 A.D.). Series I, Part II., ed. R. Morris, LL.D. 8s. "
35. *Lyndesay's Works*, Part III.: *The Historie and Testament of Squyer Meldrum*, ed. F. Hall. 2s. "
36. *Merlin*, Part III. Ed. H. B. Wheatley. On Arthurian Localities, by J. S. Stuart Glennie. 12s. 1869
37. *Sir David Lyndesay's Works*, Part IV., *Ane Satyre of the Three Estaitis*. Ed. F. Hall, D.C.L. 4s. "
38. *William's Vision of Piers the Plowman*, Part II. Text B. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s. 6d. "
39. *Alliterative Romance of the Destruction of Troy*. Ed. D. Donaldson & G. A. Pantou. Pt. I. 10s. 6d. "
40. *English Gilds, their Statutes and Customs*, 1389 A.D. Edit. Toulmin Smith and Lucy T. Smith, with an Essay on Gilds and Trades-Unions, by Dr. L. Brentano. 21s. 1870
41. *William Lauder's Minor Poems*. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 3s. "
42. *Bernardus De Cura Rei Familiaris*, Early Scottish Prophecies, &c. Ed. J. R. Lumby, M.A. 2s. "
43. *Ratis Raving*, and other Moral and Religious Pieces. Ed. J. R. Lumby, M.A. 3s. "
44. *The Alliterative Romance of Joseph of Arimathea, or The Holy Grail: from the Vernon MS.; with W. de Worde's and Pynson's Lives of Joseph*: ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 5s. 1871
45. *King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care*, edited from 2 MSS., with an English translation, by Henry Sweet, Esq., B.A., Balliol College, Oxford. Part I. 10s. "
46. *Legends of the Holy Rood, Symbols of the Passion and Cross Poems*, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. "
47. *Sir David Lyndesay's Works*, Part V., ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 3s. "
48. *The Times' Whistle*, and other Poems, by R. C., 1616; ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6s. "
49. *An Old English Miscellany*, containing a Bestiary, Kentish Sermons, Proverbs of Alfred, and Religious Poems of the 13th cent., ed. from the MSS. by the Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 10s. 1873
50. *King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care*, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. Part II. 10s. "
51. *The Life of St Juliana*, 2 versions, A.D. 1230, with translations; ed. T. O. Cockayne & E. Brock. 2s. "
52. *Palladius on Husbandrie*, english (ab. 1420 A.D.), ed. Rev. Barton Lodge, M.A. Part I. 10s. "
53. *Old-English Homilies*, Series II., and three Hymns to the Virgin and God, 13th-century, with the music to two of them, in old and modern notation; ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 8s. 1873
54. *The Vision of Piers Plowman*, Text C: *Richard the Redeles* (by William, the author of the *Vision*) and *The Crowned King*; Part III., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 18s. "
55. *Gomerides*, a Romance, ab. 1440 A.D., ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. Part I. 3s. "
56. *The Gest Hystoriale of the Destruction of Troy*, in alliterative verse; ed. by D. Donaldson, Esq., and the late Rev. G. A. Pantou. Part II. 10s. 6d. 1874
57. *The Early English Version of the "Cursor Mundi"*; in four Texts, edited by the Rev. R. Morris, M.A., LL.D. Part I, with 2 photolithographic facsimiles. 10s. 6d. "
58. *The Blickling Homilies*, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. Part I. 8s. "
59. *The "Cursor Mundi,"* in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part II. 15s. 1875

60. *Meditacyuns on the Soper of our Lorde* (by Robert of Brunne), edited by J. M. Cowper. 2s. 6d. 1875
61. *The Romance and Prophecies of Thomas of Erceledoune*, from 5 MSS.; ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 10s. 6d. "
62. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part III. 15s. 1876
63. *The Blickling Homilies*, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part II. 7s. "
64. *Francis Thynne's Emblemes and Epigrams*, A.D. 1600, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 7s. "
65. *Be Domes Dage* (Bede's *De Die Judicii*), &c., ed. J. R. Lumby, B.D. 2s. "
66. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part IV., with 2 autotypes. 10s. 1877
67. *Notes on Piers Plowman*, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. Part I. 21s. "
68. The "Cursor Mundi," in 4 Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part V. 25s. 1878
69. *Adam Davie's 5 Dreams about Edward II.*, &c., ed. F. Furnivall, M.A. 5s. "
70. *Generydes*, a Romance, ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. Part II. 4s. "
71. *The Lay Folks Mass-Book*, four texts, ed. Rev. Canon Simmons. 25s. 1879
72. *Palladius on Husbandrie*, englisht (ab. 1420 A.D.). Part II. Ed. S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 15s. "
73. *The Blickling Homilies*, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part III. 10s. 1880
74. *English Works of Wyclif*, hitherto unprinted, ed. F. D. Matthew, Esq. 20s. "
75. *Catholicon Anglieum*, an early English Dictionary, from Lord Monson's MS. A.D. 1488, ed., with Introduction & Notes, by S. J. Hertridge, B.A.; and with a Preface by H. B. Wheatley. 20s. 1881
76. *Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints*, in MS. Cott. Jul. E 7., ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. Part I. 10s. "
77. *Beowulf*, the unique MS. autotyped and transliterated, edited by Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D. 25s. 1882
78. *The Fifty Earliest English Wills*, in the Court of Probate, 1387-1439, ed. by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 7s. "
79. *King Alfred's Orosius*, from Lord Tollemache's 9th century MS., Part I, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 18s. 1883
- 79b. *Extra Volume*. Facsimile of the Epinal Glossary, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 15s. "
80. *The Early-English Life of St. Katherine* and its Latin Original, ed. Dr. Eikenkel. 12s. 1884
81. *Piers Plowman: Notes, Glossary, &c.* Part IV, completing the work, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. 18s. "
82. *Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints*, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7., ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. Part II. 12s. 1885
83. *The Oldest English Texts, Charters, &c.*, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 20s. "
84. *Additional Analogs to 'The Wright's Chaaste Wife,'* No. 12, by W. A. Clouston. 1s. 1886
85. *The Three Kings of Cologne.* 2 English Texts, and 1 Latin, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 17s. "
86. *Prose Lives of Women Saints*, ab. 1610 A.D., ed. from the unique MS. by Dr. C. Horstmann. 12s. "
87. *Early English Verse Lives of Saints* (earliest version), Laud MS. 108, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 20s. 1887
88. *Hy. Bradshaw's Life of St. Werburgh* (Pyndon, 1521), ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 10s. "
89. *Voices and Virtues*, from the unique MS., ab. 1200 A.D., ed. Dr. F. Holthausen. Part I. 8s. 1888
90. *Anglo-Saxon and Latin Rule of St. Benet*, interlinear Glosses, ed. Dr. H. Logeman. 12s. "
91. *Two Fifteenth-Century Cookery-Books*, ab. 1480-1450, edited by Mr. T. Austin. 10s. "
92. *Kadwine's Canterbury Psalter*, from the Trin. Cambr. MS., ab. 1150 A.D., ed. F. Harsley, B.A. Pt. I. 12s. 1889
93. *Defensor's Liber Scintillarum*, edited from the MSS. by Ernest Rhodes, B.A. 12s. "
94. *Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints*, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7, Part III., ed. Prof. Skeat, Litt. D., LL.D. 12s. 1890
95. *The Old-English version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History*, re-ed. by Dr. Thomas Miller. Part I, § 1. 18s. "
96. *The Old-English version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History*, re-ed. by Dr. Thomas Miller. Pt. I, § 2. 15s. 1891
97. *The Earliest English Prose Psalter*, edited from its 2 MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring. Part I. 15s. "
98. *Minor Poems of the Vernon MS.*, Part I., ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 20s. 1892
99. *Cursor Mundi*. Part VI. Preface, Notes, and Glossary, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. "
100. *Capgrave's Life of St. Katharine*, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann, with Forewords by Dr. Furnivall. 20s. 1893
101. *Cursor Mundi*. Part VII. Essay on the MSS., their Dialects, &c., by Dr. H. Hupe. 10s. "
102. *Laufano's Chirurgie*, ab. 1400 A.D., ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker. Part I. 20s. 1894
103. *The Legend of the Cross*, from a 12th century MS., &c., ed. Prof. A. S. Napier, M.A., Ph.D. 7s. 6d. "
104. *The Exeter Book* (Anglo-Saxon Poems), re-edited from the unique MS. by I. Gollancz, M.A. Part I. 20s. 1895
105. *The Prymer or Lay-Folks' Prayer-Book*, Camb. Univ. MS., ab. 1420, ed. Henry Littlehales. Part I. 10s. "
106. *R. Misyng's Fire of Love and Mending of Life* (Hampole), 1434, 1435, ed. Rev. R. Harvey, M.A. 15s. 1896
107. *The English Conquest of Ireland*, A.D. 1166-1185, 2 Texts, 1425, 1440, Pt. I, ed. Dr. Furnivall. 15s. "
108. *Child-Marriages and Divorces, Trothplights, &c.* Chester Depositions, 1561-6, ed. Dr. Furnivall. 15s. 1897
109. *The Prymer or Lay-Folks' Prayer-Book*, ab. 1420, ed. Henry Littlehales. Part II. 10s. "
110. *The Old-English Version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History*, ed. Dr. T. Miller. Part II, § 1. 15s. 1898
111. *The Old-English Version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History*, ed. Dr. T. Miller. Part II, § 2. 15s. "
112. *Merlin*, Part IV: Outlines of the Legend of Merlin, by Prof. W. E. Mead, Ph.D. 15s. 1899
113. *Queen Elizabeth's Englishings of Boethius, Plutarch &c. &c.*, ed. Miss C. Pemberton. 15s. "
114. *Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints*, Part IV and last, ed. Prof. Skeat, Litt. D., LL.D. 10s. 1900
115. *Jaob's Well*, edited from the unique Salisbury Cathedral MS. by Dr. A. Brandeis. Part I. 10s. "
116. *An Old-English Martyrology*, re-edited by Dr. G. Herzfeld. 10s. "
117. *Minor Poems of the Vernon MS.*, edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall. Part II. 15s. 1901
118. *The Lay Folks' Catechism*, ed. by Canon Simmons and Rev. H. E. Nolloth, M.A. 5s. "
119. *Robert of Brunne's Handlyng Synne* (1303), and its French original, re-ed. by Dr. Furnivall. Pt. I. 10s. "
120. *The Rule of St. Benet*, in Northern Prose and Verse, & Caxton's Summary, ed. Dr. E. A. Kock. 15s. 1902
121. *The Laud MS. Troy-Book*, ed. from the unique Laud MS. 595, by Dr. J. E. Wülfing. Part I. 15s. "
122. *The Laud MS. Troy-Book*, ed. from the unique Laud MS. 595, by Dr. J. E. Wülfing. Part II. 20s. 1903
123. *Robert of Brunne's Handlyng Synne* (1303), and its French original, re-ed. by Dr. Furnivall. Pt. II. 10s. "
124. *Twenty-six Political and other Poems* from Digby MS. 102 &c., ed. by Dr. J. Kail. Part I. 10s. 1904
125. *Medieval Records of a London City Church*, ed. Henry Littlehales. Part I. 10s. "
126. *An Alphabet of Tales*, in Northern English, from the Latin, ed. Mrs. M. M. Banks. Part I. 10s. "

127. *An Alphabet of Tales*, in Northern English, from the Latin, ed. Mrs. M. M. Banks. Part II. 10s. 196
 128. *Medieval Records of a London City Church*, ed. Henry Littlehales. Part II. 10s. "
 129. *The English Register of Godstow Nunnery*, ed. from the MSS. by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Pt. I. 10s. "
 130. *The English Register of Godstow Nunnery*, ed. from the MSS. by the Rev. Dr. A. Clark. Pt. II. 15s. 196
 131. *The Brut*, or *Chronicle of England*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. F. Brie. Part I. 10s. "
 132. *John Metham's Works*, edited from the unique MS. by Dr. Hardin Craig. "
 133. *The English Register of Osney Abbey*, by Oxford, ed. by the Rev. Dr. A. Clark. Part I. 15s. 196
 134. *The Coventry Leet Book*, edited by Miss M. Dormer Harris. Part I. 15s. "
 135. *The Coventry Leet Book*, edited by Miss M. Dormer Harris. Part II. [At Press. 196
 136. *Capgrave's Lives of St. Augustine and St. Gilbert of Sempringham*, edited by J. J. Munro [At Press. "

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1867-1907 (one guinea each year) are:—

- I. *William of Palerne*; or, *William and the Werwolf*. Re-edited by Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 13s. 186
 II. *Early English Pronunciation with especial Reference to Shakspeare and Chaucer*, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part I. 10s. "
 III. *Caxton's Book of Courtesy*, in Three Versions. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 5s. 188
 IV. *Havelok the Dane*. Re-edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s. "
 V. *Chaucer's Boethius*. Edited from the two best MSS. by Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 12s. "
 VI. *Chevalere Assigne*. Re-edited from the unique MS. by Lord Aldenham, M.A. 8s. "
 VII. *Early English Pronunciation*, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part II. 10s. 186
 VIII. *Queene Elizabethes Achademy, &c.* Ed. F. J. Furnivall. *Essays on early Italian and German Books of Courtesy*, by W. M. Rossetti and Dr. E. Oswald. 12s. "
 IX. *Awdeley's Fraternity of Vocabendes, Harman's Cveat, &c.* Ed. E. Viles & F. J. Furnivall. 5s. "
 X. *Andrew Boorde's Introduction of Knowledge, 1547, Dyetary of Keith, 1548, Barnes in Defence of the Berde, 1542-3.* Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 18s. 187
 XI. *Barbour's Bruce*, Part I. Ed. from MSS. and editions, by Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 12s. "
 XII. *England in Henry VIII's Time: a Dialogue between Cardinal Pole & Lupset*, by Thom. Starkey, Chaplain to Henry VIII. Ed. J. M. Cowper. Part II. 12s. (Part I. is No. XXXII, 1878, 8s.) 187
 XIII. *A Supplication of the Beggars*, by Simon Fish, 1528-9 A.D., ed. F. J. Furnivall; with *A Supplication to our Moste Soueraigne Lorde; A Supplication of the Poore Commons; and The Decaye of England by the Great Multitude of Sheep*, ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6s. "
 XIV. *Early English Pronunciation*, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part III. 10s. "
 XV. *Robert Crowley's Thirty-One Epigrams, Voyce of the Last Trumpet, Way to Wealth, &c., A.D. 1550-1*, edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 12s. 162
 XVI. *Chaucer's Treatise on the Astrolabe*. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 6s. "
 XVII. *The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., with 4 Tracts (1542-48)*, ed. Dr. Murray. Part I. 10s. "
 XVIII. *The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D.*, ed. Dr. Murray. Part II. 8s. 187
 XIX. *Cure Ladyes Myrroure*, A.D. 1530, ed. Rev. J. H. Blunt, M.A. 24s. "
 XX. *Lovelich's History of the Holy Grail* (ab. 1450 A.D.), ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part I. 8s. 187
 XXI. *Barbour's Bruce*, Part II., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 4s. "
 XXII. *Henry Brinklow's Complaynt of Roderick Mors* (ab. 1542): and *The Lamentacion of a Christian against the Cittle of London*, made by Roderigo Mors, A.D. 1545. Ed. J. M. Cowper. 9s. "
 XXIII. *Early English Pronunciation*, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part IV. 10s. "
 XXIV. *Lovelich's History of the Holy Grail*, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part II. 10s. 187
 XXV. *Guy of Warwick*, 15th-century Version, ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part I. 20s. "
 XXVI. *Guy of Warwick*, 15th-century Version, ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part II. 14s. 187
 XXVII. *Bp. Fisher's English Works* (died 1535), ed. by Prof. J. E. B. Mayor. Part I, the Text. 16s. "
 XXVIII. *Lovelich's Holy Grail*, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part III. 10s. 187
 XXIX. *Barbour's Bruce*. Part III., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 21s. "
 XXX. *Lovelich's Holy Grail*, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part IV. 15s. 187
 XXXI. *The Alliterative Romance of Alexander and Dindimus*, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6s. "
 XXXII. *Starkey's "England in Henry VIII's time."* Pt. I. *Starkey's Life and Letters*, ed. S. J. Hertridge. 8s. 187
 XXXIII. *Gesta Romanorum* (englisht ab. 1440), ed. S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 15s. "
 XXXIV. *The Charlemagne Romances:—1. Sir Ferumbras*, from Ashm. MS. 33, ed. S. J. Hertridge. 15s. "
 XXXV. *Charlemagne Romances:—2. The Sege of Melayne*, Sir Otuell, &c., ed. S. J. Hertridge. 12s. 186
 XXXVI. *Charlemagne Romances:—3. Lyf of Charles the Grete*, Pt. I., ed. S. J. Hertridge. 16s. "
 XXXVII. *Charlemagne Romances:—4. Lyf of Charles the Grete*, Pt. II., ed. S. J. Hertridge. 15s. 186
 XXXVIII. *Charlemagne Romances:—5. The Sowdone of Babylone*, ed. Dr. Hausknecht. 15s. "
 XXXIX. *Charlemagne Romances:—6. Rauf Colyear*, Roland, Otuel, &c., ed. S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 15s. 186
 XL. *Charlemagne Romances:—7. Huon of Burdeux*, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part I. 15s. "
 XLI. *Charlemagne Romances:—8. Huon of Burdeux*, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Pt. II. 15s. 188
 XLII. *Guy of Warwick: 2 texts* (Auchinleck MS. and Caius MS.), ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part I. 15s. "
 XLIII. *Charlemagne Romances:—9. Huon of Burdeux*, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Pt. III. 15s. 188
 XLIV. *Charlemagne Romances:—10. The Four Sons of Aymon*, ed. Miss Octavia Richardson. Pt. I. 15s. "
 XLV. *Charlemagne Romances:—11. The Four Sons of Aymon*, ed. Miss O. Richardson. Pt. II. 20s. 188
 XLVI. *Sir Bevis of Hamton*, from the Auchinleck and other MSS., ed. Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D. Part I. 10s. "
 XLVII. *The Wars of Alexander*, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. 20s. 186
 XLVIII. *Sir Bevis of Hamton*, ed. Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D. Part II. 10s. "
 XLIX. *Guy of Warwick, 2 texts* (Auchinleck and Caius MSS.), Pt. II., ed. Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D. 15s. 185

I. Charlemagne Romances :—12. Huon of Burdeux, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A.	Part IV.	5s.	1887
II. Torrent of Portyngale, from the unique MS. in the Chetham Library, ed. E. Adam, Ph.D.		10s.	"
III. Ballein's Dialogue against the Feuer Pestilence, 1578 (ed. 1, 1564). Ed. M. & A. H. Bullen.		10s.	1888
IV. Vicary's Anatomie of the Body of Man, 1548, ed. 1577, ed. F. J. & Percy Furnivall.	Part I.	15s.	"
V. Caxton's Englishing of Alain Chartier's Curial, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall & Prof. P. Meyer.		5s.	"
VI. Barbour's Bruce, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D.	Part IV.	5s.	1889
VII. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S.	Pt. V., the present English Dialects.	25s.	"
VIII. Caxton's Eneydos, A.D. 1490, coll. with its French, ed. M. T. Culley, M.A. & Dr. F. J. Furnivall.		18s.	1890
IX. Caxton's Blanchardyn & Eglantine, c. 1489, extracts from ed. 1595, & French, ed. Dr. L. Kellner.		17s.	"
X. Guy of Warwick, 2 texts (Auchinleck and Caius MSS.), Part III., ed. Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D.		15s.	1891
XI. Lydgate's Temple of Glass, re-edited from the MSS. by Dr. J. Schick.		15s.	"
XII. Hoccleve's Minor Poems, I., from the Phillipps and Durham MSS., ed. F. J. Furnivall, Ph.D.		15s.	1892
XIII. The Chester Plays, re-edited from the MSS. by the late Dr. Hermann Deimling.	Part I.	15s.	"
XIV. Thomas a Kempis's De Imitatione Christi, englished ab. 1440, & 1502, ed. Prof. J. K. Ingram.		15s.	1893
XV. Caxton's Godfrey of Boleyn, or Last Siege of Jerusalem, 1481, ed. Dr. Mary N. Colvin.		15s.	"
XVI. Sir Bevis of Hampton, ed. Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D.	Part III.	15s.	1894
XVII. Lydgate's and Burgh's Secrees of Philisoffres, ab. 1445—50, ed. R. Steele, B.A.		15s.	"
XVIII. The Three Kings' Sons, a Romance, ab. 1500, Part I., the Text, ed. Dr. Furnivall.		10s.	1895
XIX. Melusine, the prose Romance, ab. 1500, Part I., the Text, ed. A. K. Donald.		20s.	"
XX. Lydgate's Assembly of the Gods, ed. Prof. Oscar L. Triggs, M.A., Ph.D.		15s.	1896
XXI. The Dighy Plays, edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall.		15s.	"
XXII. The Towneley Plays, ed. Geo. England and A. W. Pollard, M.A.		15s.	1897
XXIII. Hoccleve's Regiment of Princes, 1411-12, and 14 Poems, edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall.		15s.	"
XXIV. Hoccleve's Minor Poems, II., from the Ashburnham MS., ed. I. Gollancz, M.A.	[At Press.		"
XXV. Secreta Secretorum, 3 prose Englishings, by Jas. Yonge, 1428, ed. R. Steele, B.A.	Part I.	20s.	1898
XXVI. Speculum Guidonis de Warwyk, edited by Miss G. L. Morrill, M.A., Ph.D.		10s.	"
XXVII. George Ashby's Poems, &c., ed. Miss Mary Bateson.		15s.	1899
XXVIII. Lydgate's DeGuilleville's Pilgrimage of the Life of Man, 1426, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall.	Part I.	10s.	"
XXIX. The Life and Death of Mary Magdalene, by T. Robinson, c. 1620, ed. Dr. H. O. Sommer.		5s.	"
XXX. Caxton's Dialogues, English and French, c. 1488, ed. Henry Bradley, M.A.		10s.	1900
XXXI. Lydgate's Two Nightingale Poems, ed. Dr. Otto Glauning.		5s.	"
XXXII. Gower's Confessio Amantis, edited by G. C. Macaulay, M.A.	Vol. I.	15s.	"
XXXIII. Gower's Confessio Amantis, edited by G. C. Macaulay, M.A.	Vol. II.	15s.	1901
XXXIV. Lydgate's DeGuilleville's Pilgrimage of the Life of Man, 1426, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall.	Pt. II.	10s.	"
XXXV. Lydgate's Reason and Sensuality, edited by Dr. E. Sieper.	Part I.	5s.	"
XXXVI. Alexander Scott's Poems, 1568, from the unique Edinburgh MS., ed. A. K. Donald, B.A.		10s.	1902
XXXVII. William of Shoreham's Poems, re-ed. from the unique MS. by Dr. M. Konrath.	Part I.	10s.	"
XXXVIII. Two Coventry Corpus-Christi Plays, re-edited by Hardin Craig, M.A.		10s.	"
XXXIX. Le Morte Arthur, re-edited from the Harleian MS. 2252 by Prof. Bruce, Ph.D.		15s.	1903
LXXXIX. Lydgate's Reason and Sensuality, edited by Dr. E. Sieper.	Part II.	15s.	"
XC. English Fragments from Latin Medieval Service-Books, ed. by Hy. Littlehales.		5s.	"
XCI. The Macro Plays, from Mr. Gurney's unique MS., ed. Dr. Furnivall and A. W. Pollard, M.A.		10s.	1904
XCII. Lydgate's DeGuilleville's Pilgrimage of the Life of Man, Part III., ed. Miss Looock.		10s.	"
XCIII. Lovell's Romance of Merlin, from the unique MS., ed. Dr. E. A. Kock.	Part I.	10s.	"
XCV. Respublica, a Play on Social England, A.D. 1553, ed. L. A. Magnus, LL.B.		12s.	1905
XCVI. Lovell's History of the Holy Grail, Pt. V.: The Legend of the Holy Grail, by Dorothy Kempe.		6s.	"
XCVII. Mirk's Festial, edited from the MSS. by Dr. Erbe.	Part I.	12s.	"
XCVIII. Lydgate's Troy Book, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Hy. Bergen.	Part I.	15s.	1906
XCVIII. Skelton's Magnificence, edited by Dr. R. L. Ramsay, with an Introduction.	7s. 6d.	[At Press.	"
XCIX. The Romance of Emaré, re-edited from the MS. by Miss Edith Rickert, Ph.D.		7s. 6d.	"
C. The Harrowing of Hell, and The Gospel of Nicodemus, re-ed. by Prof. Hulme, M.A., Ph.D.		[At Press.	1907
CI. Ballads and Carols from Jn. Hyde's Balliol MS., edited by Dr. R. Dyboski.		[At Press.	"
CII.			1908
CIII.			"
CIV. Lydgate's Troy Book, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Hy. Bergen.	Part II.	[At Press.	1909

EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY TEXTS PREPARING.

Besides the Texts named as at press on p. 12 of the Cover of the Early English Text Society's last Books, the following Texts are also slowly preparing for the Society:—

ORIGINAL SERIES.

- The Earliest English Prose Psalter, ed. Dr. K. D. Buelbring. Part II.
 The Earliest English Verse Psalter, 3 texts, ed. Rev. R. Harvey, M.A.
 Anglo-Saxon Poems, from the Vercelli MS., re-edited by Prof. I. Gollancz, M.A.
 Anglo-Saxon Glosses to Latin Prayers and Hymns, edited by Dr. F. Holthausen.
 All the Anglo-Saxon Homilies and Lives of Saints not accessible in English editions, including those of the Vercelli MS. &c., edited by Prof. Napier, M.A., Ph.D.

- The Anglo-Saxon Psalms; all the MSS. in Parallel Texts, ed. Dr. H. Logeman and F. Harsley, B.A.
Beowulf, a critical Text, &c., edited by a Pupil of the late Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.
Byrhtferth's Handbooe, ed. by Prof. G. Hempl.
Early English Confessionals, ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
The Seven Sages, in the Northern Dialect, from a Cotton MS., edited by Dr. Squires.
The Master of the Game, a Book of Huntynge for Hen. V. when Prince of Wales. (*Editor wanted*)
Alfred's Rule of Nuns, &c., edited from the Vernon MS., by the Rev. Canon H. R. Bramley, M.A.
Early English Verse Lives of Saints, Standard Collection, from the Harl. MS. (*Editor wanted*)
A Lapidary, from Lord Tollemache's MS., &c., edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
Early English Deeds and Documents, from unique MSS., ed. Dr. Lorenz Morsbach.
Gilbert Banastre's Poems, and other *Boccaccio* englishings, ed. by Prof. Dr. Max Förster.
Lanfranc's Cirurgie, ab. 1400 A.D., ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker, Part II.
William of Nassington's Mirror of Life, from Jn. of Waldby, edited by J. A. Herbert, M.A.
More Early English Wills from the Probate Registry at Somerset House. (*Editor wanted*)
Early Lincoln Wills and Documents from the Bishops' Registers, &c., edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall.
Early Canterbury Wills, edited by William Cowper, B.A., and J. Meadows Cowper.
Early Norwich Wills, edited by Walter Rye and F. J. Furnivall.
Early Lyrical Poems from the Harl. MS. 2253, re-edited by Prof. Hall Griffin, M.A.
Alliterative Prophecies, edited from the MSS. by Prof. Brandl, Ph.D.
Miscellaneous Alliterative Poems, edited from the MSS. by Dr. L. Morsbach.
Bird and Beast Poems, a collection from MSS., edited by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Boire Mori, &c., from the Lichfield MS. 16, ed. Mrs. L. Grindon, LL.A., and Miss Florence Gilbert.
Nicholas Trivet's French Chronicle, from Sir A. Acland-Hood's unique MS. (*Editor wanted*)
Early English Homilies in Harl. 2276 &c., c. 1400, ed. J. Friedländer.
Extracts from the Registers of Boughton, ed. Hy. Littlehales, Esq.
The Diary of Prior Moore of Worcester, A.D. 1518-35, from the unique MS., ed. Henry Littlehales, Esq.
The Fore Caitif, edited from its MSS., by Mr. Peake.
Trevise's englisht Vegetius on the Art of War, MS. 30 Magd. Coll. Oxf., ed. L. C. Wharton, M.A.
Poems attributed to Richard Maydenstone, from MS. Rawl. A 389, edited by Dr. W. Heuser.
Knighthood and Battle, a verse-Vegetius from a Pembroke Coll. MS., Cambr., ed. Dr. R. Dyboski.

EXTRA SERIES.

- Bp. Fisher's English Works, Pt. II., with his *Life and Letters*, ed. Rev. Ronald Bayne, B.A. [*At Press*].
Sir Tristrem, from the unique Auchinleck MS., edited by George F. Black.
John of Arderne's Surgery, c. 1425, ed. J. F. Payne, M.D.
De Guilleville's Pilgrimage of the Soule, edited by Prof. Dr. Leon Kellner.
Vicary's Anatomie, 1548, from the unique MS. copy by George Jeans, edited by F. J. & Percy Furnivall.
Vicary's Anatomie, 1548, ed. 1577, edited by F. J. & Percy Furnivall. Part II. [*At Press*].
A Compilation of Surgerye, from H. de Mandeville and Lanfrank, A.D. 1392, ed. Dr. J. F. Payne.
William Staunton's St. Patrick's Purgatory, &c., ed. Mr. G. P. Krapp, U.S.A.
Trevise's Bartholomews de Proprietatibus Rerum, re-edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
Bullein's Dialogue against the Feuer Pestilence, 1564, 1573, 1578. Ed. A. H. and M. Bullen. Part II.
The Romance of Boetius and Sidrae, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
The Romance of Clariodus, and *Sir Amadas*, re-edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Sir Degrevant, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. Luick.
Robert of Brunne's Chronicle of England, from the Inner Temple MS., ed. by Prof. W. E. Mead, Ph.D.
Maundeville's Voiage and Travaile, re-edited from the Cotton MS. Titus C. 16, &c., by Miss M. Bateson.
Avowyng of Arthur, re-edited from the unique Ireland MS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Guy of Warwick, Copland's version, edited by a pupil of the late Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.
Awdelay's Poems, re-edited from the unique MS. Douce 302, by Prof. Dr. E. Wülfing.
The Wyse Chylde and other early Treatises on Education, Northwich School, Harl. 2099 &c., ed. G. Collar, B.
Caxton's Dichtes and Sayengis of Philosophers, 1477, with Lord Tollemache's MS. version, ed. S. I. Butler, Esq.
Caxton's Book of the Ordre of Chyualry, collated with Loutfut's Scotch copy. (*Editor wanted*)
Lydgate's Dance of Death, ed. Miss Florence Warren.
Lydgate's Lyfe of our Lady, ed. by Prof. Georg Fiedler, Ph.D.
Lydgate's Life of St. Edmund, edited from the MSS. by Dr. Axel Erdmann.
Lydgate's Triumph Poems, edited by Dr. E. Sieper.
Lydgate's Minor Poems, edited by Dr. Otto Glauning.
Richard Coeur de Lion, re-edited from Harl. MS. 4690, by Prof. Hausknecht, Ph.D.
The Romance of Athelstan, re-edited by a pupil of the late Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D.
The Romance of Sir Degare, re-edited by Dr. Breul.
The Gospel of Nichodemus, edited by Ernest Riedel.
Mulcaster's Positions 1581, and *Elementarie* 1582, ed. Dr. Th. Klaehr, Dresden.
Walton's verse Boethius de Consolatione, edited by Mark H. Liddell, U.S.A.
Sir Landeval and Sir Launfal, edited by Dr. Zimmermann.
Rolland's Seven Sages, the Scottish version of 1560, edited by George F. Black.
Partonope of Blois, edited from the complete MS., &c., by Dr. A. T. Böttker.
Early English Fabliaux, a Collection, edited by Prof. George H. McKnight, Ph.D.

○ **The Romance of Emaré.**

Early English Text Society.

Extra Series. No. xcix.

1906.

BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 13, UNTER DEN LINDEN.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

The Romance of Emaré.

RE-EDITED FROM THE MS.,
WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY

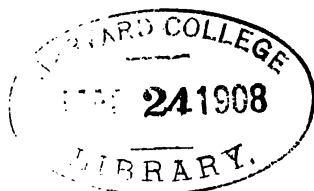
BY

EDITH RICKERT, PH.D.

LONDON :

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY
By KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LIMITED,
DRYDEN HOUSE, 43, GERRARD STREET, SOHO, W.
1906 (*issued in 1908*).

~~Eng Lit 1582~~
11478.99



Subscription fund

Extra Series, No. XCIX.

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED, LONDON AND BUNGAY

PREFACE.

THIS edition was prepared in 1898-99; but as it had to wait its turn on the list of the Early English Text Society, it has been completely revised, and extended in the light of several fresh publications on the subject, which have appeared in the meantime. My thanks are due to Dr. Furnivall for good advice on many occasions, and to Professor Manly, of the University of Chicago, for reading the proofs.

London, July 19, 1907.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION :—	
§ 1. MANUSCRIPT	ix
§ 2. EDITIONS	xi
§ 3. DIALECT	xiii
§ 4. METRE	xviii
§ 5. STYLE	xxii
§ 6. AUTHOR AND DATE	xxviii
§ 7. IMMEDIATE SOURCE	xxviii
§ 8. ORIGINS	xxxii
§ 9. CONCLUSION	xlvi
APPENDIX	xlix
TEXT	1
NOTES	33
GLOSSARIAL INDEX	49
INDEX OF NAMES	55

INTRODUCTION.

- § 1. *Manuscript*, pp. ix-xi.
 § 2. *Editions*, pp. xi-xiii.
 § 3. *Dialect*, pp. xiii-xviii.
 § 4. *Metre*, pp. xviii-xxii.
 § 5. *Style*, pp. xxii-xxvii.

- § 6. *Author and Date*, p. xxviii.
 § 7. *Immediate Source*, pp. xxviii-xxxii.
 § 8. *Origins*, pp. xxxii-xlvi.
 § 9. *Conclusion*, p. xlviii.

§ 1. THE MANUSCRIPT.

MS. Cotton Caligula A ii, in the British Museum, consists of two paper quartos, originally marked Vespasian D 8 and Vespasian D 21,¹ bound together with the present designation before 1654.²

Vespasian D 8, which contains *Emaré* (fols. 71-76) is, in the main, a collection of English verse (fols. 3-139);³ Vespasian D 21 contains statutes of the Carthusian order, 1411-1504 (fols. 144-210); fols. 142, 143 seem to be the parchment cover of Vespasian D 21;⁴ and fols. 1, 2, 140, 141, blank pages inserted when the two volumes were bound together.⁵

Vespasian D 21, in the 16th century, belonged to a Cambridgeshire family, the Cookes of Milton;⁶ and very possibly came from Denney Abbey, about 7½ miles north of Cambridge.⁷ The

¹ In a 17th century hand on fols. 3, 140.

² They are not mentioned in the two earliest catalogues extant; while in the third, compiled before 1654, Caligula A ii is entered with a table of contents corresponding to the *Elenchus* on fol. 1.

³ Together with a translation from John of Bordeaux of a treatise on pestilence, and a form of confession in prose; also four prescriptions, and a short Latin chronicle.

⁴ Fol. 143b contains the signature "Thomas Cooke gen)," which is plainly blotted on fol. 144a. Fol. 142 is blank and about ½ inch narrower than 143, as if it had been folded upon itself in the binding, in such a way that it brings the two rough sides of the parchment together.

⁵ Fol. 1 contains the 17th century *Elenchus*. Fols. 1 and 2 show no water-marks, but the marks on fols. 140, 141 are different from all others in the book, and these folios are also shorter than the others, and with the lower edges untrimmed. In all four, the paper is thinner and of a different quality. In fols. 140, 141 the grain runs across, not down, the page.

⁶ A second signature on fol. 143b is "Thomas Cooke de Mylton)." The writer was born in 1541, the elder son of Judge William Cooke, lord of the manor (see latter's will in Somerset House).

⁷ At least, the Cookes seem to have built a new house out of its stones, when it was demolished in 1538 (*History of the Parish of Milton*, Camb. Antiq. Soc., XI, 1869, p. 28).

only clue to the origin of Vespasian D 8, the inscription "Donum Jo. Rogers" (fol. 3), in a 16th century hand, is too slight to be of use.¹

Its date, however, can be ascertained within narrow limits. It contains Lydgate's *Nightingale* (fols. 59-64b), written not before 1446, almost certainly in that year;² likewise a short Latin chronicle of England (fols. 109-110), which is carried down to the reign of Henry VI by the hand that seems to have written all the other pieces³ (except the four prescriptions on fol. 13b), while a second hand adds a note of Henry's death and the reign of Edward IV, and a third, the reign of Richard III. It is highly probable, then, that the bulk of the MS. was copied between 1446 and 1460.⁴

It shows a great mixture and confusion of forms:

1. Dentals.

(a) Interchange of d and th (=þ, ð) in all positions, as: powȝtur, donder, dey; vnther, wordy (worthy), erdly; hondereth (hundred).

(b) Interchange of t and th (=þ) in all positions, as: thylle (tylle), tho (to); þowȝpur; knyȝth, whythe (white), etc.⁵

2. The inflectional and unaccented stem vowel. The proportions in *Emaré* alone, are as follows: -es 89, -ys 20, -us 18; -ur 97, -er 26, -yr 17; -ylle 18, -ulle 9, -elle 3.⁶

¹ Five men of that name, during the 16th century alone, are included in the *Dictionary of National Biography*.

² Lydgate's *Minor Poems*, ed. Glauning (E.E.T.S., Extra Series, LXXX), 1900, pp. xxxvii-xxxviii.

³ This is not absolutely certain. The letters are formed similarly, but there is some variation in fineness and closeness. However, there is no abrupt break; and the gradual loosening of the hand, with occasional recurrences to closer writing, is better explained on the hypothesis of different times and moods than of different scribes.

⁴ Cf. also Glauning, *op. cit.*, p. xi.

⁵ This confusion in writing seems to mark a pronunciation in which the front of the tongue is pressed hard against the upper teeth, with an inevitable thickening of the dental sound. In Mid-Yorkshire such pronunciation is marked, affecting d initial and before a vowel, and initial and final t. Cf. C. Clough Robinson, *A Glossary of Words Pertaining to the Dialect of Mid-Yorkshire*, London, 1876, pp. xiv, xvii-xviii, and p. xv below. It is found extensively also in *Sir Gowther*.

⁶ The -u seems to point to West Midland influence as the -y to Northern, and the -e to Southern. A peculiarity which may point to the home of the author or of the scribe is the use of gh to represent the sound th, as in sygh (= syth, 560), kygh (= kyth, 594). This survives to-day in the name of the town Keighley (pronounced Keithley) in the West Riding (cf. p. xvii below).

3. Partial palatalization of k : mykylle, mychylle ; sykyngre, worche, ylke, euerychone, etc.¹

4. The insertion of inorganic ȝ or gh, as in kowȝpe, grygh̃t, etc.

The present MS., then, may be a Southern copy taken directly from a MS. written in the original dialect, including certain West Midland and Northern spellings by reason of proximity to these districts ; but the irregularity and variety of the forms suggest rather that it has passed through several hands.

The MS. is incomplete, eight stanzas of *Sussan*, the first piece, being lost and a portion of the *Eustache*, which breaks off on fol. 139b.

Of the 139 leaves, about 93 contain romances or tales ; 14½, three didactic poems by Lydgate ; 26, short religious poems, chiefly lyrics ;² and 5½ prose.

Of the twelve long narrative poems, eight are romances proper : (1) *Eglamour of Artas*, (2) *Octavian Emperor*,³ (3) *Launfal Miles*,³ (4) *Lybeaus Disconus*,³ (5) *Emaré*, (6) *Sege of Ierusalem*, (7) *Cheuelere Assigne*, and (8) *Isumbras* ; four are religious tales or romances : (9) *Sussan*, (10) *Ypotys*, (11) *Owayne Miles*, (12) *Tundale*.

From the plain workman-like character of the MS. and its marked religious and didactic element, it would seem to have been a tale book copied in some monastery.

§ 2. EDITIONS.

1. Ritson, *Ancient English Metrical Romances*,⁴ London, 1802, II, 204–247, with a list of original readings, III, 222, of corrections, III, 440, of conjectural emendations, III, 443, and full notes, III, 323–33. The text is practically correct, but does not indicate the graphic peculiarities of the MS. : p is printed as th, medial and

¹ The partial palatalization might be accounted for by the passing of the MS. through the hands of several scribes ; but it might also have belonged to the dialect.

² Three hortatory religious poems : *Carta Ihesu Christi*, *The Stacyonys of Rome*, *Trentale Sancti Gregori* ; two lives of saints, *Ierome* and *Eustache* ; 14 religious lyrics.

³ Thought by Sarrazin and Kaluza to be by the same author, Thomas Chestre, who certainly wrote *Launfal*. They are found together, as are also 6, 7, 8, and 10, 11, being separated from the other romances by religious matter. *Emaré* stands alone between a short prayer in verse and the *Carta Ihesu Christi*.

⁴ Reprinted by Edmund Goldsmid, Edinburgh, 1885, with a few MS. readings, but also with fresh errors. Kölbing published a collation of Ritson with the MS., *Englische Studien*, XV, 248.

final ȝ as gh, initial ȝ as y; u and v, and i and y are not according to the MS.; the tail to n is disregarded except where I give the expansion in my notes, the tail to r always, and the crossing of ll and h; the contractions for ur, us, are printed er, es; contractions are expanded, and with the few exceptions given above, words joined or separated, and a few obvious corrections made, without indication of change.

2. Gough, *Emaré* (Morsbach and Holthausen, *Old and Middle English Texts*, vol. II), London, New York, Heidelberg, 1901. This text is normalized and considerably altered in an attempt to reconstruct the original, with MS. readings in the foot-notes, and a table on pp. x, xi of the principal classes of phonetic changes. Aside from these, in several points not deemed important enough for separate quotation, Dr. Gough's text differs from that of the present edition: the crossing of ll and h is disregarded, expanded contractions are sometimes differently italicized; the curl to r is sometimes disregarded, and again written re; n, ñ is printed sometimes n sometimes nn, sometimes ne; u and v are not distinguished as in the MS.

The introduction is brief; but Dr. Gough treats of the sources of *Emaré* in his paper *On the Constance Saga* (Brandl and Schmidt, *Palæstra*, no. 23, Berlin, 1902) and its metrical and grammatical aspects in his dissertation, *On the Middle English Metrical Romance of Emaré*, Kiel, 1900, which I obtained late; hence, I have used it chiefly in my notes.

3. The present edition aims to give the text as the scribe intended it to be read. Expansions of contracted forms, additions and a few obvious corrections are indicated.¹ Capitals and punctuation are modern. It has been thought expedient to give in the foot-notes, aside from the classes of changes mentioned, the few special cases in which Ritson (R.) and Gough (G.) vary from the MS. Gough's emendations, in so far as they seem to find a basis in the text itself, are given in the notes at the end of the volume.

In a unique MS. which bears internal evidence of being a copy,² and shows a great mixture of dialects, I have not attempted to restore the text, believing that such a reconstruction must be largely arbitrary.

¹ Expansions by italics; additions in brackets; probable omissions in parentheses.

² Cf. *Emaré*, ll. 331, 332, 337, which show plainly that the scribe had lost his place; likewise 837, 839, 840.

I have departed from recent custom, in expanding H to lle inasmuch as in *Emaré* there is not a single instance of ll or He.¹ I have retained the marking of gh, h, n, ñ, r, because I am unable to find any principle governing the usage.

In regard to gh, 3th, h, the balance of evidence seems to show that the stroke has lost its value, although in a few cases an -e added serves to correct the metre.²

The marking of m, ñ, n, if expanded at all, must be rendered sometimes un, nn, mm, sometimes me, ue; but there are also cases in which it must be meaningless.³

The cuf to r seems to be mere ornament.⁴

In the *Introduction*, I have endeavoured, in addition to a brief treatment of the dialect and metre, which afford no special problems, to make a careful study of the style and sources of the poem, with a view to determining its place and relationships in mediaeval literature.

§ 3. DIALECT.

A. PHONOLOGY.

A study of the rhymes gives the following results:

a. Vowels.

O.E. *ǣ* is retained.⁵

O.E. *ā* wavers between o and a. It becomes o in fome (835, 818) rhyming with trone (836) and with come (817), trone (820), Rome (821); home (601) rhyming with sone (O.E. *sōna*, 602);

¹ The observation should have been continued throughout the MS. As far as I have been able to read (fully half), the exceptions to the rule are less than half-a-dozen, over against innumerable cases where the usage is uniform. I conclude that the sign still had meaning for this scribe.

² I have not observed these letters carefully throughout the MS. because in *Emaré* alone the irregularity is sufficiently great. In 63 cases, -3th, gh(t) lacks -e and requires none; in 42, it is required. In 16, -3th, -3h(t) lacks -e and requires none; in 4, it is required. In 3, -3hte occurs but the -e is unnecessary; in 3, it is needed. There are no cases of -ghte. These results are not final because in some cases lines may be read differently; but they serve to show the confusion of practice.

³ In *Emaré*, gan occurs 10 times, gan 3; vpon, vpoñ 7 times; vpone 1; home twice, hom 3 times, hoñ once; none 3 times, non 4; non 4; etc. Altogether, I think much more evidence is desirable before trying to settle this point. In *Emaré*, the mark seems to be without meaning. Cf. also vreden (62), loueden (124), seten (218), whens (418), etc.

⁴ In 91 cases in *Emaré*, we find -er, -ur; in 21 -ere; in 31 er. Her as adverb occurs 19 times, here once, her once; her as pronoun, 20 times, over against here once and her 16 times. There is also a great preponderance of ther, per, wer, neuur, euur, over the forms in -e.

⁵ Cf. ll. 757-58; 1031-30; 195, 201.

anon) (886) with sone (O.E. sunu, 887); oon (157) with sonne (O.E. sunu, 158); lore (412) with be-fore (413). It is retained in gare (198) rhyming with chare (O.Fr. char, 201); sore (633) and more (636), with spare (630) and kare (O.E. cearu, 627); a-lone (693) and wo-by-gone (696) rhyming with name (O.E. nama, 687) and tane (690).

O.E. æ becomes usually a,¹ but twice e: was (463) rhyming with prese (O.Fr. presse, 464), sete (221, 893) with swete (O.E. swete, 220, 892).

O.E. æ becomes usually e,² but it is once a: there (204) rhyming with chare (201) gare (O.E. gāra, 198) fare (O.E. faran, 195); and once o: wore (410) rhyming with be-fore (413).

O.E. ǣ remains³ except in ecg, eg, where it becomes ay: say (416, 435) rhymes with ray (O.Fr. rai, 415) gay (O.Fr. gai, 444).

O.E. ē remains.⁴

O.E. ēā varies. It becomes a: bale 1010) rhyming with pale (O.Fr. pale, 1009); kare (627) with spare (O.E. spārian, 630). It becomes o: be-holde (249) rhyming with golde (O.E. gold, 243) and molde (O.E. molde, 246). It becomes e: marke (504) rhymes with clerke (O.E. cleric, O.Fr. clerc, 495).⁵

O.E. ēā becomes e,⁶ once written ee: lees (O.E. lēas, 110) rhymes with hepeþnes (O.E. hæðennys, 109).

O.E. ƿ becomes e:⁷ but ȝynge (380, etc.) rhymes with þyng (O.E. þing, 379-82) kyng (O.E. cyng, 383) etc.

O.E. ēō becomes e,⁸ but both ȝede and ȝode occur: ȝede (O.E. ēodon, 213) rhymes with stede (O.E. stēda, 210); ȝode (O.E. ēode, 516) with blode (O.E. blōd, 513) gode (O.E. gōd, 510), fode (O.E. fōda, 507).

O.E. ĭ, ī, ŷ, ȳ, from whatever source, remain as y, rhyming together and with French i.⁹ The one exception is euylle (O.E. y-fel, 535) rhyming with deuylle (536).¹⁰

¹ Cf. ll. 121-22, 289-90, 374-73, 459-62-65, 557-56, 773-72. So æg becomes ay: may (452) rhyming with ray (O.Fr. rai, 451).

² Cf. 207-210; 345-42-39; 826-27; 803-2; 662-61; 548-49-46-52; 1002-999.

³ Cf. ll. 567-73-76; 190-91; 434-33.

⁴ Cf. ll. 215-14; 237-34; 175-76; 342-39, etc.

⁵ No other instances occur.

⁶ Cf. ll. 816-10-07.

⁷ Cf. ll. 498-501-495.

⁸ Cf. ll. 8-7, 423-26-32; 291-94-97-300; 792-89-86-83, etc.

⁹ Cf. ll. 599-98; 327-30-33-36; 227-26; 951-54-57-60; 581-80; 526-27 etc.

¹⁰ Also the e from y in hepeþnes (cf. ll. 109-10), but this was originally unstressed. Hero (1005) probably came from the form heran.

O.E. *ö* remains.¹

O.E. *ō* remains except before *ȝ*th, *ght* where it becomes *ow*.²

O.E. *ū* becomes *o*.³

O.E. *ū* becomes *ow*, rhyming with a similar development out of O.Fr. *u*, *ou*: *towne* (O.E. *tūn*, 804) rhymes with *renowne* (O.Fr. *renume*, 801);⁴ *bowre* (O.E. *būr*, 63) with *flowre* (O.Fr. *flour*, 66), *honour* (O.Fr. *honour*, 69), *emperour* (O.Fr. *emperour*, 72).⁵

b. Consonants.

The chief point of interest shown by the rhymes is that *-h* *-gh*, seems to have lost its guttural quality: *hygh* (O.E. *higian*, 103) rhymes with *fayry* (O.Fr. *faerie*, 104); *hye* (O.E. *hēah*, 193) with *melodie*, (O.Fr. *melodie*, 194).⁶

There is some evidence in ll. 663-66-69-72 to show that the author shared the scribe's confusion of *d*, *th*, (= *p*, *ð*), or *t*, *th* (= *p*) *t*.⁷

B. INFLECTIONS.

Inorganic *-e* is commonly written, but can rarely be attributed with any degree of certainty to the author.⁸

Nouns form their plural regularly in *-s*, *-es* (*-is*, *-ys*, *-us* in the MS.).⁹ The plural in *-n* occurs once.¹⁰ There are several plurals without ending,¹¹ one with umlaut.¹²

Adjectives have no ending or *-e*.

Pronouns are regular: *me*, *we*; *þe*, *the*, *pyn*; *he*.

Adverbs end in *-ly*, *-lye*, or have no ending.¹³

Verbs afford the chief tests of dialect.

¹ Cf. ll. 163-64, etc. ² Cf. ll. 2-1, 170-69, 583-84, etc.

³ Cf. ll. 5-4, 224-25, 82-83, 978-75-81-84, etc.

⁴ Also with *treson*, *reson* (795-98) which must stand for *tresoun*, *resoun*.

⁵ Cf. also ll. 899-98; 663-66-72. ⁶ Cf. also ll. 165-59-62-68.

⁷ And perhaps (so G.), in the rhymes *wrothe-othe* (265-66), *bot-wote* (268-69).

⁸ Cf. ll. 80, 349, 657, 694. Gough's emendations are given in the notes at the end. About a dozen other cases might be cited, all more or less uncertain.

⁹ But sometimes two forms are used, as *flowrys* (29) and *flour* (125, 149); *bowrys* (28) and *bowre* (899). Plurals with and without *-s* often occur together (cf. ll. 91, 94, 154, 155, 389-90, 898-99).

¹⁰ *ȝen* (298) rhyming with *syȝen* (299).

¹¹ *Honde* (MS. *hondus*, 639) rhymes with *londe* (642), *sonde* (645) *wronge* (648); *yere* (816) rhymes with *dere* (813) *clere* (810) *chere* (807); *ston* (100) with *non* (101); *stye* (196) with *lady* (197), *strete* (543) with *swete* (546), etc. *pyng* occurs frequently, but always in a formula probably archaic (cf. ll. 40, 64, etc.).

¹² *Fete* (211) rhymes with *swete* (212). *Fote* (1017) rhyming with *bote* (1011) I take to be a survival of the old dative plural *fofum*. *Fete*, however, is in the same construction.

¹³ Cf. ll. 287-86; 631-82; 854-53; 868-69; 894-91-900-897.

The present infinitive loses its -n in 83 cases; and keeps it in 9, affecting, however, only 5 verbs: sene, done, bene, tane, gone.¹

The present participle is not found in rhyme, the one case given by Wilda being inconclusive.²

The perfect participle keeps its -n in 9 cases, 5 verbs: done, sene, forlorne, borne, gone;³ and loses it in 3 cases, 2 verbs: be, holde.⁴

The prefix y- is twice found and is necessary for the rhythm.⁵

The indicative present singular is not found. The plural ends in -e: (we) rede (216) rhymes with stede (210, dat. sing.); (3e) ryde (971) with be-tyde (970, 3rd sing. pres. opt.); (they) stonde (116) with honde (115, dat. sing.). Weak verbs have n + d become nt.⁶

Very few forms of the preterite occur.⁷ Among strong verbs:⁸ (she, he) sete (221, 893) rhyming with swete (220, 892); (they) ponge (659), with strong (658); (they) sye (68), sy (869), with slye (67), curteysly (868); and also (they) syzen (299) rhyming with yzen (298).

The optative ends in -e.⁹

The few preteritive present forms are not peculiar.¹⁰

Among the anomalous verbs, the only notable form is wes (written *was*) rhyming with prese (cf. p. xiv above).¹¹

C. SUMMARY.

The dialect is North-East Midland as Wilda¹² concluded; but its Northern character must be emphasized. Common to the

¹ Cf. ll. 423, 486-432, 483, 489, 492; 4, 975-5, 978, 981, 984; 426, 626-432, 625; 690-687-693-696; 741-35-738-744.

² *Über die Örtliche Verbreitung der Zwölfeiligen Schweifreimstrophe in England*, Breslau, 1887, pp. 27, 28. The line is 974: "A-3eyn þe emperour komyng," where *komyng* is a verbal noun, of which there are various other instances (cf. ll. 118-119, 511, 759, etc., with a dependent genitive).

³ Cf. ll. 229, 406, 469, 856-230, 407, 470, 857; 429-432; 255-261; 258, 520-264, 521; 696-693, 687.

⁴ Cf. ll. 364, 718-365, 719; 1027-1028.

⁵ Y-borne (520), y-dy3th (395). In l. 440, which otherwise repeats l. 395, it is needed.

⁶ Cf. ll. 235-36, 931-32, 190-91, etc.

⁷ The old passive *hätte* appears as *hy3te* (85), 3rd singular, but may be due to the scribe.

⁸ Cf. ll. 235, 931, 1015-236, 932, 1016; 190, 434-191, 433, for weak verbs.

⁹ Cf. ll. 263-62; 630-27; 253-54; 970-71.

¹⁰ Cf. ll. 672-63-66-69; 269-68; 252-46-43; 720-17-14-11.

¹¹ The -s endings within the line (1032-1033) are more probably survivals than interpolations.

¹² *Op. cit.*, p. 26.

Northern and Midland dialects are: (1) the wavering of O.E. *ā* between *a* and *o*; ¹ (2) the retention of O.E. *ȝ*, *ȝ* (derived by umlaut); ² (3) the adverbial ending *-ly*, *-lye*. Northern are: (1) the dropping of *-n* in the infinitive (the exceptions in *Emaré* occur in texts purely Northern); (2) the persistence of *-n* in the past participle; (3) the assimilation of the vowel of the plural to that of the singular, in the preterite of strong verbs. ³ On these grounds I judge that the author lived north of the Humber.

In the hope of obtaining additional evidence for or against this belief, I have compared the vocabulary of *Emaré* with more than 30 glossaries of the 14th and 15th centuries, and with the various modern word-lists published by the English Dialect Society. Among these last, the Yorkshire glossaries contain about 20 of the 40 uncommon or dialectical forms in *Emaré* (of which 10 or more are now obsolete), such as: bigging, ding, fell, felter, fra, gate (= way), gether, greet (= weep, with preterite *gruot*), kell, kith, lashed, lovesome, ma, mense, mickle, til (= to), wor, war (= was), yark. Of these 40 words, ⁴ Chaucer contains only 6; ⁵ of three Yorkshire texts, Y shows 28, T 23, MA 25; ⁶ three supposed Lancashire poems, EEAP, 25; ⁷ a text showing marks of both N.E.

¹ G. gives 17 cases of *o* to 3 of *a*. I count 15 *o* to 5 *a*, including *Abro* as determinative of *o*, which it certainly is not. Omitting *Abro*-rhymes, I make 9 *o* to 5 *a*; if *Abro* = *Abra*, as I have shown (note on l. 57 below), the count becomes 9 *o* to 11 *a*.

² Cf. also Kölbing's *Amis and Amiloun* (*Alteng. Bib.*, II), 1884, pp. xxxi-xxxii, in connection with ll. 109-10, 463-64.

³ L. 659 only.

⁴ After various experiments with different numbers of words, I decided to limit the comparison to those most characteristic and least common, barring words immediately derived from the French. Accordingly, I have used: byggyng, de[l]fulle, felle, feltred, fode, fryght (frith), gate (way), grette, kygh (kith), lashed, lay (law), le, lufsumme, mangery, menske, molde, myn, mynge, rappes, sale, snelle, stye, ponge (donge), tylle, warye, ȝarked, ȝoo; and the forms: by-forn, drury, erdly, iro, gedered, kelle, keuered, moo, mykyl, tane, vmbaydest, word (world), ȝyng.

⁵ Before, fro, keuered, lay, moo, tylle. That difference in scale of works compared does not obviate results appears thus: *Florence of Rome*, in 2187 lines, has 13 of these words, *Sir Gouther*, in 756, 19, to Chaucer's 6. *Promptorium Parvulorum* (Norfolk, circ. 1440) has 9, *Catholicum Anglicum* (N.E. Midland (?), 1483) has 12, or proportionately twice as many.

I must ask indulgence if here and there are errors in the counting, especially in the case of texts which lack glossaries; but an occasional mistake of this sort would not affect the general relationship of the groups of numbers.

⁶ Y = *York Plays*, T = *Towneley Plays*, MA = *Thornton Morte Arthure* (supposed Yorkshire), all in MSS. nearly contemporary with Cotton Caligula A. ii.

⁷ *Early English Alliterative Poems* (ed. Morris, E. E. T. S. 1).

Midland and W. Midland dialects, WA, 30.¹ Further,² among about 40 modern English dialect lists, the Whitby and Mid-Yorkshire glossaries³ contain each about 15 of these words, while those of N. W. Lincolnshire, the Lake District, Durham, Lancashire and Derby have from 7 to 12 each; and no list,⁴ I believe, outside Yorkshire and its neighbours (as given above), shows more than 4. The dialect of *Emaré* thus belongs to the very locality indicated by Trivet (cf. p. xxxiii below), between the Humber and Knaresborough,⁵ i. e. Mid-Yorkshire.

§ 4. METRE.

A. STANZA SCHEME.

Of the 86 12-line, tail-rhyme stanzas, 57 are according to the scheme: (1) aabccbdbbeeb, or variants of this form; 29, according to (2) aabaabccbdbb or variants.⁶

Among the 57, the modifications are entirely in the fourth unit of the stanza.⁷ Thus we find: (a) aabccbdbbeeb in 47 cases; (b) aabccbdbdbdb in 7 cases;⁸ (c) aabccbdbccb in 2 cases;⁹ (d) aabccbdbaab in one case.¹⁰ That is, the last couplet may consist of (a) a fresh rhyme; (b) the third couplet repeated; (c) the second couplet repeated; (d) the first couplet repeated.

Among the 29, we find: (a) aabaabccbdbb in 19 cases;¹¹

¹ *Wars of Alexander* (early 15th century). Skeat (p. xxiii) points out the mixture of dialects, which seems to me to indicate a Border district.

² Among other texts, *Torrent of Portyngale*, *Degrevant*, *Isumbres* and *Eglamour* contain many of the words on the list; but the absence of complete glossaries makes comparison difficult.

³ In general, the Mid-Yorkshire dialect is credited with being more "Scotch" than its neighbours (Robinson, *op. cit.* p. vii). I note that the so-called *Scottish Alliterative Poems* (ed. Amours, Sc. Text Soc.) contain 24 words in my list, and the *Destruction of Troy* (Scotch) has 18.

⁴ See publications of the English Dialect Society.

⁵ Robinson (*loc. cit.*). Trivet calls it *lieu mene* (p. 27) between England and Scotland. He was either unfamiliar with it, or considered London as the king's capital. But Knaresborough, although about midway between London and the Border, is not on either of the great roads to Scotland.

⁶ For different counts, see below, p. xix, note 9.

⁷ Except 86, which adds three lines: aabccbdbbeebffb.

⁸ Stanzas 27, 32, 51, 67, 70, 77, 83. Perhaps also 43, 47, but see p. xix below, with note 10.

⁹ Stanzas 64, 71.

¹⁰ Stanza 34.

¹¹ Stanzas 1, 3, 8, 12-18, 19, 28, 31, 39, 42, 46, 57-58, 60-63, 74-75, 79, 81. Thus there are three groups of two stanzas in succession. Possibly also 38, but see p. xx below, with note 10.

(b) aabaabccbccb in 7 cases;¹ (c) aabaabccbaab in 3 cases;² that is, the last couplet may repeat either of the others in its rhyme.

Emaré is unique among romances of this class in its mixture of stanza forms. Kölbing suggested that this was intentional,³ and Wilda, in endorsing the view, added that the poem was perhaps first written in the stricter form, and afterwards altered by a scribe who had lost the feeling of the original.⁴

It does not seem probable, in this case, that so small a portion of the first rhyme-scheme would be preserved. The four romances constructed according to the stricter scheme show a very small degree of alteration.⁵ Moreover, three of them are much older than *Emaré*,⁶ and the fourth is in a different dialect.⁷ It seems more probable that the poet, who shows but little originality in any way, wrote the 86 stanzas in the form that 57 have retained—a form which was popular in his dialect and time.⁸

Notwithstanding the large proportion⁹ of stanzas in the stricter form, the greater variation in the couplets, according to both schemes, makes it practically certain that the minstrel's only concern was to have a fresh rhyme for his first and third couplets, leaving the second and fourth to repeat any of the others, as an additional grace of style, according to the conventional tags with which his memory was stored.¹⁰

¹ Stanzas 17, 26, 35, 59, 68–69, 82. This is Kölbing's Type II, found only in *Duke Rowlande* and *Sir Ottuell of Spayne*. I have not treated this separately, as it seems to me the personal idiosyncrasy of an author who could hardly have influenced the writer of *Emaré*.

² Stanzas 9, 20, 78.

³ *Op. cit.* pp. xix–xx.

⁴ *Op. cit.* p. 27.

⁵ According to Kölbing, (*op. cit.* pp. xv–xvii) *Amis and Amiloun* and the *Kyng of Tars* (in the Auchinleck MS.) show no exceptions. Reducing his numbers to terms of percentage I find that *Horn Childe* and *Maiden Rinnild* has 8½% of variation, *Lybeaus Disconus*, about 7%. If *Emaré* belonged here, the variation would be 66%.

⁶ *Amis and Amiloun*, *Horn Childe*, *Kyng of Tars*.

⁷ *Lybeaus Disconus*, in S. E. England.

⁸ It is used in *Sir Gowther*, *Erl of Tolous*, *Torrent of Portyngale*; also, in *Isumbras*, *Eglamour*, *Athelston*, *Sir Cleges*, *Sege of Melayne*, *Le Bone Florence of Rome*.

⁹ Nearly 34%. Kölbing gives 35 stanzas; Gough says "about 32," but includes 22, 23, 43, with imperfect rhymes not confirmed elsewhere. I count 29 without including the doubtful stanza 38. Using Kölbing's numbers for the other romances, I find the percents of variation to be as follows: *Laurin*, 18½%; *Octavian*, 13%; *Isumbras* and the *Erl of Tolous*, 7%; *Rowland and Vernagu*, nearly 7%; *Athelston*, 5%; *Le Bone Florence of Rome*, 4½%; *Sir Amadas*, 4% and 3% (the versions printed by Robson and Weber respectively); *Sege of Melayne*, 2½%; *Eglamour*, 2%; *Sir Cleges* and *Sir Gowther*, no variations (*op. cit.*, pp. xix–xx).

¹⁰ With this accords the paucity of rhymes that he finds to make up his

B. RHYME.

The author's rhymes show the following peculiarities:

1. The accent is shifted to the ultima: (a) in French words rhyming together;¹ (b) in French words rhyming with English;² (c) in English words rhyming together.³

2. Assonance suffices: (a) m and n;⁴ (b) nd and ng;⁵ (c) d and t;⁶ (d) t and k;⁷ (e) f and p.⁸

3. There is one clear case of imperfect vowel rhyme. Emaré⁹ (1023) rhymes with he (1026) story (1029) Egarye (1032) glorye (1035). However the names should be spelled, y still rhymes with e in this instance.

The rhyme -ynge, -ende is doubtful. Stanza 7 (ll. 75-78-81-84) is possibly a patchwork of two (cf. p. xxxii, n. 5, below). If ll. 445-46 and 448-49 rhyme together, stanza 38 belongs to the stricter type, and ll. 510-11 and 514-15, ll. 559-60 and 562-63 rhyme together. I incline to think that this was the case, in that the assonance was admitted, alternative y and e forms existed for some of the words,¹⁰ and later on, *e.g.* in Bale's *Kynge Johan* y and e rhymed together (cf. ll. 719, 879, 1198, 1970, 2208, 2238). But for another possibility, see note on l. 793.

stricter stanzas. Rhymes to none repeated in 6 stanzas; to pyng, in 5; pore and knyzt, in 4; grete, be, and honour, in 2 each; hye, day, ys, and woo are used once.

¹ Vanyte (105) Crystyante (108); emperour (25) towre (28), etc.

² Fayry (104) hygh (103); spycerye (853) hastylle (854), etc.

³ Bygynnyng (16) kyng (17), gretlye (997) by (998); hebenes (109) lees (110); lady (197) styte (196), wommon (443) anon (442), show an unstressed syllable rhyming with a stressed. Studyng (283) sowenyng (284), rychely (517) hastily (518), wommon (427) Crystendom (428), two unstressed syllables together.

⁴ Nome (27) none (30). This occurs 14 times.

⁵ Lond (664) stronge (665). Cf. also 639-42-45-48. It is possible that -ynke rhymes with -yng; spendyng (271, 592) drynke (272, 593); but the lines are short. Cf. note on ll. 271-72.

⁶ Bledde (552) lete (549), swete (546) strete (543).

⁷ Loke (1014) bote (1011) fote (1017) sote (1020); gate (828) make (825) take (822) sake (819).

⁸ Lyfe (222) wyfe (228) syfe (225) swyde (219).

⁹ Emarye (840) fre (831) le (834) powste (837) suggest that the author intended Emare, the form usually found; Egare (360) ferly (351) lady (354) dye (357) suggest that he intended Egarye (found 704 rhyming with y, and 810 where Emare is meant) although Egare (*esgaree*) is the correct form. See p. xxix below.

¹⁰ Notably, hynde, unhynde, wynde, fiend, viend, fynde; the other forms I do not know.

C. RHYTHM.

The general effect, even allowing for corruptions of the text, is rough. Short lines can sometimes be rectified by the hypothesis of a lost -e; long lines, by omission of redundant or explanatory words or phrases. But there remain many verses that cannot be made to follow closely a strict iambic ideal.

These departures cannot be numbered accurately, inasmuch as there are often several ways of reading a line; but certain general principles of variation may be noted.

1. The first syllable of the first foot is lacking, the line beginning with a stress. This is true of about one-fourth of the total number of lines.¹

Within the line there is no clear case that such an omission is warranted, although to avoid this conclusion it is sometimes necessary to emend where no obvious corruption exists.²

2. Instead of x' we find xx'. I counted about 50 cases in the first foot, 17 in the last, 10 in the second, and 14 in the third. These numbers admit of considerable variation, but the principle holds that the practice is by far the most abundant in the first foot.³

3. There are also about a hundred cases⁴ in which elision is necessary, or something like O.E. resolved stress prevails. As examples of the blurring or elision of vowels, may be given: In *móny* a *dý*uerse *lónde* (15), *Syr Árt*yus *wás* *hys* *nó*me (27); And *spé*ke *we* of *pe é*mperour (72);⁵ of the tendency to run syllables together, especially in -yl, -en, -er (-ur, -yr), -ow, -eth: *Wyth ménske* and *mýchyl* honour (69); In *hé*uen *wyth* *hým* *pat* *wé* may *bé* (11); *Lórde*, *lette* *neúr* such *só*row *a-rý*ce (260); Now *kómeth* *pe é*mperour of *prý*se (985).⁶

4. There are different arrangements of stresses. Occasionally the stressed syllable precedes the unstressed, as: *Cértys*, *pys* *ýs* a

¹ I counted 258 lines; but the number is more, rather than less.

² There are a few seeming instances of what Saintsbury calls "pause-feet" (*History of English Prosody*, London, 1906, I, 83); but most of these can easily be emended. Cf. ll. 184, 195, 200, 280, 433, 436, 453, 461, 495, 514, 691, 692, 715, 856.

³ Where more than two unstressed syllables occur, the sense usually shows that the line is corrupt.

⁴ I counted 94.

⁵ Cf. ll. 81, 84, 86, 183, 310, 482, 596, etc.

⁶ Cf. ll. 187, 208, 220, 230, 252, 322, 324, 335, 336, etc.

wykked káse (647).¹ Again, we find xʹ|ʹx, a form which suggests a survival of the O.E. Type C, as: He hádde but on chyld in hys lyue (43); In álle Crýstyanté (108); That deéd shúlde she bé (267).²

In these data, appears the popular and English character of the poem, in contradistinction to the French classical influences of which it shows but little sign.

Aside from the general framework of the rhythm-scheme, I believe that the author worked largely by a metrical instinct in which the O.E. tradition survived, so that his ear was not offended by the free manipulation of stresses which the poem shows.³

§ 5. STYLE.

A. VOCABULARY.

The limitations of the author's vocabulary are best shown by a comparison with Gower's and Chaucer's versions of the same story. *Emaré* in 1035 lines uses 802 words; Gower in 1014 lines, 945 words; Chaucer in 1029 lines 1265 words—showing half again as large a vocabulary. The proportion of romance words in Chaucer is approximately 30%; in Gower, 26%; in *Emaré* only 19%.

These two facts bear out the popular origin of the poem.

Of adjectives, *Emaré* contains 88, 44% of these occurring only once, the highest number of repetitions of any one word being 40; Gower uses 58 adjectives, only 7% occurring but once, the highest number of repetitions being 15; Chaucer has 127 adjectives, 63% being found only once, and the highest number of repetitions being 21.

The difference in the character of the adjectives used is illuminating. Gower's words are the most colourless, being almost entirely concerned with the moral quality of the thing. Hence, he uses great, glad, false, good, and worthy most frequently, and his nearest approach to the concrete is: bare, bloody, pale, naked (ship). Chaucer shows more appeal to the senses, as in: cold, dry, salt, bitter (figurative), pale, bloody, sheen, dark (figurative); and to the emotions, as in: woful, fatal, wretched, tender, cruel,

¹ I noted a number of cases that might be so read, but in many of them the accent of the word is uncertain, or the line admits of scansion in another way. Cf. however ll. 31, 104, 168, 261, 413, 415, 488, 605, etc.

² Cf. ll. 43, 47, 112, 156, 186, 201, 233, 294, etc.

³ This, as far as it goes, accords with Saintsbury's doctrine of English rhythm (*loc. cit.*).

cursed, weary, etc. In *Emaré*, while most of the adjectives occur repeatedly in all the 6- and 12-line stanza romances,¹ there is rather more sense-appeal than in Chaucer, but much less appeal to the emotions. For example we find: white, blue (meaning dark), gold, azure,² bright, sheen, pale, wan, clear,†glistening, salt, delicious, cold, silken; but of words appealing immediately to the emotions nothing stronger than: lovesome.

Of adverbs, *Emaré* has 28, Gower 17, and Chaucer 32. Here again the same differences appear. It is rather curious that in all three, words showing speed should be most used: Gower has: suddenly (6 times); fast (4); Chaucer: shortly (6); *Emaré*: hastily (5). Aside from these, Gower shows the same dryness and Chaucer the same emotional appeal; *Emaré* is less rich in adverbs than in adjectives. Among those most used are: courteously, sweetly (swete, sote), specially and verament.

Emaré is singularly bare of figures, containing only seven similes: white as whale's bone, as lily-flower, as flower, as flower on hill, as foam; bright as summer's day; lean as a tree; and two cases of synecdoche: salt foam for sea, white chin for beautiful face.³

B. ALLITERATION.

Alliteration in *Emaré* is an important device of style. It is found in about 200 lines, two words usually being so connected, but occasionally three⁴ and even four.⁵

To a less noticeable extent, alliteration serves to connect two lines, two,⁶ three,⁷ even four words⁸ being so used.

Where the alliteration passes beyond the limits of the line, the words do not seem to stand in any definite relationship to one

¹ Such as great (40 times), fair (39), rich (17), bright (14), fre (13), noble, seemly, sweet (each 12), etc.

² L. 113. Gold refers also to the material, and perhaps azure means *lapis lazuli*. The whole passage (ll. 88-168) containing the list of precious stones, is full of colour, but the effect is due to the nouns.

³ Ll. 33, 66, 205; 946, 729; 818; 192, 438; 365; 835; 924.

⁴ In 11 cases.

⁵ In l. 29 only.

⁶ Especially ll. 340-41-42, 376-77, 427-28, 487-88, 541-42, 833-34, 848-49, 923-24, 1010-11. I counted about 40 possible cases in all; but in many the effect was so slight that it may well have been accidental.

⁷ Cf. ll. 83-84, 218-19, 314-15, 365-66, 497-98, 572-73, 611-12, 646-47, 737-38, 779-80.

⁸ Cf. ll. 20-21, 170-71, 193-94, 227-28, 604-5, 647-48, 766-67, 887-88. Here nearly all the chief words alliterate. In ll. 586-88, three alliterative letters are spread over three lines; but it is difficult to say how far this was a conscious device of style.

another; within the line, their connections may be classified as follows:

- (1) Noun and adjective:¹ And gode garnettes by-twene (156).
- (2) Adjective with (a) chief or (b) secondary word of modifying phrase:² (a) Was godely vnþur gare (198); (b) Whyte as whales bone (33).
- (3) Two words (a) nouns, (b) adjectives, or (c) verbs in the same construction:³ (a) That made both see *and* sonde (18); (b) Of a lady fayr *and* fre (22); (c) And alle þat shalle dele *and* dyghþe (3).
- (4) Verb with (a) chief, (b) secondary word of modifying phrase:⁴ (a) As I here synge in songe (24); (b) Wyth sory herte she songe hyt a-slepe (662).
- (5) Verb with noun as (a) subject, (b) object:⁵ (a) The kynges loue on her was lent (404); (b) And ledde hys lyf yn weddewede (77).
- (6) Verb and adverb:⁶ Such sorow was here ȝarked ȝore (329).
- (7) Noun with (a) chief or (b) secondary word of modifying phrase:⁷ (a) Thorow þe grace of God yn trone (680); (b) In þat robe of ryche ble (644).
- (8) Nouns directly modifying another noun:⁸ Of Babylone þe sowdan sonne (158).
- (9) Noun with chief word of dependent clause:⁹ The stones þat yn þys cloth stonde (116).
- (10) Verb with predicate adjective: He wax alle pale *and* wanne (771).¹⁰
- (11) Words not related directly:¹¹ And myȝte not fynde þat lady fre (308).

From this analysis it appears that alliteration is a vital and fundamental part of the author's mode of thought; and that as it is used to connect words in almost every conceivable relation in the

¹ 37 cases.

² 29 with chief word; 8 with secondary; 37 altogether.

³ 14 cases of nouns; 8 of adjectives; 7 of verbs; 29 altogether.

⁴ 18 with chief word; 1 with secondary; 19 in all.

⁵ 6 times as subject; 17 as object; once with a predicate adjective; 24 in all.

⁶ 15 times.

⁷ 12 times with chief; 2 with secondary; 14 in all.

⁸ 11 cases.

⁹ 8 cases.

¹⁰ No other case.

¹¹ Only 5 other cases where the alliterative effect is unmistakable. As: þe worde shulde sprynge fer and wyde (256). And she s(h)ewed sylke werke yn bour (730). He was resseuyed *and* rychely dyȝt (578). The lady *and* þe lytlyle chyld (649). Wyth menske *and* mychyl honour (69).

sentence, it thereby maintains its place as the more natural element in the language, upon which the rhyme-scheme has been imposed.

Looked at from the point of view of content, the greater part of these alliterative expressions consists of the conventional phrases used repeatedly in all the 6- and 12-line stanza romances. In a few cases the expressions are peculiar to *Emaré*, while there are perhaps 50 more conventional lines, not in their present form alliterative. This number must be slightly reduced, in that some of these lines have alliterative equivalents from which they may have been derived.¹ But, on the whole, the alliterative expressions represent the bulk of the conventionalisms, as no doubt it was the alliterative connection that attached them to the memory.

As to character and content,² the alliterative expressions may be classified according to (a) participation in the same idea, *i. e.* derivation from the same root:³ As I here synge in songe (24); (b) extension or qualification, *i. e.* further definition of the same idea:⁴ That semely ys of syght (9); (c) association of like ideas:⁵ Bothe by styte *and* strete (543); (d) differentiation, by association, of contrasting ideas:⁶ Bothe yn wo *and* wele (573).

The fifty lines or thereabouts which are conventional in character but cannot be traced to an alliterative origin, may be classified as follows:

(a) References to source;⁷ (b) assurances of truth:⁸ In trwe story as y say (544); (c) strengthening of previous assertion: (1) by denying the contrary:⁹ With-oute ony lettyng (843); (2) by repetition in different terms:¹⁰ Men calle hyt heuen lyghte (6); (3) by further detail:¹¹ In alle maner of thyng (75); (d) allusions to God's will:¹² As hyt was Goddys wyll (327); (e) statement of time:¹³ On pe morn when hyt was day (541); (f) a passing

¹ As: Semely to be-holde (sene), 942; wepte (grette) *and* 3af hem wyll, 778; flesh and bone (fell), 735; "wesh *and* seten don (wenten) to mete, 218."

² Kölbing's divisions (*Amis and Amiloun*, pp. lxvi-lxx) do not seem mutually exclusive; so I have preferred to classify separately according to structure and to idea.

³ Rare. Cf. ll. 405, 465.

⁴ Very common. Cf. ll. 96, 153, 198, 216, 246, 303, 366, 507, etc.

⁵ Fairly common. Cf. ll. 3, 42, 174, 228, 474, 495, 600, 804.

⁶ Rare. Cf. l. 18.

⁷ In *Emaré* usually alliterative. Cf. ll. 216, 405. Ll. 162, 1029 are conventional in French rather than in English.

⁸ Elsewhere alliterative. Cf. ll. 396, 144, 153, 381. ⁹ No other instance.

¹⁰ Cf. ll. 30, 36, 111.

¹¹ Cf. ll. 51, 108, 123, etc.

¹² Cf. ll. 450, 480, 675.

¹³ No other examples in *Emaré*.

description of a character:¹ He was curtays in alle pyngt (40); (*g*) a customary gesture:² And sette hym on hys kne (87); (*h*) a customary act: Messengeres forth he sent³ (190); (*i*) expressions of sympathy:⁴ And pat was gret pyte (276); (*j*) strongly associated ideas:⁵ In halle ny yn bowres (873); (*k*) strongly contrasted ideas:⁶ Bothe to olde *and* to 3ynge (41); (*l*) figures of speech:⁷ And whythe as lylve flowre (66).

It appears at once that these do not belong to the story, but essentially to the machinery of the poem.

C. REPETITION.

Emaré is peculiar, even among romances of its class, for the large proportion of repetitions that it contains. Whenever the idea recurs the phrase, line, sentence, stanza, or even group of stanzas, is repeated, with only slight necessary changes.

It is interesting to note that among lines which almost exactly repeat others: 45 are used twice; 10, three times;⁸ 2, four times;⁹ 1 is used five times;¹⁰ one six times.¹¹ This makes a total of 80 lines copied after 59 others. Among approximate repetitions: 52 are used twice; 14, three times;¹² 3, four times;¹³ 1 is used five times.¹⁴ This total is of 93 lines based on 70 others.

It appears, then, that 173 lines, or about 16½% of the poem, could be omitted almost without reduction of vocabulary.

Further, whole passages describing similar episodes show strong resemblance in structure and phrasing. Such descriptions are:

1. The four corners of the cloth.¹⁵
2. Love at first sight.¹⁶
3. Lamentation (four times).¹⁷
4. Experiences in the boat.¹⁸

¹ Cf. ll. 30, 36, 39, 45, 64, 379, 513, 724. ² Cf. ll. 778, 893.

³ Cf. ll. 180, 1027.

⁴ Cf. ll. 336, 648, 684.

⁵ Cf. ll. 300, 384, 390.

⁶ Cf. ll. 65, 462, 571, 666, 863, etc.

⁷ Cf. ll. 192, 205, 729.

⁸ Cf. ll. 9, 48, 171; 217, 865, 889; 325, 673, 721, etc.

⁹ Ll. 40, 64, 379, 724; 41, 64, 380, 725.

¹⁰ Ll. 290, 556, 604, 646, 772. ¹¹ Ll. 93, 135, 141, 423, 471, 486.

¹² Cf. ll. 3, 42, 826; 204, 937, 1021; 331, 337, 679; 336, 648, 684, etc.

¹³ Cf. ll. 555, 763, 882, 925; 28, 755, 873, 899; 207, 363, 453, 708.

¹⁴ Ll. 250, 366, 612, 736, 988.

¹⁵ Cf. ll. 121-32; 133-44; 145-56; 157-68.

¹⁶ Ll. 220-31; 397-408.

¹⁷ Ll. 280-300; 547-64; 604-12; 769-83.

¹⁸ Ll. 313-24 and 325-36; 649-60 and 673-84.

5. The rescue by Kadore and by Iurdan.¹
6. The messenger's reception (twice) by the old queen.²
7. The King's resolve to do penance and the Emperor's.³
8. Segramour's instructions upon the coming of the King and of the Emperor.⁴
9. The rejoicing over Emaré's restoration to her husband and to her father.⁵

The double structure of the poem accounts for a certain amount of parallelism; but this is so much greater than in any other version, that I judge the author to have had no close acquaintance with his original; but to have known this only in general outline and to have been thrown upon his own resources for details.

D. SENTENCE STRUCTURE.

The sentence structure and phrasing are uncommonly rough and careless, and no doubt often corrupted in transmission. The paratactic sentence prevails throughout, only the simplest clauses of time, place and comparison being subordinated.⁶ When transitional expressions are found, they are crude and abrupt.⁷ As in the ballads, speeches are introduced without mention of the speaker;⁸ and indirect discourse is changed to direct in the same passage, without indication.⁹ The subject is very often repeated in different forms, in a manner suggesting the progression of an Old English sentence;¹⁰ while, on the other hand, it is omitted in lists of verbs where it is needed.¹¹ The connection is extremely loose, *that* being often omitted;¹² and sentences are regularly made up of several short clauses with different subjects.¹³ A few special grammatical peculiarities will be given in the notes. Here again the character of a popular poem by a market-place minstrel is maintained.

¹ Ll. 340-84; 685-732.

² Ll. 514-17 and 525-35; 574-86.

³ Ll. 817-28; 949-960.

⁴ Ll. 904-09 and 916-24; 973-84; 991-96; 1009-20.

⁵ Ll. 625-36; 1009-20.

⁶ The pronouns *who* and *which* are not found at all.

⁷ Usually; Now leue we . . . and speke we, or its equivalent. Cf. ll. 70-72, 310-12, 742-44, 946-47.

⁸ Cf. ll. 172-77.

⁹ Cf. ll. 520-22; 595-97; 715-20; 820-22.

¹⁰ Ll. 52-53, 85-86, etc.

¹¹ Ll. 201, 271-73, 451-53; 763-64, etc.

¹² Ll. 232, 394-96, 403-4 etc.

¹³ Cf. ll. 328-36, 502-4, etc.

§ 6. AUTHOR AND DATE.

The terminus *ad quem* for the date is 1446; *a quo*, 1350, inasmuch as the -e as a factor in the verse has almost disappeared.¹ The absence of archaic forms suggests a post-Chaucerian date; and 1400 is probably nearer the fact than is 1350.

The author was neither courtly nor learned, but was doubtless a wandering minstrel, who sang in the market-place.² He seems to have been a Yorkshireman, perhaps of the moor district, working up a local legend, in part, however, derived from a French, hence not popular, source.

§ 7. IMMEDIATE SOURCE.

Emaré is one of seven Middle English poems³ that claim derivation from a lay of Britain. In two cases, *Lai le Freine* and *Launfal*, the original is extant, while the general agreement in character of the seven, renders it probable that all had similar sources. All are short (500-1200 lines), correspond to the description of a lay in *Sir Orfeo*,⁴ and in form are suited to musical accompaniment.⁵

In the case of *Emaré*, the evidence for a French original, whether lay or romance, is considerable.

1. The names are French: Cesyle, Cysyle; Galys;⁶ Artyus;⁷ Dame Erayne;⁸ Segramour, Segrarnowre;⁹ Kadore;¹⁰ Iurdan;¹¹

¹ It is negligible in the proportion of three to one; and is occasionally inorganic.

² Instead of the usual references to listeners in the hall, we have l. 19, with its possible implication of the idea of a moving throng.

³ *Sir Orfeo* (ll. 1-22), *Lai le Freine* (ll. 1-26), *Sir Gowther* (ll. 28-29, 751, 753), *The Erl of Tolous* (ll. 1219-21); *Launfal* (ll. 4-5), the only case in which Britain is not specified; Chaucer's *Franklin's Tale* (ll. 709-15) and *Emaré* (ll. 1030-32).

⁴ ll. 1-22.

⁵ Cf. *Emaré*, ll. 24, 319; *Guigemar* (ll. 885-86), *Chievrefoil* (ll. 112-13) by Marie de France; *Le Lai de L'Épervier* (ll. 230-32, *Romania*, 1878, p. 9), *Doon* (ll. 1-4, 287-88, *Romania*, 1879, pp. 61, 64).

⁶ For Gales or Galice? See note on l. 338 below. Both forms are French.

⁷ Artus is the common form in French. In *Ipomedon*, one scribe writes Artus for Atrous (cf. Ward, *Catalogue of Romances*, I, 732); but here Arthur is clearly meant.

⁸ Igrayne or Elayne? Both French.

⁹ Cf. especially *Perceval le Gallois* (5598 ff., 13944); *Erec et Enide* (1733, 2231, 2238, 2250), Beaujeu's *Li Biaus Desconneus* (879, 5905, 6020); Malory's *Morte Arthur* (ed. Somer, List of Names); Froissart's *Méliador* (ed. Longnon, Index); *Claris et Laris* (ed. Alton, Index). The lost German romance, *Saigremor*, was seemingly based upon a French original.

¹⁰ The equivalent in French romances of the Celtic Cadoc (F. Lot, *Romania*, xxx, 11-13). It occurs in *Perceval* (12964 ff.); in *Erec* (4515, 4545, 4574); in *Li Biaus Desconneus* as Cadoc (5694, 5702, 5708). Cf. also *Geoffrey of*

Tergaunte;¹ Abro;² Ydoyne and Amadas;³ Florys and Blawnche-flour;⁴ Trystram and Isowde;⁵ Emaré; Egare.

2. The form Segramowres (876) rhyming with kowrs (867) honowres (870) bowres (873) is an old French nominative singular. The direct quotation may have been taken literally from the original.

3. The names Emaré, Egare, clearly indicate a French source. Emaré seems to stand for *Emarie* (*Emarye* occurs once)⁶ from French *esmarie* (afflicted, troubled); Egare is from the French *esgarée* (outcast).⁷ But I cannot think that the English poet intended to use *emarie* in the sense given. Usually the word is associated with *esgarée*, while here a contrast, if anything, is indicated.⁸ The name which I believe the minstrel had in mind is Emeré,⁹ which occurs as *La Blonde Esmeree*, in *Li Biaus Desconneus*.¹⁰ This means pure, refined (as gold), endowed with rare qualities.¹² The *e* might easily have become *a* by analogy to Egare with which Emaré frequently rhymes.

Monmouth, Layamon, the Thornton Morte Arthure, Claris et Laris, Anseis de Cartage, etc.

¹¹ The hero of the French romance *Jourdain de Blaivies*. It occurs in *Geoffrey of Monmouth*, in the *Huth Merlin* and in *Malory*. (See p. xxxvii, note 6.)

¹ See note on l. 85 below. The name is certainly of French origin.

² *Abra* occurs in *Amadis of Greece* (Part II, ch. 1), of which the earliest extant form is French. On the ultimate origin of the word, see note on l. 57 below.

³ The chief characters of a French romance of which no English version is known, although they are repeatedly mentioned in English books.

⁴ The chief characters of a widely popular French romance.

⁵ The spelling is much as in the Northern *Sir Tristrem*, the *Cursor Mundi*, and in *Malory*; but the oldest extant form of the story is French.

⁶ L. 840, but the rhymes are: *fre, le, powste*. However, in ll. 1023, 1032, Emaré and Egare rhyme with *he, storye, glorye*; and in ll. 1006-7, they rhyme together; hence the poet knew no distinction of an original *e*, i.e. See p. xx above.

⁷ Cf. Suchier, *Oeuvres de Beaumanoir* (*Soc. des. Anc. Tex. Fr.*), 1884, p. xlv.

⁸ Cf. ll. 22-23, 47-48, 50-51. Such a contrast is suggested in the *chanson de geste, Herpin de Bourges*, based upon another version of this same story, in which the heroine Joyeuse calls herself Tristouse during her exile (Suchier, *op. cit.*, p. lxxxiii). Both words are so common that it is perhaps unnecessary to give instances of their use. Among Godefroi's quotations is: "Triste et dolente et esmarie." The word *esgarée* is found especially in romances of this group as *La Manekine, La Belle Hélène de Constantinople, La Comtesse d'Anjou*, also in *Berte as Grans Piés*; and there seems little doubt that the poet took it directly from his original. See also note on l. 1032 below.

⁹ This occurs as a man's name in *Le Bone Florence of Rome*; but is pronounced *Emère*, rhyming with *clere, dere*, etc. The French *Esmeré(s)* is found in *Aucassin et Nicolette, Bauduin de Sebourg, Mainet* (Gautier, *Les Épopées Françaises*, Paris, 1869, III, 38), and elsewhere.

¹⁰ Ll. 3638, 3804, 3842, 4963, 5466, 5793, 6002, 6053, 6066.

¹² According to Godefroi.

4. Probably the title of the source is indicated in ll. 1030-32:

"Thys ys on of Brytayne layes,
That was vsed by olde dayes,
Men callys 'playn þe garye.'"

The last line is clearly corrupt. Emendations¹ that suggest themselves are: "*Playn[t] d'Egarye*" (cf. l. 314), or "*Playnt Egarye*."² Whether *playnt* has become substituted for the usual *lai*, through misunderstanding of the character of this kind of composition, or has actually been transferred from a lyric on the theme that existed in the time of the *lai* and the various romances, is a point for conjecture.³

5. Without laying too much stress on the curious rather than numerous words of French origin,⁴ we may note a few among them which suggest direct transference, such as: *acyse*, *crapawtes*, *perydotes*, possibly *fayry* (in the sense of fairy-work) and *vanyte*, the forms *testymonyeth* and *Segramowres*; and perhaps the phrases *a-fyne* and *cler of vyce*.

Altogether, there can be little doubt that the immediate source of the minstrel was French. A further question is, whether the English version is a more or less close rendering, which would probably be the case if it was a lay, or a condensation and retelling in outline, of the story, which would have been necessary if the author had worked upon the basis of a romance.

The French version must have been anterior to *La Manekine* and the original of *Mai und Beaflo* and Enikel's *Weltbuch*; hence cannot be later than the first half of the thirteenth century. That it is not older than this date appears, if in no other way, by the passage concerning the robe (82-180). That this was in the original is clear not only from allusions to it in several early versions;⁵ but

¹ Suchier translates "On l'appelle simplement la Garie (ou l'Egarée ?)"; but the definite article is not so used in English (*op. cit.*, p. xlv).

² On the interchange of d and th, þ, and t, th, cf. p. x above. Ten Brink derives the name Degarre from d'Egaré (ed. Brandl, 1899, p. 293). If this holds, the word must have come from some title containing *de*, perhaps *Lai d'Egarre* (so Degrevant from Agravain or Egrevain).

³ *Emaré* is not a *plaint* or *complaint* (although "der Büheler" calls it a *clegliche mer*, *Die Königstochter von Frankreich*, ll. 1769, 1553, etc.). But this form, in the 13th century, was popular in French, and in the 14th was made fashionable in England by Chaucer and his school. In this connection, it is interesting to observe that the so-called "*Wife's Complaint*" in its matter is exactly a "*Playn[t] d'Egarye*."

⁴ About 25% of the words in the glossary; 19% of the entire number.

⁵ Notably in *La Manekine*, *Enikel*, *La Comtesse d'Anjou* and *Historia del Rey de Hungria*, although it is mentioned in many.

especially from a comparison between *Emaré* and *Mai und Beaflor*:

"ein samit lâžûrblâ	(cf. <i>Em</i> , ryche golde and asowr, l. 113).
verre brâht ûz Persiâ	(cf. <i>Em</i> , 109, 116-17).
der was schône gehêret	
grôz vliž dar an gekêret	(cf. <i>Em</i> , 118-19).
von meisterlichen handen.	(cf. <i>Em</i> , 111).
ež wurden in allen landen	
nie gesehen sô richiu kleit,	(cf. <i>Em</i> , 107-8).
dar obe ein rîcher mandel	
geworht von tiurer koste.	
manec edel stein drîf gloste,	(cf. <i>Em</i> , 89-90, 110-1).
die hôher kraft niht wâren vri.	
edele borton von Arâbi," etc.	(col. 40, ll. 29-35 and col. 41, ll. 1-4).

The "samit lâžûrblâ" from Persia and the "golde and asowr" from Babylon must refer to the same cloth. A suggestion as to the date of the French original lies in the detail not found elsewhere that it was a gift to the Emperor Artyus from the King of Sicily. As the description seems to refer to a particular robe, the allusion to its origin is probably not without basis.¹ In 1191, Richard Cœur de Lion in Sicily was visited by Tancred, king of that country, and presented with many magnificent gifts, including *pannis sericis*.² That these were of Saracen work seems almost certain, in that the Mussulman weaving and embroidery, always famous, had received a great impulse under the Norman Kings during the twelfth century.³ As the tale of the demonic wife was early attached to the legend of Richard Cœur de Lion,⁴ an allusion to Tancred⁵ is not so amazing as it seems. According to Philippe

¹ Moreover, the cloths made in Palermo answer to the description in *Emaré* (88-168): "tessuti con bell'artificio a figure di animale e di piante, rilevati ad oro ed a colori diversi." On figures and portraits, cf. Michel, *Recherches sur le Commerce, la Fabrication et l'Usage des Étoffes de Soie, d'Or, et d'Argent*, Paris, 1852-54, especially II, 354-55.

² Related by the contemporary chronicler known as Benedict of Peterborough (Rolls Series), 1867, II, 159.

³ Cf. Amari, *Storia dei Musulmani in Sicilia*, Firenze, 1854-72, III, 800-1, and Michel, *op. cit.*, I, 73 f.

⁴ The English romance (circ. 1800), a translation from a lost French poem, represents her as coming in a magic ship (cf. the tale of the second Offa).

⁵ *Tergaunte* from *Tancred* is as possible as many other confusions that are known to have happened, as, for instance, *Balan* and *Laban*. The usual form of the first name is *Tervaga*(u)nt or in English *Termagant*; Tancred, in French, is sometimes *Tangré*, which, perhaps unfamiliar in 14th century English, might have been twisted into *Tergan*, *Tergan*[t], with some memory of the better-known *Tervagant*.

Mouskes, Fulkes or Foucon d'Anjou married a beautiful demon whom, while hunting, he found by a fountain in a wood¹ (cf. the tale of the first Offa). It is a fact that his daughter Cécile married Tangré d'Andioce,² ancestor of the Tancred whom Richard knew. Here are elements enough for confusion.³

Considering, together with this episode, the names which suggest an origin later than the work of Chretien de Troyes, and perhaps than that of Renauld de Beaujeu,⁴ I judge that the immediate original of *Emaré* arose between 1200 and 1250.

I incline also to think that it was, if a lay, at least much longer than the English, and that the minstrel knew it imperfectly or only in outline. On this point there is but little evidence, one way or the other; but the abruptness with which the account of the robe is thrust into the narrative suggests that something has been omitted for purposes of condensation,⁵ the presence of many curious details and scraps strongly suggestive of French,⁶ taken with the large per cent. of repetitions in which scarcely a word is changed, suggest an attempt to fill out the outline of a larger work, with imperfect knowledge of its details.⁷

§ 8. ORIGINS.

The ramifications of this tale extend so far back and so widely, that the extensive researches of Prof. Suchier, Dr. Gough and

¹ *Chronique Rimée* (13th century), ll. 18720-809.

² *Op. cit.*; l. 18363.

³ Curiously enough the name of Arthur is associated with the episode. Benedict says: "Rex autem Angliae dedit ei (i. e. Tancred) gladium optimum Arcturi, nobilis quondam regis Britonum, quem Britones vocaverunt Calibur-num" (*loc. cit.*).

⁴ Quoted early in the 13th century.

⁵ Cf. ll. 78-79 and 187-88. Between ll. 78 and 79, the subject is changed completely, from a description of the Emperor's character, which might lead up very well to l. 188, to an episode not in any way connected with the story as it stands in *Emaré*. Both the lack of connection and the rhymes suggest that at least six lines may have been omitted. Again, there are signs of corruption in ll. 187-88, the metre of the second being spoiled to explain the abrupt change of subject. Since the robe evidently belongs in the narrative, I must suppose that its proper relation has been lost as I suggest above. There are other marks of condensation and alteration, such as in ll. 232-40, the embassy to the Pope and his ready assent without inducement of any sort; ll. 799-804, the exile of the old queen, which is peculiar to this version, and replaces the long account of her punishment which is usually found; ll. 817-22, when the King does penance for a sin that he had not committed. Possibly in the original, as in Enikel's account, he ordered her to be set adrift.

⁶ Especially speeches and dramatic details of scenes.

⁷ The allusion to an oral source in l. 319 (and possibly in l. 24) if it is not purely conventional, may refer only to the fact that other forms of the tale were being carried about.

others,¹ have by no means exhausted the subject. I can contribute only a little more to the results already obtained and hope to continue the investigation.²

To the eighteen³ mediæval versions analyzed by Suchier, must be added at least two more: *La Filla de l'Emperador Contastí*⁴ (Catalan) and a play called *Columpnarium* (Latin).⁵

These twenty pieces, then, may be classified according to their place of origin as follows: Three in England, 12th–15th centuries: *Vita Offae Primi*⁶ (*V* 1, 1195–1214, St. Albans, Latin); *Chronique Anglo-Normande*⁷ by Nicholas Trivet (*Tr*, 1334–47, French); *Emaré* (*Em*, about 1400, Yorkshire, English).

Four in France, 13th–14th centuries: *La Manekine* by Philippe de Remy, Sire de Beaumanoir⁸ (*Man*, about 1270, near Beauvais, French); *La Comtesse d'Anjou* by Jehan Maillart⁹ (*Anj*, 1313–16, near Pontoise and Senlis, Normandy, French); *Columpnarium*¹⁰ (*Col*, 14th century, (?) Avignon, (?) Latin); *La Belle Hélène de Constantinople*, (*HC*, 1469, (?) Flanders, French).¹¹

Three in Germany, 13th–15th centuries: *Mai und Beafior*¹² (*Mai*, about 1260, Bavaria or Austria, (?) German); *Die Königstochter von Reussen*, by Jansen Enikel or Enenkel¹³ in his *Weltbuch*, or *Universal Chronicle* (*En*, 1277–1300, Vienna, German); *Die Königstochter von Frankreich* by Hans Von Bühel, or “der Büheler”¹⁴ (*Büh*, 1401, Poppelsdorf, near Bonn, German).

¹ Suchier, *op. cit.*, p. xxiii ff.; Gough, *Constance Saga*; for kindred folk-tales, Cox, *Cinderella* (*Folk Lore Society*), London, 1893, in addition to the works referred to by Suchier.

² In an edition of *La Belle Hélène de Constantinople*.

³ His No. 19 is a piece of sculpture that might represent *Hung*, *Ol*, *Vic*, *Cont* or even *HC*.

⁴ Published by Suchier, *Romania*, xxx, 519–33. Still other versions of the tale are announced to follow.

⁵ Mentioned by Creizenach, *Geschichte des Neueren Dramas*, Halle, 1893, I, 533–34 with note. Unpublished. The father is “Emolphus, rex Carillorum;” Phocis and Athens are among the scenes.

⁶ Ed. Wats, appendix to *Chronica Majora* of Matthew Paris, London, 1640–39; also *Originals and Analogues* (Chauc. Soc. [1888], pp. 73–84).

⁷ *Originals and Analogues*, pp. 2–70.

⁸ Ed. Suchier, *op. cit.*

⁹ Unpublished. MSS. 765 and Nouv. acquis. 4531, at Paris.

¹⁰ Apparently written for a member of the Colonna family. MS. Lat. 8163. Cf. Creizenach, *loc. cit.*

¹¹ Unpublished. This is apparently a recension of a much earlier romance, signed “Alexandry manu propria,” for “Loyse, Dame de Crequy,” who died in 1469 (Lyons MS. 767). It contains much matter relating to the 15th century, and certain episodes seem to refer it definitely to the year mentioned. But I must reserve discussion of this point until I edit the text.

¹² *Dictungen des deutschen Mittelalters*, VII, Leipzig, 1848.

¹³ Ed. Von der Hagen, *Gesammtabenteuer*, II, 1850, pp. 593–613.

¹⁴ Ed. Merzdorf, Oldenburg, 1867.

Seven in Italy, 14th–17th centuries: *Ystoria Regis Franchorum et Filie in qua Adulterium Comitere Voluit*¹ (*Yst*, written or copied in 1370, Latin); *Il Pecorone*, Dies X, No. 1, by Giovanni Fiorentino² (*Pec*, 1378, Dovadola, Italian); *Novella della Figlia del Re di Dacia*³ (*Dac*, end of the 14th century, Italian); *Miraculi de la Gloriosa Verzene Maria*,⁴ cap. XI (*Mir*, 1475, printed Vicenza, Italian); *De Origine inter Gallos et Britannos Belli Historia* by Bartolomeo Fazio⁵ (*Faz*, before 1457, Naples, (?) Latin); *Historia de la Regina Oliva*, by Joannes Florentinus⁶ (?) (*Ol*, 16th century, Italian); *La Penta Manomozza* in Basile's *Pentamerone*⁷ (*Pen*, before 1637, Naples, Italian).

Three in Spain, 14th–15th centuries: *Historia del Rey de Hungria*⁸ (*Hung*, end of the 14th century, Catalan); *Le Victorial* by Gutierre Diaz de Gamez⁹ (*Vic*, from before 1435 to 1449, Spanish); *La Filla de l'Emperador Contasti* (*Cont*, 15th century, Catalan).¹⁰

This shows clearly the progress of the legend. Spreading from England, by the end of the 13th century it had passed through France and Germany, during the 14th century it reached Italy and Spain, died out in Spain in the 15th, but continued in Italy until the 17th; in the 14th also it was revived in England in English,¹¹ but is not known to have persisted long after 1400.¹²

In tracing out the development of the tale, we find at once

¹ Unpublished. MS. Lat. 8701 at Paris. ² Ed. 1878.

³ Ed. Wesselofsky, Pisa, 1866. ⁴ Ed. Vicenza, 1475.

⁵ Ed. Camusat, *Bibliotheca Ciacconii*, Paris, 1731. The copy in the British Museum is dated at Amsterdam and Leipzig, 1744, (cols. 893–902).

⁶ The poem itself is unpublished, but the play based upon it has been edited by D'Ancona, Pisa, 1863, and included by him in his *Sacre Rappresentazioni*, Florence, 1872, III, 250 ff. ⁷ Ed. Liebrecht, Breslau, 1846.

⁸ Ed. Bofarull y Mascaró, *Documentos Literarios en Antigua Lengua Catalana*, Barcelona, 1857, pp. 53–59.

⁹ Ed. Lemcke, *Bruchstücke aus den noch ungedruckten Theilen des Vitorial von Gutierre Diez de Games*, Marburg, 1865, p. 20; also translated into French by Counts de Circourt and de Puymaigre, Paris, 1867, Livre II, ch. 26, p. 258.

¹⁰ Grouped according to language, 4 are Latin, *VI*, *Yst*, *Col*, *Faz*; 4 are French, *Man*, *Anj*, *Tr*, *HC*; 3 German, *Mai*, *En*, *Büh*; 5 Italian, *Pec*, *Dac*, *Mir*, *Ol*, *Pen*; 2 Catalan, 1 Spanish, *Hung*, *Cont*, *Vic*: 1 English, *Em*. Classified according to form, 6 are romances: *Man*, *Anj*, *HC*, *Mai*, *Büh*, *Em*; 6 are attempts to reduce romance material to history: *VI*, *Yst*, *Faz*, *Tr*, *Vic* (prose), and *En* (verse); 5 are *novelle*: *Pec*, *Dac*, *Pen*, *Hung*, *Cont*; 2 are dramas, *Col*, *Ol*; one is a prose *miracle*, *Mir*.

¹¹ Tr's French was quickly translated into English prose by an unknown writer, and into verse by Chaucer and Gower.

¹² These dates refer to the literary versions only, not to the folk-lore, in which it lives on in many countries.

numerous and important differences between *V 1* on the one hand, and *Tr* and *Em* on the other; also between *V 1*, and *Man*, *Mai* and the original *HC* (**HC*). It is impossible that *V 1* should have developed into these other forms without important influence from outside.

Taking first the English versions, we find the following fundamental differences: (1) the exposure is twice in the forest (*V 1*) instead of twice on the sea (*Tr*, *Em*); (2) there are two children (*V 1*), one child (*Tr*, *Em*); (3) they are cut to pieces and brought to life by a miracle, and the heroine is twice threatened with such a death and twice spared (*V 1*); there is no such mutilation (*Tr*, *Em*); (4) they are protected by a hermit (*V 1*), by a Roman (*Tr*, *Em*); (5) the scene is entirely localized in England (*V 1*), in part at Rome (*Tr*, *Em*).

It seems probable that *V 1* was written down largely from oral tradition in English, which may or may not have survived in definite poetical form. The only poem that might be related to it is the eighth century *Wife's Complaint*.¹ This alludes to two definite periods of exile with an interval between, to sorrow for separation from a husband, and to treachery on the part of "kinsmen"; and the heroine seems to be dwelling in a cave in the forest. No names are given, and no children are mentioned; the circumstances of the double exile and the forest chiefly connect this epic fragment with *V 1*.² Aside from this, *V 1* is the oldest known form of the legend.

The first problem is to discover, if possible, the origin of the variations enumerated. Certain differences between *Tr* and *Em* can be explained on the basis of a different intermediary, *Em* claiming a "lay" as its original and being certainly derived from the French; *Tr*, "lez Aunciene cronikes de sessounz" or "lestoire de sessouns,"³ and showing signs of an English original.⁴

¹ Cf. *Old English Offa Saga* in *Modern Philology*, June 1904, and January 1905.

² But there is no strong evidence against their identity. Cf. *O. E. Offa Saga*, Jan. 1905, p. 45 f. (reprint). *Playm[e] d'Egareye* is "The Exiled Woman's Complaint," cf. p. xx, with note 3, above.

³ *Originals and Analogues*, p. 3.

⁴ This is disputed; but the English sentence on p. 19 seems to favour an immediate source in English not older than the 12th century. This, as Gough suggests (*Constance Saga*, pp. 21-22), may have been a French chronicle of Saxon history; but one slight additional bit of evidence in favour of an English original has been overlooked. *Tr* says that the Saxons called *Constance Couste* (p. 41). But *Couste* is not Saxon. It can scarcely be derived from any other source than the pun in *Li Dis de l'Empereour Constant*:

An important cycle of legends, which has been recognized to touch that of the Outcast Wife at various points, is that of Constantine the Great (*Const*).¹ Inasmuch as the great majority of the versions agree in general outline with *Tr* and *Em* over against *V 1*, I shall relate briefly the parallel account in *Const* and point out the coincidences in the notes.

Helena, the daughter of a king or nobleman,² either goes to Rome on a pilgrimage,³ or flees thither secretly for some reason,⁴ sometimes with a nurse or attendant,⁵ and sometimes in disguise.⁶ Her child is born under different circumstances, but the parallel is close where the tale describes how she worked with her hands to support and educate the boy, who soon by his gifts attracted the love of all who knew him.⁷ With the kidnapping of Constantine, the parallel is lost; but it reappears in the account of the jewels

"Et pour çou qu'il ot cousté tant
Li missent il a non Coustant." (ll. 235-36)

If Trivet had found the word *cousté* in its proper context, he knowing French would never have fallen into the blunder that it was Saxon. On the other hand, if his Saxon authority had taken over the word without the pun, he, not associating it with any French source, might easily have assumed that it must be Saxon. This furnishes a bit of evidence for the association of the Constantine legend with the Outcast Wife cycle (cf. *Romania*, VI, 1877, pp. 161-98, on the Constantine legend).

¹ Cf. Suchier, *op. cit.*, p. lxxv, n. 1, and Graf, *Roma nella Memoria e nelle Immaginazioni del Medio Evo*, Torino, 1882-83, II, 46 ff.

² For a full account, see Wesselofsky, *Romania*, VI, 101-98; and Coen, *Archivio della Società Romana di Storia Patria*, Roma, 1881, IV, 1-55, 293-316, 535-61; V, 33-66, 489-541.

³ In *Pec*, the heroine flees in pilgrim's dress; in *Cont*, her explanation of her second exile is "e vaig en pelegrinatge (533)."

⁴ "Multi eam clam patriam fugisse affirmant" (Horstmann, *Nova Legenda Anglie*, Oxford, 1901, II, 14).

⁵ The nurse is prominent in *HC*, *Mai*, *Anj*, *Yst*, *Dac*, *Em*, *Col*.

⁶ So in *Pec*, *Faz*, *Dac*. Once in *Const* she is disguised as a man (cf. Coen, *Archivio*, IV, 33 n.); so in *Yst* and in *Büh* (the beginning of the second flight).

⁷ The life of the mother and child in Rome agrees in many respects with *Em*, *Tr*, *Mai*, *Man*, *En*, *Yst*, *Pec*, *Büh*, *Ol*, *Faz*, *Cont*; and is traceable in *HC* and *Dac* (13). In *Pen*, the scene is changed but the circumstances are recognizable, as perhaps they are also, though not so clearly, in *Anj*. *Mir* follows *V 1* in its total disagreement; *Vic* does not contain the second exile, and *Col* I have not seen. Most of these agree in allowing the lapse of many years (from 7 to upwards of 30) between the parting of husband and wife, and contain a description of the youth and education of the boy (*Anj* alone agrees with *V 1* and *Mir* in leaving but a short time).

In *Man*, the heroine is a housekeeper, in *Büh* a servant, in *HC* a washer-woman and a beggar; she also begs in *Büh* and in *Cont*; in *Dac* and *Faz* she is a nurse; in *Em* a nurse and does beautiful embroidery; in *Anj*, she does embroidery and teaches it during the first exile, and in the second depends upon charity. In *Mai*, *En*, *Tr*, *Yst*, *Ol*, she is dependent upon charity; in *Pen* she is the queen's maid during the first exile, and depends upon charity in the second. The attractiveness of the child is everywhere prominent.

brought across the sea by the young princess of Constantinople,¹ and of the exquisite needlework with which she supports the family;² in Constantine's attracting the attention of his father, the emperor Constantius on a public occasion;³ in the reunion of the family at a banquet,⁴ and in the recognition by means of a ring.⁵ The emperor makes Constantine his heir, and according to some accounts then first marries the mother.⁶

Thus it appears that (1) the substitution of one child for two,⁷ (2) the absence of mutilation, hermit and miracle,⁸ (3) the life of the woman and child under humble circumstances, and the boy's education at Rome, and the recognition through the son at a banquet by means of a ring, are all accounted for on the hypothesis

¹ Such jewels appear in most of the versions; in *Pec* the woman lives by the sale of jewels inherited from her mother, as in *Const* the princess, by those given by her mother. In several versions, a priceless jewelled robe is especially described (notably *Em*, *Mai*, *En*, *Anj*). In *Const*, the empress of Constantinople gives her daughter "de vasis vestibus et aliis quibuscumque apparatibus auro et argento et gemmis pretiosissimis adornatis . . . addens et de thesauris pannorum sericeorum," etc. (*Incerti Auctoris de Constantino Magno ejusque Matre Helena Libellus*, ed. Heydenreich, Lipsiae, 1879, p. 10, ll. 14-21). In another version, the emperor gives Helena instead of a ring a peplum of imperial purple (Coen, *op. cit.*, IV, p. 298).

² Here the needlework, prominent in *Anj*, *Büh*, *Em*, *Yst* (perhaps hinted at in *Man*, ll. 5880-84), is transferred to the daughter-in-law, the description of her work, however, being in perfect accord: "Nurus vero Helenae in textura operum muliebrium sumptuosorum et nobilium secundum quod suam decuit condicionem more subtilitatum Graeciae bene erudita bonam pecuniam de labore manuum cottidie lucrabatur" (p. 20, ll. 9-12). Other versions must have attributed it to Helena herself, as there are traditions that she was a famous needlewoman. An embroidered Madonna said to be of her making is still shown at Vercelli, and an inventory of the treasures of Philip the Good contains an altar-cloth attributed to her (cf. Michel, *op. cit.*, II, 336, with note 6).

³ The recognition comes about through the son, in *Man*, *Tr*, *Büh*, *Em*, *Ol*, *Faz*, *Pen*, and in *HC* (under very different circumstances); and the boy is prominent in *Mai* and *En*.

⁴ The banquet is found in *Mai*, *Man*, *En*, *Anj*, *Tr*, *Em*, *Ys*, *Büh*, *Faz*, *Ol*, *Pen* and in *HC* (the recognition of the sons only).

⁵ The ring is a device in *Man*, *Cont* and *Ol* (in *HC* it is on the arm which Brice carries, and leads to recognition).

⁶ In *HC*, this seems to be echoed in the story of the Oriental princess Plaisance. She gives herself to Constantine, but in a moment of peril flees from him across the sea; she lives with a senator in Rome, where her son is born; and after many years of separation, hardship and wanderings, meets Constantine at Rome and marries him. Here is the senator who appears in *Man*, *Tr* (with a wife *Helena*) in *Mai* and in *En* (where the child is *Constantine*). *Iurdan* may even be a corruption of his name (in *HC*) *Joseran*.

⁷ *Mai*, *En*, *Man*, *Anj*, *Tr*, *Hung*, *Dac*, *Büh*, *Em*, *Ol*, *Faz*, *Cont*, *Pen* (13) have one; *V 1*, *HC*, *Yst*, *Pec*, and *Mir* (6) have two.

⁸ In *Mai*, *En* (I do not consider scratching the face and cutting the hair an equivalent, as it meant only temporary disfigurement and required no miracle), *Anj*, *Tr*, *Büh*, *Em*, *Faz*, *Cont* (though the hand is brought in curiously by the trying on of the mother's glove which exactly fits).

of influence from *Const.*¹ The exposure in an open boat or cask I take to be from an entirely different source,² but some of the versions in which the heroine escapes by flight³ may have come under the influence of *Const.*

Further, the influence of *Const* appears plainly in the names: in *HC*, we have Helena and Constantine, who is also sometimes called Constans, in evident confusion with his father, and Constantinople, of which the heroine's father is emperor; in *Tr*, Tiberie Constantine and Constance⁴ (Couste), and Helena⁵ her cousin; in *KR* (the prose version dependent upon the source of *En*) the boy is baptized Constantine;⁶ in *Cont*, the girl's father is the Emperor Contasti.⁷ In *Ol*, the emperor is Giuliano = Julian, who succeeded Constantine, after the short reign of the former's three sons, and married his daughter Helena.⁸

Another possible connection between the two cycles is this. In many of the folk-lore tales, the heroine is an inn-keeper's daughter.

¹ *Mai*, *En*, *Man*, *Tr*, *Yst*, *Pec*, *Büh*, *Em*, *Ol*, *Faz*, *Cont* (11); in *HC* and *Dac*, in part; in *Anj*, the poverty only; in *Hung*, a convent; in *V 1* as in *Mir*, the woods of Britain; in *Pen*, in woods, but afterwards at the house of a sorcerer whose abode is quite unlike that of a hermit. Further, a pagan (witness the case of Vergil) was far more likely to have been transformed into a magician than was a hermit.

² See p. xliii below.

³ *HC*, *Yst*, *Pec*, *Dac*, *Faz*.

⁴ Perhaps *Tr*'s confusion arose in part from the duplication of the names in connection with the two emperors: Constantine the Great had a sister Constancia, a daughter Constantina and three sons, Constantius, Constantine and Constans; Tiberius Constantine, a daughter Constantina. The unique opening incident in *Tr* is perhaps to be explained by some legend of the Emperor Maurice and his wife Constantina, who with their children were persecuted and obtained a certain reputation as Christian martyrs. Gough has shown (*Constance Saga*, pp. 34-46) that stories not unlike this in general character were current in the 12th century about Edwin. But he suggests no material that explains the important differences between *V 1* and nearly all the later versions. The only incident for which it might possibly account is the bringing up of the child with a boy of the same age to whom his mother is nurse (in *Dac*, *Faz*, and in part, in *Mai*). It is possible that more evidence on the Edwin-saga may be forthcoming; but with the facts known at present I cannot accept this as the foundation of the great bulk of the versions. Further, it seems to me that Trivet may have known that he was foisting the tale upon history, for at the end (p. 43) he suddenly introduces Edwin, without accounting for him in any way.

⁵ So with Helena. It was the name of Constantine the Great's mother and one of his daughters; of Tiberius Constantine's wife, according to one account, which mentions also a jealous mother-in-law (Gibbon, *op. cit.*, V, 17, with n. 34); likewise, of the wife of Constantine Porphyrogenitus (944), who might have helped on the legend. Is Erayne in *Em* a corruption of Elayne?

⁶ Cf. *Mai und Beafst*, p. xxii.

⁷ And merchants take the place of the rudderless boat. This may have come from *Const* or from *Florence of Rome*.

⁸ A.D. 355. A contemporary legend is attached to her name to the effect that all her children were killed at birth by the jealousy of her sister-in-law, the Empress Eusebia. See Gibbon (1896-98), II, 258-59, 406-7. This might have helped on the legend of Helena.

Suchier explains this as a natural interpretation in later times of the fact that the letters were changed at the old woman's dwelling, hence she must have been an innkeeper;¹ but in the popular tales it is the heroine, not the traitress, who is connected with the inn. Now Helena is called *stabularia* by St. Ambrose, who was born within twenty-five years of her death;² and later writers who wished to argue for her lawful marriage as more consonant with sainthood tried to explain the word away. Hence the association was pretty well established.³

That *Const* is as old as the Outcast Wife tale is probable. The legend of the finding of the Cross began in the 4th century,⁴ the legend of Constantine's birth was alluded to by Bede⁵ early in the 8th century, certain episodes of the cycle were worked up by Cynewulf,⁶ a little later, while a Greek legend, apparently of the same century, the martyrdom of St. Eusignius of Antioch, tells a well-defined story not unlike the one I have outlined. In this, Helena is the beautiful daughter of an innkeeper, and Constantius gives her a peplum of royal purple. Years after, wanting an heir to his kingdom, he sends messengers in quest of one. At the inn, their attention is attracted by Constantine, who mounts one of their horses. When they would reprove him, Helena tells his origin, and shows the peplum; and he is adopted by the emperor.⁷

Having proved that *Const* accounts for the differences between *V I* and *Mir*, and the great majority of versions, we may note that the juxtaposition rather than blending of the two stories is most visible in *HC*, in which we find the two children, the mutilation, hermit and miracle, combined with exposure at sea and sojourn at Rome, together with the episode of the senator, which is transferred to the parallel tale of Plaisance and Constantine. All this matter is connected with legends of St. Martin, possibly by confusion with another empress of the same name.⁸

¹ *Op. cit.*, p. lxxvii.

² Graf, *op. cit.*, II, 53.

³ Horstmann, *NLA*, II, pp. 13-14.

⁴ Cf. Smith and Wace, *Dic. of Christian Biog.*, Constantine the Great.

⁵ *Hist. Eccles.*, IV, 523.

⁶ *Elene*.

⁷ Coen, *op. cit.*, IV, 297-98. For other early references and variants, cf. Graf, *op. cit.*, pp. 46-120. Graf shows how from a *stabularia*, Helena came to be considered a princess of Treves or Britain, or the East, her estate growing with the legend.

⁸ Sulpicius Severus (*Dialogues*, II, ch. 6, 7) relates how the empress waited upon Martin at table and afterwards dined off the fragments. According to a Welsh tradition (cf. Gibbon, *op. cit.*, III, 136, note) she was called Helena. The passage is suggestive of *HC* in several ways; but more evidence is needed to establish a connection.

Gough supposes that **HC* arose at Tours, carried thither from England during the English domination of Touraine, 1154–1205, and this is possible.¹ But I think we may trace the connection further back.

Two of the English versions place some of the scenes in Yorkshire; the third seems to have been written in that very district.² **HC* certainly arose at Tours. Now the literary connection of York and Tours, in the personality of Alcuin at the end of the eighth century, is one of the important facts of the Dark Ages.³ It meant that practically the whole of the lore of Northern England at that time was transferred—very literally in the form of copies—to Tours, whence it would readily spread over the Continent.⁴

Const flourished very early in Britain and was particularly connected with York;⁵ hence some form of it was almost certain to have been among Alcuin's books. Whether he took also sagas of Offa of Ongle is far more doubtful. He would not have approved of their pagan character;⁶ and it is impossible to say how far they had developed by the time of Offa of Mercia. Certainly the legend in *V 1* as we have it, is not alluded to at that time, as is the combat by the river,⁷ though the *Wife's Complaint*, which is of the eighth century, shows that similar stories were current then.⁸

In England, before 1200, we have *V 1* quite uninfluenced by *Const*, which, however, appears much later in *Tr* and *Em*. On the continent, Mélusine-tales were early attached to Foulques d'Anjou, and perhaps through his devotion to St. Martin of Tours, his legend came to be bound up with matter relating to that saint, and with *Const*, brought to Tours by Alcuin (as in *HC*). But *Man*, though on a much larger scale, barring certain changes due to the author and the episode of the cut hand (taken perhaps from **HC*),

¹ But it does not seem to me to explain the divergences between three versions as closely related in time and place as **HC*, *Man* and *Anj*.

² *V 1*, *Tr* and *Em*. Historically, the connection with York and the expedition against the Picts and Scots (cf. *Tr*, *Büh* and doubtless *Pec*) may have been taken from the career of Constantine, but it is curious to note that in Trivet's time (1318) the Scots invaded Yorkshire and burned Knaresborough.

³ Cf. Gaskoin, *Alcuin*, London, 1904, p. 55.

⁴ *Ibid.*, quoting a letter written by Alcuin, p. 100 (Jaffé, *Monumenta Alcuiniana*, Berlin, 1864, p. 346. He urges that his books be sent him from York to Tours that they may be known in France as well as in England.

⁵ Gibbon, *op. cit.*, I, 399 ff.

⁶ Cf. Gaskoin, pp. 39, 40, 52, 104.

⁷ Contained in the first part of *V 1*. In *Widsið*, ll. 35–45.

⁸ That the legend underlying the *Wife's Complaint* is closely allied, even if not the same, is undeniable.

agrees closely in its general outline with *Em*,¹ also, the source of *Mai* and *En*, although further removed by processes of translation, and modified by other matter, preserves a form between *Em* and *Man*,² while *Anj* shows no close essential connection with *Em* or *Tr* and relates itself, if to any form, to *V1*, which may have been derived from England, direct but late and imperfect, by the Sieur de Viarmes et Chamblay.³

It is not necessary here to follow out the later developments in great detail.⁴

¹ There are good reasons for holding that Beaumanoir spent several years in England (Suchier, *op. cit.*, I, p. x); and the probable date of his story, 1261-65, would have been shortly after the French lay was composed. But even if he knew the lay, Beaumanoir probably altered and augmented it, partly by fancy, partly according to other traditions.

² That is, it preserves some features that have been lost, obscured, or altered in *Man*, particularly *Mai* which retains the robe and the nurse. Cf. Suchier and Gough, *Constance Saga*, for the relationships of *Man*, *Mai* and *En*, which are indisputable. The late *Büh* seems to me purely a combination of forms similar to *Man* (but earlier than Beaumanoir, as the cut hand is lacking) and *Tr*. It would seem natural to suppose that he had used *Mai* and *En*, but the differences are important. It agrees with *Yst* and *Pec* in identifying the heroine with the daughter of a King of France; but aside from this, in few essentials. If the author was a soldier in the English army (cf. Gough, *Constance Saga*, pp. 28-30) he may have got there a version akin to *Tr*'s original.

³ Who took part in negotiations with the English in 1303. The romance as it stands is so full of local colour and incidents that might have come from the poet's observation, that it would seem his lord told him only an outline corresponding roughly to *V1*, in so far as it gives the story of an innocent woman twice exiled in the forest. It retains the primitive feature, in that there is no talk of the Pope or of marriage. The nurse is prominent, though she is dropped abruptly at the time of the marriage (as in *Em*, but later) and the treasure and needlework are emphasized. The account of the teaching of needlework to the seneschal's daughter here resembles the tale of *Berte*, wherein the seneschal's wife is called Constance. Possibly it is *Berte* that borrows this episode, together with a closely associated meeting with a hermit in the forest, from some earlier form of the Outcast Wife tale. In *Anj*, there is no mutilation and but one child, the circumstances and details differ totally from every other version, and the second exile is very short. The unnatural father dies of grief soon after, the traitress is the aunt, the girl flees into the forest the first time, and the second is condemned to be thrown with her child into a well in the forest, the countess is besieged before she is burned (in *Büh*, *Ol*, *Cont* also, but perhaps suggested in each case by *HC*, in which she is first imprisoned in a castle, then burned); the count seeks his wife in the garb of a serf, and the meeting happens in a *Hôtel Dieu*. This poem looks more like a genuine work of creation than any other version; but some of its matter may have been derived from the gestes of the early Dukes of Anjou, which seem to be a mine of tradition as yet largely unexplored.

⁴ The changes of scene make a study in themselves. Aside from England, Rome and Constantinople, we find Greece early introduced, doubtless as connected with Constantinople. But *Man* makes the father King of Hungary. This might have come through *Berte*, whose father was King of Hungary, or through *Florence*, in which Emere and Miles belong to that country. It is noteworthy that legend made St. Martin also son of a King of Hungary (cf. especially *Le Mystère de la Vie et Hystoire de Monseigneur Sainct Martin*, 15th century, ed. Boisthibault, Paris, 1841), and that even

The Italian and Spanish versions are secondary, derived from the forms already discussed, so blended, condensed, augmented and inverted that their exact relationship is extremely difficult to follow.

In Italy, the oldest account seems to be the greatly condensed *Yst*,¹ which in general reads like a condensation of **HC*. Then comes *Pec*² also borrowed from **HC*. *Dac* is a thoroughly mixed version, but most of its elements are found in *HC*, though differently arranged and combined there.³ When Fazio came to compile his artificial and arbitrary version, he had certainly *Dac* and *Pec*, possibly several other versions before him.⁴ *Ol* gathers up into itself features borrowed from *Mir*, *Florence of Rome*, *Em* and *Cont*.⁵ *Mir* stands absolutely apart and belongs to this cycle only

St. Helena was, according to some writers, said to have been born in that land (cf. Graf. *op. cit.*, II, 54 ff.). But the idea of the Roman Empire was perhaps the basis for them all (cf. *Huon de Bordeaux*, in which Julius Caesar is King of Hungary and Austria, and "Sire" of Constantinople).

¹ It combines a voyage by land and one across the sea with a mariner. The two sons are educated by a cardinal. Its chief difference is a connection with the Hundred Years' War; but this is sufficiently explained by the date at which it was written. The duke whom the heroine marries might have been conceived as one who also ruled England. Richard Cœur de Lion was called *Comte d'Anjou* (cf. Tarbé, *Chansons de Blondel de Néele*, Reims, 1862, pp. 129, 151); and the French origin of the girl might have been derived from the Holy Roman Empire (cf. *Mir*, "nel tempo nel quale fo traslat(at)o el romano imperio al re de Franzia"). It is not certain that **HC* was connected with Constantinople.

² The opening incident is altered. The girl flees to avoid marrying an old German lord; otherwise the tale is a fair condensation, with minor changes. One son is called Lionetto (cf. Leo in *HC*).

³ It shows however a certain influence from the source of *Mai*, in that the heroine, who has but one child, becomes nurse to another about the same age. On what ground Gough derives it from the same source as *Hung I* cannot see. It contains much extraneous religious material.

⁴ From *Pec* he seems to have taken the convent episode; and from *Dac* the woman's acting as nurse to a child the age of her own. But he seems to have inverted deliberately the leading parts in order to fit them with his idea of the Hundred Years' War.

⁵ From *Mir* it evidently gets the two cut hands and the method of recovery, the exposure in the forest of Britain or Brittany (stanzas of the older *Stella*, the dramatization of *Mir*, are embodied); from *Florence of Rome*, the episode of the scorned knight killing the child of which she is the nurse, and getting her banished to the woods as a result; from *Cont* apparently, the besieging of the mother and burning her in her convent, the use of the ring and perhaps the merchants who took her to the King of Castile. The cask seems to have been borrowed from *En*, unless it comes directly from *Apollonius of Tyre*. The conclusion at Rome again seems to follow *Cont*. Wesselofsky holds that it was also influenced by the legend of Saint Oliva of Palermo. Aside from the name, the chief point of contact is in the double persecution by land and by sea. The saint first crosses the sea (but under different circumstances, "e patria abducta, atque in Africam deportata") and is afterwards driven into a wild forest where she lives as a hermit for years (Fazellus, *De Rebus Siculis*, Cataniae, 1749-53, II, 303). It is probable that the slight resemblance warranted the attachment of the name Oliva; but there are no special traces of the legend itself.

in its second part, the first coming from the kindred tale of the cruel stepmother.¹

Of the Spanish versions, *Vic* in its details suggests *Hung* which depends very directly upon *Man*, though by its own assertion it goes back to a French original, probably *Man*.² *Cont* represents a French version older than *Man* and in several respects comes so curiously close to *Em* as to suggest that it depends upon an original nearly related to that of *Em*.³

But among all these relationships⁴ there is nothing that suggests the difference already observed in the method of exposure. I have alluded to the fact that by the end of the 12th century, the legends of the two Offas had become thoroughly confused.⁵ The ancient story of Thrytho from *Beowulf* was transferred to Offa of Mercia, and confused with some legend of a Frankish princess relating to that same King and Charlemagne. I have elsewhere tried to point out the historic and legendary basis of such a tale. As it stands in *V 2*,⁶ it shows several curious coincidences with the Outcast Wife series: (1) in *V 2*, the heroine says that she was exiled because of a certain marriage which "ne degeneraret, spreuit." The verbs here suggest the opening incident in the series. It is not likely that Charlemagne would have tried to marry her to a man of low rank.⁷ But if the allusion is to pride of race as in *Beowulf*, *En* stands alone in an extraordinary agreement:

"des muotes ward sie alsô reich, (cf. Mōd Ðrȳðo wæg).

Daȝ sie kainen man wolt' nemen,

wan der ir ȝe mann(e) möcht' ȝezemen."⁸

¹ It approaches *V 1* most nearly, with a different opening episode borrowed from some tale similar to *Little Snow-White*. It differs in the important points that (1) the heroine's hands are cut off, but her children are safe; (2) the duke goes to a tournament at the court of his father-in-law, instead of the wars in the North; (3) the duke leaves her in his father's care. *Mir* does not follow *V 1* in representing the war as occurring some time after the birth of the children, or the treachery as coming from the girl's father. It resembles *V 1* chiefly in the hunting episode and the part of the hermit.

² The placing the hands on a dish before the King probably comes from *Hung*.

³ An Anglo-Norman *lai* of the reign of Henry III (whose wife and sister-in-law were both princesses of Provence) might easily have been conveyed to the South of France, thence translated into Catalan.

⁴ The detailed comparisons instituted by Suchier, and followed up by Gough with great minuteness, I have not thought it necessary to repeat, as my results agree except where I have called attention to the differences.

⁵ Cf. *O. E. Offa Saga*, Jan. 1905, p. 18 ff. (reprint).

⁶ That is *Vita Offae Secundi* (of Mercia, 767-96) in Wats's edition.

⁷ And he was accused of incest; so likewise was Arthur (aside from *Emaré*).

⁸ Ll. 14-16. *Beowulf*, l. 1931 f.; cf. also the prose: "Diu wolte ouch keinen man nemen denne der ir geuiele" (pp. ix, x).

Again, in *V 2*, the real reason of her exile is said to be "crimen flagitiosissimum";¹ in *Hung*² and *Cont*,³ she describes herself as a wicked woman and in *En* is described by the queen-mother as "ain boese; weip."⁴

In *V 2*, "addicta est iudicialiter morti ignominiose, uerum ob regie dignitatis reuerentiam igni uel ferro tradenda non iudicatur, sed in naucula armamentis carente apposit[a],"⁵ etc., is very like *Vic*, where the King's Council conclude: "Non es derecho que ansí muera, mas el derecho manda, que muger de linaje real que errare, que la non maten, mas que la metan en una nave sola," etc.⁶ So in *Hung*, while some of the barons advise that she be drawn and burned, others, "faes devorar a besties salvatjes," one says put her into a "barcha sens nul govern" and let God take the responsibility.⁷ Again, the parents in *V 2* retired to a monastery in their disgust with the marriage;⁸ in *Cont*⁹ and in *Ol*,¹⁰ the mother retires to a convent.

Even if all these coincidences are accidental, the fact remains that in England in the 8th century and again in the 12th century, we have a legend of a woman charged with a crime, exposed at sea in an open boat,¹¹ while in the 13th this appears twice (the originals of *Em* and of *Man*), and once in the early 14th (*Tr*), attached to the Outcast Wife Cycle.

The fundamental idea of *V 1* is incest. The whole story is the double vengeance of the baffled father; in *Tr*, it is jealousy (twice repeated) of the mother-in-law;¹² in *Em*, it is first the one then the other.

The source of the incest idea is almost certainly *Apollonius of Tyre*, which was known in England in the 10th or 11th century, and was enormously popular throughout Europe. This is twice at least connected with the tale under consideration: once, in *HC* where

¹ Ed. Wats, p. 12, l. 32 f.

² "Fembra pecadriu ere" (ed. Bofarull, p. 60).

³ In the second journey: "Io son fembre nada de peccat" (*op. cit.*, p. 533). The allusion here, however, may be purely general.

⁴ Ll. 271-72. So the prose: "mich hát min untât dà her brânt" (p. xi); and *Mai*: vmb untat ist verstözen (col. 68, 7-8).

⁵ Ed. Wats, *loc. cit.*

⁶ Ed. Lemcke, p. 21.

⁷ *Loc. cit.*

⁸ Ed. Wats, *loc. cit.*

⁹ *Op. cit.*, p. 530.

¹⁰ Ed. D'Ancona, III, 274.

¹¹ The introduction of the closed boat, which in *En* becomes a cask, may have been suggested by *La Comtesse de Pontieu* (Moland and D'Héricault, *Nouvelles françoises en prose du xiii^e siècle*, Paris, 1856), which in turn may go back to the chest in *Apollonius of Tyre*.

¹² I doubt whether *Tr* is simply repeating his motive. The details of the first part suggest a story akin to the *Kyng of Tars*, possibly related of Maurice and his wife Constance.

the King made his daughter sleep in his room,¹ and in *Yst* where the girl alludes to Antiochus, "pro cum eius filia ipso delicto," etc.² Once suggested, the idea related itself in *Em* to similar tales³ of Arthur, and on the Continent to an Emperor of Rome or King of France, probably through Charlemagne who was both.

The jealous mother-in-law seems to be borrowed from *Mélusine*, or some other early version of the Swan-Maiden Cycle, which flourished in the 12th century.⁴ This is seen by the suggestion of monstrous or abnormal children, which is an elementary feature of the tales in which a mortal marries a fay or wood-nymph, the transformed Valkyrie. But the supernatural woman was found sometimes in the forest, sometimes in a ship, as in the legend of Richard Cœur de Lion.⁵ Here note that her real name *Bertrade* was perhaps associated with that of the Valkyrie *Bertha*, as was *Cynethryth* (= *Quendrida* in *V 2*) with that of the Valkyrie *Thrytho*.

The forging of a letter is perhaps a natural device, suggested by the King's absence, and is not necessarily borrowed from *Const* where the use is so different.⁶ Still, it is only *V 1* and *Li Dis de l'Empereour Coustant* that it seems to be found as early as the 13th century.

The most difficult problem in the development of the series is the cut-hand episode. In only two of the folk-lore versions, among 43 known to me, is it combined with the incest; on the other hand, it is found regularly where the persecution comes from the step-mother, as in *Mir*, where the hands are used in evidence of death, as in the *Little Snow-White* group; in *Berte*, the heart or tongue (a sow's or dog's used); in the legend of St. Hildegard, the eyes (a dog's used).⁷ This with its original significance appears

¹ MS. Lyons, 767, fol. 3, 3a, 4a.

² MS. Lat., 8701, fol. 142.

³ The tale of Ragallach (O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, London, 1892, 430 ff.) is fundamentally different not only in its details, but in the fact that the king is ignorant of his daughter's identity.

⁴ Cf. *O.E. Offa Saga*, pp. 41-43. There is also such a character in *Partonope of Blois*. It is possible, however, that *Const* comes in here as well. The Empress Fausta, wife of Constantine the Great, was believed guilty of the death of her step-son Crispus, and through the agency of Helena, her mother-in-law, is supposed to have been put to death by her husband on a charge of adultery. There was a strong belief shortly after her death that she was innocent, and Chrysostom says that she was exposed in a desert to be devoured by wild beasts (cf. Gibbon, II, 210-11).

⁵ See poem of that name (Weber, *English Metrical Romances*, London, 1810, II, ll. 63-229), with Mouskes, *op. cit.*, ll. 18720-809.

⁶ Here the order of death to the bearer, is replaced by the command that he of the letter is to marry the princess.

⁷ Cf. *O.E. Offa Saga*, p. 44, n. 1.

nowhere in the cycle except in *Mir* and in very clumsy form in *HC*, where, however, it is followed logically by the feature that the cut-hand intended as evidence of execution, with its ring becomes a means of identification. Elsewhere this mutilation occurs only in *Mun*, where it is explained by the mediæval idea that no cripple could succeed to a throne;¹ in *Hung*, *Ol*, *Vic* and *Pen* where it is motivated by the hypothesis that the beauty of the hands especially attracted the father (brother);² hence in these last both hands are cut.

In *V 1*, the idea seems to be fundamentally different. The children are killed by having their hands and feet cut off, and this is the punishment apparently twice threatened for the heroine, but never carried out.³ This was not done to furnish evidence of death, but merely as a punishment, possibly with the additional idea of preventing escape; incidentally, it opened up the way for a miracle.

The miracle indeed is the link between the two ideas; and the cut-hand was retained long after the original reason for it was forgotten, in order that the miracle might be worked. This hypothesis at least seems to me in accord with the facts; and therefore I hold that the episode as it stands represents two very old Germanic ideas—(1) a definite form of inflicting death, and (2) mutilation as evidence of death, strangely transformed in some cases, but preserved for the miraculous opportunity it furnished.⁴

The other principal legends which influence the series are *Berte* and *Florence of Rome*. *Berte* seems to be the oldest known form of a legend akin to the wicked step-mother tale. Its influence is seen possibly in the mutilation or threat of injury; in *Anj*, perhaps, in the finding of the heroine in the woods by the seneschal and the subsequent episode in which she teaches his daughters embroidery.⁵ Perhaps it appears also in the incident of the false charge of murder and the bloody knife (though in *Tr*, this is obviously parallel to *Florence of Rome*),⁶ the heroine's concealment of her

¹ Cf. the legend of St. Melor (Brewer, *Dic. of Miracles*, London, 1884, p. 411).

² In this respect, it agrees in idea with number LVII of the *Exempla* of Jacques de Vitry (London, 1890).

³ In Brewer's *Dic. of Miracles*, pp. 224, 259, 399, 400, are related various miracles of this sort. The one most likely to have influenced this cycle is perhaps that of St. William of Oulx, in the 12th century, whose hand was miraculously restored (400).

⁴ Cf. *O.E. Offa Saga*, p. 44, and p. xli, note 3, above.

⁵ The numerous points of contact between these two groups of tales about innocent persecuted women call for detailed discussion, which would be out of place here. *HC*, particularly, is indebted to *Florence of Rome*.

royal birth (not in *V I*, but common to most of the other versions, and the burning of the traitress (unless this comes from the Swan Cycle). The influence of *Florence* is seen in the heroine's turning nurse (as in *Dac*, *Faz*, *Ol*), and this may share with *Berte*, the *Swan legend*, *Octavian* and *V I* responsibility for the forest exposure. *Octavian* is responsible for the shipwreck on the island, and for the education of the boys by a hermit in *HC*, possibly also for the substitution of twins for one child.¹

Without pursuing the subject into further labyrinths,² I must touch upon the relation between the English poems nearly contemporary with *Em*, *Sir Eglamour of Artas* (*Eglam*) and *Torrent of Portyngale* (*Tor*), which contain the episode of the princess with her child (children) exposed at sea.

With the important difference that in *Eglam* and *Tor* the woman is guilty of the fault for which she is exposed, there are so many coincidences of detail and language as to suggest borrowing: whole lines and couplets agree, with only such slight changes as come often between two versions of one story.³ In *Eglam* and *Tor*, the passage is episodic, as one among the many difficulties encountered by the knight in winning his lady; hence I hold that the source of *Em* is perhaps the original of the three. *Eglam* shows much closer resemblances than *Tor*, which agrees however in dialect, *Eglam* being classed as Northern. Pending a critical edition of the latter, I will add only that the resemblances between

¹ In *V I* the children are not said to be twins.

² Other legends appear in *HC*: *St. Alexius*, *Eustache-Placidus*, possibly *La Reine Sibille*, possibly *Richard Cœur de Lion*, and others that I have not yet identified.

³ Cf. *Em*, l. 634; *Eglam*, l. 827; *Tor*, ll. 1838-39; *Em*, ll. 326, 674; *Eglam*, l. 887; *Em*, ll. 277-78; *Eglam*, ll. 881-82; *Tor*, ll. 1840-41; *Em*, ll. 317, 322; *Eglam*, l. 884; *Tor*, l. 1843; *Em*, l. 275; *Eglam*, l. 883 (emend *then odur*, copied by mistake from l. 884 to *ne rodur*); *Em*, l. 314; *Eglam*, l. 885; *Em*, ll. 328, 676; *Eglam*, l. 888; *Em*, ll. 355, 364, 718; *Eglam*, l. 887; *Em*, ll. 331, 337; *Eglam*, l. 897; *Em*, ll. 368-70; *Eglam*, ll. 928-29 (the word *delycyus* is not common in romances of this class). I might add a long list of lines in *Eglam* which are paralleled in *Em* but are less peculiar or significant. Cf., however, *Eglam*, l. 801; *Em*, l. 33; *Eglam*, l. 803; *Em*, l. 624; *Eglam*, l. 815; *Em*, l. 639; *Eglam*, l. 818; *Em*, 646; *Eglam*, ll. 844-45; *Em*, ll. 772-74; *Eglam*, ll. 938-39; *Em*, ll. 343-45, 688-90, etc. There are also longer passages that read like an echo from *Em* or its sources: the King of Egypt's discovery of the outcast, l. 892 f.; the child serving in the hall at dinner, ll. 1273-75; and especially, the mother's instructions to her son how he should greet his father, ll. 1278-81. That these episodes are borrowed rather from the French than from the English *Em* is perhaps indicated by the use made of the ring (*Eglam*, 715-17, *Tor* 1396-98) which is not found in *Em*, but appears in several other versions (see p. xxxvii, note 5, above).

Eglam and *Tor* not found in *Em*, and the greater remoteness of *Tor* from *Em*, indicate that, whatever may be the relations of the two in other respects, *Eglam* was probably the intermediary for *Tor* in this episode.

§ 9. CONCLUSION.

Emaré cannot be ranked high among the versions of this tale. Over against *La Comtesse d'Anjou*, it is rough indeed, although in contrast with the artificial elaborations of *La Belle Hélène* and even of *La Manekine*, its simplicity, even baldness, is refreshing; and in a few instances it shows real tenderness.¹ But it is interesting chiefly from the point of view of origins. I am convinced that further work upon the development of the legend, would throw light not only upon the close relations between the great cycles of romance, but also upon the methods used in the combination of the ancient national lore with the "boke of Rome" (the importance of which has been recognized only within the last 25 years),² and to some extent with Oriental tales brought westward in the Crusades, and with early or contemporary history;³ and would show how these classes of materials were modified, even transformed, under the influence of the Church, its dogmas and legends.⁴

¹ Notably in the references to the child. Cf. ll. 661-2 and 811-13.

² The researches of Coen and Graf particularly indicate that the phrase meant more than a casual reference to a French source. From numerous hints and allusions in mediæval literature, I am convinced that some great collection of Roman tales, of which the extant *Gesta Romanorum* is but a feeble imitation or reflection, has been lost; and that this contained matter relating to various historical personages, especially Julius Caesar, Octavianus, Vespasian, Hadrian, Titus, Diocletian, Nero and Constantine (in the *Comte de Poitiers*, Constantine frees his uncle Nero from the prison of the Sultan of Babylon, Graf, *op. cit.*, pp. 52-71, and see note on l. 158), and perhaps Julian and others. But as yet the classical element in romance has not received the attention bestowed upon the Celtic and Teutonic materials.

³ A most amusing combination of materials is mentioned by Graf (*op. cit.* II, 47): Constantine's sword was given by Hugh Capet to Athelstan, and used by Gny of Warwick to kill Colbrand.

⁴ I believe that the Provençal legend of the two Mariés (mothers of St. James the Greater and St. James the Less), which tells how they were driven from Palestine by the Jews, put out to sea in an open boat without sail or rudder or provision, and under divine guidance drifted to the village now called *Les-Saintes-Mariés-sur-Mer*, has exerted some appreciable influence, at least, upon the popularity of the cycle; but at present my facts are too disconnected to be presented in an orderly manner here. The Provençal legend seems to be connected with some worship of *Notre Dame de la Mer*. An interesting suggestion of this is offered by a bas-relief, taken from a 16th century house in Lyons (now in the museum of that city). It shows the Madonna and Child alone in a little ship, which is being governed by two angels. The inquiry is perhaps worth pursuing.

APPENDIX.

THE play contained in MS. Latin 8163 of the Bibliothèque Nationale, formerly of the Colbert collection, and officially catalogued as apparently of the 15th century, is preceded by the notice in a later hand :

"Columnarium quod et comoedia sine nomine inscribitur, sex actibus absolvitur, non inelegante scriptis, stilo tamen nonnihil impedito. Codex scriptus xiiii saeculo."

The *Prologue*, which explains the moral purpose of the play, is headed by a picture of a monk who seems to be dictating to a cardinal writing at a desk. The Colonna coat-of-arms (a white column on a red ground) occurs frequently throughout the 49 folios of the work. As the text is written without any spacing between the parts, the length of the piece is apparent.

Passing through Paris, I was able to give a few hours to a cursory examination of this version ; but the *Argument*, immediately following the *Prologue*, seems to show that it probably contributes little to our knowledge of the development of the legend. It can therefore be passed over with a few brief comments, more especially as it will doubtless be included by Professor Suchier among his studies on *La Fille sans Mains*, of which another is announced to appear shortly in *Romania*.

The plot in outline is as follows : "Emolphus, rex Carillorum," at the entreaty of his dying wife Phylostates, swears that he will marry only a woman like herself ; and so presently, after a search throughout the world, chooses his own daughter Ermionides. She and her nurse pretend to agree, on condition that he finds it to be the will of the gods ; and while he is gone to consult the oracle, they escape in a boat to Phocis. Here they are kindly received by Sophia ; and Ermionides is married to Hor(r)estes (Orestes), king of that country, to the great anger of his mother Holicomesta or Olicomesta (almost certainly corrupted from Clytemnestra). A son is born while Hor(r)estes is absent in Athens ; and the mother-in-law forges a letter to say that the child is an Ethiopian, and then changes the king's order to take care of mother and child, into a command that they be put to death. Accordingly Celius ("regine

custos") sets the boy adrift in an osier-basket, with gold and regal treasures, and abandons the queen in a trackless wood. The child is found by Acthironæus (!), who takes him to Parnassus to consult the oracle upon the question of his adoption. Meanwhile, Hor(r)estea, upon his return, is informed by Celius of what has occurred, and wishes to avenge himself by the death of his mother, but oppressed by the Furies ("stipatus manipulorum cohorte ferocium"), he is soothed by the counsel of Celius, and persuaded to go to the oracle at Parnassus. Here he finds his wife and son; and the nurse presently coming with news of the death of Emolphus, and "Phocays senex," with word of the death of Olicomesta, the play ends happily for hero and heroine.

There are many characters in the play, and some of the names have a curious interest, as: Pallinurus (the boatman), Misenus, Cornelius Tacitus, Tertullus, Verginus, Afrodissa (Aphrodite?), Regulus, etc. Especially noteworthy is the name Altruda, which seems to be a Germanic form related to the Drida of *Vita Offae Secundi*. Perhaps when the text is printed, more light on this point may be forthcoming.

The chief peculiarities of this version are: (1) the apparently unique combination of the tale of the persecuted wife with that of Orestes and Clytemnestra, and (2) the attempt to reconcile conflicting accounts of the method of exposure in the case of mother and child, unless, indeed, in the case of the latter, the author borrows the device from the narrative of Moses.

Altogether, this text belongs to the group in which there is only one child and no cut-hand; but it does not agree, in setting or in details, with any other work that has been published. For this reason, it may possibly prove to be of more value than I have assigned to it on the basis of the *Argument* alone.

Emare.

(MS. Cotton Caligula, A ii.)

(1)

Ihesu, *pat* ys kyng in trone,
 As þou shoope boþe sonne *and* mone,
 And alle *pat* shalle dele *and* dyghite,
 Now lene vs grace such dedus to done,
 In þy blys *pat* we may wone,
 Men calle hyt heuen lyghite;
 And þy modur Mary, heuyn qwene,
 Bere our arunde so bytwene,
 That semely ys of syght,
 To þy sone *pat* ys so fre,
 In heuen wyth hym *pat* we may be,
 That lord ys most of myght.

[leaf 71]
 Jesus, who
 created all
 things,
 3
 grant us grace
 to enter
 heaven.
 6

9 Mother Mary,
 intercede for
 us with thy
 Son.

12

(2)

Menstrelles *pat* walken fer *and* wyde,
 Her *and* þer in euery a syde,
 In mony a dyuerse londe,
 Sholde, at her bygynnyng,
 Speke of *pat* ryghtwes¹ kyng
 That made both see *and* sonde.
 Who-so wyllle a stounde dwelle,
 Of mykylle myrghyt y may þou telle,
 And mornying þer a-monge;
 Of a lady fayr *and* fre,
 Her name was called Emare,
 As I here syng in songe.

Minstrels
 who wander
 in many
 lands, should
 15

first invoke
 the Creator.

18

Whosoever
 will stop a
 while shall
 hear a tale
 of mirth
 and sorrow,
 about a fair
 lady called
 Emare.
 21

24

¹ R. ryhtwes.

2 *The Emperor-Father and Empress-Mother of Emaré.*

(3)

Her father was an emperor called Sir Artyus, who had great possessions.	Her fadyr was an emperour, Of castelle <i>and</i> of ryche towre,	
	Syr Artyus was hys nome ;	27
	He hadde bope hallys <i>and</i> bowrys, Frythes fayr, forestes wyth flowrys,	
	So gret a lord was none.	30
He had married a fair and courteous lady, Daine Erayne.	Weddedde he had a lady, That was both fayr <i>and</i> semely,	
	Whyte as whales bone ;	33
	Dame Erayne hette <i>pat</i> emperes, She was fulle of loue <i>and</i> goodnesse,	
	So curtays lady was none.	36

(4)

Sir Artyus was the best man in the world, brave and courteous and just.	Syr Artyus was <i>pe</i> best manne In <i>pe</i> worlde <i>pat</i> lyuede <i>panne</i> ,	
	Both hardy and <i>per</i> -to wyght ;	39
	He was curtays in alle <i>pyng</i> , Bothe to olde <i>and</i> to <i>zyng</i> e,	
	And welle kowth dele <i>and</i> dyght.	42
He had but one child of his wedded wife ; but that was fair and seemly, and called Emaré.	He hadde but on chylde in hys lyue, Be-geten on <i>hys</i> -weddedde wyfe,	
	And <i>pat</i> was fayr and bryght ;	45
	For sope, as y may telle <i>pe</i> , They called <i>pat</i> chylde Emaré,	
	That semely was of syght.	48

(5)

When she was born, she was the fairest crea- ture in the land. The empress died before the child could speak or walk, so it was sent to a lady called Abro,	When she was of her modur born, She was <i>pe</i> fayrest creature borne,	
	That yn <i>pe</i> lond was <i>poo</i> ;	51
	The emperes, <i>pat</i> fayr ladye, Fro her lord gan she dye,	
	Or hyt kowpe speke or goo.	54
	The chylde, <i>pat</i> was fayr <i>and</i> gent, To a lady was hyt sente,	
	That men kalled ¹ Abro ;	57

¹ R. called.

She thawȝth hyt curtesye and thewe, Golde and sylke for to sewe, Amonge maydenes moo.	who taught it courtesy and stitchery, among other maidens.
---	--

60

(6)

Abro tawȝte þys mayden smalle, Nortur ¹ þat men vseden ² in sale, Whyle she was in her bowre.	Abro gave this small maiden the usual educa- tion.
---	--

63

She was curȝys in alle thyng, Bothe to olde ³ and to ȝynge,	She was courteous to everybody,
---	---------------------------------------

66

And whythe as lylle flowre ; Of her hondes she was slye, Alle he[r] loued þat her sye,	white as a lily, clever with her hands, and loved by all.
--	---

69

Wyth menske and mychyl honour. At þe mayden leue we, And at þe lady fayr and fre, And speke we of þe emperour.	Now let us leave the maiden and her nurse and speak of the emperor,
---	--

72

(7)

The emperour of gentylle blode, Was a curteys lorde and a gode, In alle maner of thyng.	who, after his wife's death, led his life in widowhood, and greatly loved dalli- ance.
---	--

75

Aftur, when hys wyf was dede, And ledde hys lyf yn weddewede, And ⁴ myche loued playnge,—	78
--	----

78

Sone aftur, yn a whyle, The ryche kyng of Cesyle To þe emperour gau wende.	Soon after, the great king of Sicily came to the emperor,
--	---

81

A ryche present wyth hym he browght, A cloth þat was wordylle wrought.	[leaf 71, bk.] bringing a splendid cloth as
---	--

84

He welledcomed hym as þe hende.	present, and was nobly welcomed.
---------------------------------	--

(8)

Syr Tergaunte þat nobylle knyȝt (hyȝte), ⁵ He presented þe emperour ryȝht, And sette hym on hys kne,	Sir Ter- gaunte, that noble knight, on his knee before the emperor,
---	--

87

¹ R. Nortour. ² R. usedenn. ³ R. old.

⁴ G. changes And to He. Other possible emendations are: And he ledde; or, by analogy to l. 989, A ledde.

⁵ The omission of hyȝte improves the metre; but although the yȝ is blotted, the word is not unmistakably crossed out by the scribe. Kölbing, however, considers it erased (*Eng. Stud.*, xv, 248). See note on the line.

4. *The King of Sicily's splendid Cloth given to Emaré's Father.*

offered the splendid cloth, which was as thickly set as possible with topaz and rubies, with toad- stones and agate (?) and other rich stones,	Wyth þat cloth rychly dyght, Fulle of stones þer hyt was pyght, ¹ As thykke as hyt myght be :	90
	Of(f) ² topaze and rubyes, And opur stones of myche prys, That semely wer to se ;	93
	Of crapowtes and nakette, As ³ thykke ar þey sette, For sothe, as y say þe.	96
as I tell thee truly.		

(9)

As the emperor looked at the cloth, he could not see readily for the glistering of the rich stones,	The cloth was dysplayed sone, The emperour ⁴ lokede þer-vpone, And myght[e] hyt not se ; For gylsteryng of þe ryche ston Redy syghte had he non,	99
and said, "How may this be ?	And sayde, "How may þys be ?" The emperour sayde on hygh,	102
Certes, this is a fairy thing or an illu- sion."	"Sertes, þys ys a fayry, Or ellys a vanyte !"	105
The King of Sicily answered, "It is the richest jewel in christen- dom."	The Kyng of Cysyle answered þan, "So ryche a jwelle ys þer non In alle Crystyante."	108

(10)

The daughter of the Euir of heathen- dom made this cloth, and adorned it with gold, azure and precious stones,	The amerayle dowzter of heþennes Made þys cloth wyth-outen lees, And wrowzte hyt alle wyth pride ; And purtreied hyt wyth gret honour, Wyth ryche golde and asowr, And stones on ylke a syde.	111
which were sought far and wide.	And, as þe story telles in honde, The stones þat yn þys cloth stonde, Sowzte þey wer fulle wyde.	114
Seven years it was a- making, before it was finisshed.	Seuen wynter hyt was yn makynge, Or hyt was browghte to endynge, In herte ys not to hyde.	117
		120

¹ MS., was dye (crossed out) pyght. ² G. Of.

³ G. suggests A[l]s[ō] for As to improve the metre. See II. 90.
138.

⁴ R. emperor.

(11)

In þat on korner made was Ydoyne and Amadas, Wyth loue þat was so trewe ; For þey loueden hem wyth ¹ honour, Portrayed ² þey wer wyth trewe-loue-flour, Of stones bryght of hewe : Wyth carbunkulle and safere, Kassydonys and onyx so clere, Sette in golde newe ; Deamondes and rubyes, And opur stones of mychylle pryse, And menstrelys wyth her gle[we].			In the first corner were the true lovers, 123 Ydoyne and Amadas, portrayed with true- love-flower in precious stones, 126 carbuncle, sapphire, chalcodony and clear 129 onyx, set in new gold, diamonds, rubies, and other precious stones. 132
--	--	--	--

(12)

In þat opur corner was dyght, Trystram and Isowde so bryht, That semely wer to se ; And for þey loued hem ryght, As fulle of stones ar þey dyght, As thykke as þey may be : Of topase and of rubyes, And opur stones of myche pryse, That semely wer to se ; Wyth crapawtes and nakette, Thykke of stones ar þey sette, For sothe, as y say þe.			In the second corner were the true lovers, 135 Trystram and Isowde, set thickly with precious stones, 138 with topaz, rubies, and other gems, 141 with toad- stones and agate (?). 144
--	--	--	---

(13)

In þe thrydde korner, wyth gret honour, Was Florys and Dam Blawncheffour, As loue was hem bé-twene ; For þey loued ³ wyth honour, Purtrayed þey wer wyth trewe-loue-flour, ⁴ Wyth stones bryght and sheene : Ther wer knyztus and senatowres, Emerawdes of gret vertues, To wyte wyth-outen wene ;			In the third corner were Florys and Dame Blawn- cheffour, 147 with true- love-flower in gems, 150 "knights and senators," potent emeralds, 153
--	--	--	--

¹ R. wit.

² G. Pourtrayed.

³ G. supplies hem after loued by analogy to l. 124 above.

⁴ R. flower.

6 *The King of Sicily's splendid Cloth given to Emaré's Father.*

diamonds,
coral, chryso-
lite, crystal,
and good
garnets.

Deamoundes¹ and koralle,
Perydotes and crystallé,
And gode garnettes by-twene.

156

(14)

In the fourth
corner was
the son of the
Sultan of
Babylon,
and the
Emir's
daughter,
who made
this cloth for
his sake.

In the fowrthe korner was oon,
Of Babylone þe sowdan sonne,
The amerayles dowȝtyr hym by.

159

For hys sake þe cloth was wrowght;
She loued hym in hert and thowght,
As testymoyeth hys storye.

162

[leaf 72]
An unicorn,
with his high
horn, was
portrayed
before the
maiden,
with flowers
and birds in
rare stones.

The fayr mayden her by-forn
Was portrayed an vnykorn,
Wyth hys horn so hye;
Flowres and bryddes on ylike a syde,
Wyth stones þat wer sowghte wyde,
Stuffed wyth ymagerye.

165

168

(15)

When the
cloth was
finished,
it was
brought to
the sultan's
son.
"My father
took it by
force from
the sultan,
and gave
it me,
and I bring
it to thee
specially."

When the cloth to ende was wrowght,
To þe sowdan sone hyt was browȝt,
That semely was of syȝte.

171

"My fadyr was a nobyllé man,
Of þe sowdan he hyt wan,
Wyth maystrye and wyth² myȝth.

174

For gret loue he ȝaf hyt me,
I brynge hyt þe in specyalte,
Thys cloth ys rychely dyght."

177

He ȝaf hyt þe emperour,
He receyued hyt wyth gret honour,
And þonkede hym fayr and ryȝt.

180

(16)

The King
of Sicily
amused
himself with
the emperor
as long as
he wished,
then took
leave and
went home.

The Kyng of Cesyle dwelled þer,
As long as hys wyllé wer,
Wyth þe emperour for to play;
And when he wolde wende,
He toke hys leue at þe hende,
And wente forth on hys way.

183

186

¹ R. Deamondes.

² R. omits.

Emaré's Father sends for her, and takes her to his Palace. 7

- Now remeueth¹ þys nobyll kyng.
 The emperour aftur hys dowȝtur hadde longyng,²
 To speke wyth þat may. 189
 Messēgeres forth he sent
 Aftur þe mayde fayr³ and gent,
 That was bryȝt as someres day. 192
- (17)
- Messengeres dyȝte hem in hye ;
 Wyth myche myrthe and melodye,
 Forth gon þey fare, 195
 Both by stretes and by styte,
 Aftur þat fayr lady,
 Was godely vnþur gare. 198
 Her norysse, þat hyȝte Abro,
 Wyth her she goth forth also,
 And wer sette in a chare. 201
 To þe emperour gan þe[y] go ;
 He come aȝeyn hem a myle or two ;
 A fayr metyng was there. 204
- (18)
- The mayden, whyte as lylle flour,
 Lyȝte aȝeyn⁴ (her fadyr⁵) þe emperour ;
 Two knyȝtes gan her lede. 207
 Her fadyr, þat was of gret renowne,
 That of golde wered þe crowne,
 Lyȝte of hys stede. 210
 When⁶ þey wer bothe on her fete,
 He klypped her and kyssed her swete,
 And bothe on fote þey ȝede. 213
 They wer glad and made good chere,
 To þe palys þey ȝede in fere,
 In romans as we rede. 216
- (19)
- Then þe lordes þat wer grete,
 They wesh and seteñ don⁷ to mete,
 And folk hem serued swyde. 219

Now the
 emperor
 longed to
 speak with
 his daughter,
 and sent
 messengers
 to fetch her.

These went
 forth, with
 mirth and
 minstrelay,

to fetch the
 fair lady.

Abro, her
 nurse, went
 with her,
 and they set
 out in a
 "car,"
 to go to the
 emperor,
 who came a
 mile or two
 to meet them.

The maiden,
 white as a
 lily, alighted,
 and was led
 up by two
 knights.

Her father
 also alighted,
 and when
 they were
 both on foot,
 "clipped"
 her and
 kissed her,

and they
 went together
 to the palace.

The great
 lords washed
 and sat down
 to meat.

¹ So MS., not remeneth as G. says.

² This line is obviously corrupt. G. omits aftur hys dowyȝtur and inserts he after emperour. ³ R. fayre. ⁴ G. aȝeyn.

⁵ G. suggests the omission of these words.

⁶ G. Then.

⁷ R. doun.

Eglam and *Tor* not found in *Em*, and the greater remoteness of *Tor* from *Em*, indicate that, whatever may be the relations of the two in other respects, *Eglam* was probably the intermediary for *Tor* in this episode.

§ 9. CONCLUSION.

Emaré cannot be ranked high among the versions of this tale. Over against *La Comtesse d'Anjou*, it is rough indeed, although in contrast with the artificial elaborations of *La Belle Hélène* and even of *La Manekine*, its simplicity, even baldness, is refreshing; and in a few instances it shows real tenderness.¹ But it is interesting chiefly from the point of view of origins. I am convinced that further work upon the development of the legend, would throw light not only upon the close relations between the great cycles of romance, but also upon the methods used in the combination of the ancient national lore with the "boke of Rome" (the importance of which has been recognized only within the last 25 years),² and to some extent with Oriental tales brought westward in the Crusades, and with early or contemporary history;³ and would show how these classes of materials were modified, even transformed, under the influence of the Church, its dogmas and legends.⁴

¹ Notably in the references to the child. Cf. ll. 661-2 and 811-13.

² The researches of Coen and Graf particularly indicate that the phrase meant more than a casual reference to a French source. From numerous hints and allusions in mediæval literature, I am convinced that some great collection of Roman tales, of which the extant *Gesta Romanorum* is but a feeble imitation or reflection, has been lost; and that this contained matter relating to various historical personages, especially Julius Caesar, Octavianus, Vespasian, Hadrian, Titus, Diocletian, Nero and Constantine (in the *Comte de Poitiers*, Constantine frees his uncle Nero from the prison of the Sultan of Babylon, Graf, *op. cit.*, pp. 52-71, and see note on l. 158), and perhaps Julian and others. But as yet the classical element in romance has not received the attention bestowed upon the Celtic and Teutonic materials.

³ A most amusing combination of materials is mentioned by Graf (*op. cit.* II, 47): Constantine's sword was given by Hugh Capet to Athelstan, and used by Gny of Warwick to kill Colbrand.

⁴ I believe that the Provençal legend of the two Mariæ (mothers of St. James the Greater and St. James the Less), which tells how they were driven from Palestine by the Jews, put out to sea in an open boat without sail or rudder or provision, and under divine guidance drifted to the village now called *Les-Saintes-Mariës-sur-Mer*, has exerted some appreciable influence, at least, upon the popularity of the cycle; but at present my facts are too disconnected to be presented in an orderly manner here. The Provençal legend seems to be connected with some worship of *Notre Dame de la Mer*. An interesting suggestion of this is offered by a bas-relief, taken from a 16th century house in Lyons (now in the museum of that city). It shows the Madonna and Child alone in a little ship, which is being governed by two angels. The inquiry is perhaps worth pursuing.

APPENDIX.

THE play contained in MS. Latin 8163 of the Bibliothèque Nationale, formerly of the Colbert collection, and officially catalogued as apparently of the 15th century, is preceded by the notice in a later hand :

“Columnarium quod et comoedia sine nomine inscribitur, sex actibus absolvitur, non inelegante scriptis, stilo tamen nonnihil impedito. Codex scriptus xiiii saeculo.”

The *Prologue*, which explains the moral purpose of the play, is headed by a picture of a monk who seems to be dictating to a cardinal writing at a desk. The Colonna coat-of-arms (a white column on a red ground) occurs frequently throughout the 49 folios of the work. As the text is written without any spacing between the parts, the length of the piece is apparent.

Passing through Paris, I was able to give a few hours to a cursory examination of this version ; but the *Argument*, immediately following the *Prologue*, seems to show that it probably contributes little to our knowledge of the development of the legend. It can therefore be passed over with a few brief comments, more especially as it will doubtless be included by Professor Suchier among his studies on *La Fille sans Mains*, of which another is announced to appear shortly in *Romania*.

The plot in outline is as follows : “Emolphus, rex Carillorum,” at the entreaty of his dying wife Phylostates, swears that he will marry only a woman like herself ; and so presently, after a search throughout the world, chooses his own daughter Ermionides. She and her nurse pretend to agree, on condition that he finds it to be the will of the gods ; and while he is gone to consult the oracle, they escape in a boat to Phocis. Here they are kindly received by Sophia ; and Ermionides is married to Hor(r)estes (Orestes), king of that country, to the great anger of his mother Holicomesta or Olicomesta (almost certainly corrupted from Clytemnestra). A son is born while Hor(r)estes is absent in Athens ; and the mother-in-law forges a letter to say that the child is an Ethiopian, and then changes the king’s order to take care of mother and child, into a command that they be put to death. Accordingly Celius (“regine

custos") sets the boy adrift in an osier-basket, with gold and regal treasures, and abandons the queen in a trackless wood. The child is found by Achironeus (?), who takes him to Parnassus to consult the oracle upon the question of his adoption. Meanwhile, Hor(r)estes, upon his return, is informed by Celius of what has occurred, and wishes to avenge himself by the death of his mother, but oppressed by the Furies ("stipatus manipulorum cohorte ferocium"), he is soothed by the counsel of Celius, and persuaded to go to the oracle at Parnassus. Here he finds his wife and son; and the nurse presently coming with news of the death of Emolphus, and "Phocays senex," with word of the death of Olicomesta, the play ends happily for hero and heroine.

There are many characters in the play, and some of the names have a curious interest, as: Pallinurus (the boatman), Misenus, Cornelius Tacitus, Tertullus, Verginus, Afrodissa (Aphrodite?), Regulus, etc. Especially noteworthy is the name Altruda, which seems to be a Germanic form related to the Drida of *Vita Offae Secundi*. Perhaps when the text is printed, more light on this point may be forthcoming.

The chief peculiarities of this version are: (1) the apparently unique combination of the tale of the persecuted wife with that of Orestes and Clytemnestra, and (2) the attempt to reconcile conflicting accounts of the method of exposure in the case of mother and child, unless, indeed, in the case of the latter, the author borrows the device from the narrative of Moses.

Altogether, this text belongs to the group in which there is only one child and no cut-hand; but it does not agree, in setting or in details, with any other work that has been published. For this reason, it may possibly prove to be of more value than I have assigned to it on the basis of the *Argument* alone.

Emare.

(MS. Cotton Caligula, A ii.)

(1)

Ihesu, þat ys kyng in trone,
 As þou shoope boþe sonne *and* mone,
 And alle þat shalle dele *and* dyghite,
 Now lene vs grace such dedus to done,
 In þy blys þat we may wone,
 Men calle hyt heuen lyghite;
 And þy modur Mary, heuyn qwene,
 Bere our arunde so bytwene,
 That semely ys of syghit,
 To þy sone þat ys so fre,
 In heuen wyth hym þat we may be,
 That lord ys most of myghit.

[leaf 71]
 Jesus, who
 created all
 things,
 3
 grant us grace
 to enter
 heaven.

6

9 Mother Mary,
 intercede for
 us with thy
 Son.

12

(2)

Menstrelles þat walken fer *and* wyde,
 Her *and* þer in euery a syde,
 In mony a dyuerse londe,
 Sholde, at her bygynnyng,
 Speke of þat ryghtwes¹ kyng
 That made both see *and* sonde.
 Who-so wylle a stounde dwelle,
 Of mykylle myrht y may þou telle,
 And mornyng þer a-monge;
 Of a lady fayr *and* fre,
 Her name was called Emare,
 As I here synge in songe.

Minstrele
 who wander
 in many
 lands, should
 15

first invoke
 the Creator.

18

Whosoever
 will stop a
 while shall
 hear a tale
 of mirth
 and sorrow,
 about a fair
 lady called
 Emare.
 21

24

¹ R. ryhtwea.

2 *The Emperor-Father and Empress-Mother of Emaré.*

(3)

Her father was an emperor called Sir Artyus, who had great possessions.	Her fadyr was an emperour, Of castelle <i>and</i> of ryche towre,	
	Syr Artyus was hys nome ;	27
	He hadde bope hallys <i>and</i> bowrys, Frythes fayr, forestes <i>wyth</i> flowrys,	
	So gret a lord was none.	30
He had married a fair and courteous lady, Dame Erayne.	Weddedde he had a lady, That was both fayr <i>and</i> semely,	
	Whyte as whales bone ;	33
	Dame Erayne hette <i>pat</i> emperes, She was fulle of loue <i>and</i> goodnesse,	
	So curtays lady was none.	36

(4)

Sir Artyus was the best man in the world, brave and courteous and just.	Syr Artyus was <i>pe</i> best manne In <i>pe</i> worlde <i>pat</i> lyuede <i>panne</i> ,	
	Both hardy and <i>per</i> -to wyght ;	39
	He was curtays in alle <i>pyng</i> , Bothe to olde <i>and</i> to <i>zyng</i> e,	
	And welle kowth dele <i>and</i> dyght.	42
He had but one child of his wedded wife; but that was fair and seemly, and called Emaré.	He hadde but on chylde in <i>hys</i> lyue, Be-geten on <i>hys</i> weddedde wyfe,	
	And <i>pat</i> was fayr and bryght ;	45
	For sope, as y may telle <i>pe</i> , They called <i>pat</i> chylde Emaré,	
	That semely was of syght.	48

(5)

When she was born, she was the fairest crea- ture in the laud. The empress died before the child could speak or walk, so it was sent to a lady called Abro,	When she was of her modur born, She was <i>pe</i> fayrest creature borne, That yn <i>pe</i> lond was <i>po</i> o ;	
	The emperes, <i>pat</i> fayr ladye, Fro her lord gan she dye,	51
	Or hyt kowpe speke or goo.	54
	The chylde, <i>pat</i> was fayr <i>and</i> gent, To a lady was hyt sente, That men kalled ¹ Abro ;	57

¹ R. called.

She thaw ³ th hyt curtesye <i>and</i> thewe, Golde <i>and</i> sylke for to sewe, Amonge maydenes moo.	who taught it courtesy and stitchery, among other maidens.
--	--

60

(6)

Abro taw ³ te pys mayden smalle, Nortur ¹ þat men vseden ² in sale, Whyle she was in her bowre.	Abro gave this small maiden the usual educa- tion.
--	--

63

She was curtays in alle thyng, Bothe to olde ³ <i>and</i> to 3ynge, And whythe as lylle flowre ;	She was courteous to everybody,
---	---------------------------------------

66

Of her hondes she was slye, Alle he[r] loued þat her eye, Wyth menske <i>and</i> mychyl honour.	white as a lily, clever with her hands, and loved by all.
---	---

69

At þe mayden leue we, And at þe lady fayr <i>and</i> fre, And speke we of þe emperour.	Now let us leave the maiden and her nurse and speak of the emperor,
--	--

72

(7)

The emperour of gentylle blode, Was a curteys lorde <i>and</i> a gode, In alle maner of thyng.	who, after his wife's death, led his life in widowhood, and greatly loved dalli- ance.
--	--

75

Aftur, when hys wyf was dede, And ledde hys lyf yn weddewede, And ⁴ myche loued playnge,—	78
--	----

78

Sone aftur, yn a whyle, The ryche kyng of Cesyle To þe emperour gau wende.	Soon after, the great king of Sicily came to the emperor,
--	---

81

A ryche present wyth hym he browght, A cloth þat was wordylle wroght. He welledcomed hym as þe hende.	[leaf 71, bk.] bringing a splendid cloth as present, and was nobly welcomed.
---	--

84

(8)

Syr Tergaunte þat nobylle knyzt (hyzte), ⁵ He presented þe emperour ryght, And sette hym on hys kne,	Sir Ter- gaunte, that noble knight, on his knee before the emperor,
---	--

87

¹ R. Nortour. ² R. usedenn. ³ R. old.

⁴ G. changes And to He. Other possible emendations are: And he ledde; or, by analogy to l. 989, A ledde.

⁵ The omission of hyzte improves the metre; but although the yz is blotted, the word is not unmistakably crossed out by the scribe. Kölbing, however, considers it erased (*Eng. Stud.*, xv, 248). See note on the line.

14 *The King of Galys wishes to wed Emaré. His Mother objects.*

Then he said to Sir Kadore, "Tell me whence is that lovely maid [leaf 73, bk.] that served in hall to-day?"	Then spakke þe ryche yn ray, To Syr Kadore gan he say, Wordes fayr and styлле : "Syr, whēns ys þat louely may, That yn þe halle serued þys day? Telle me, 3yf hyt be þy wyлле."	417 420
---	--	----------------------------

(36)

Then said Sir Kadore: "An earl's daughter from a far land. I sent for her to teach my children courtesy. She is the cunningest woman in her work that I have seen in christen- dom." Then said the king: "I will make her my queen."	Then sayde Syr Kadore, y vnþurstonde, "Hyt ys an erles þow3tur of ferre londe, That semely ys to sene. I sente aftur her, certeynlye, To teche my chylderen curtesye, In chambur wyth hem to bene. She ys þe konnyngest wommon, I trowe, þat be yn Crystendom, Of werk þat y haue sene." Then sayde þat ryche raye, "I wyлле haue þat fayr may, And wedde her to my quene!"	423 426 429 432
--	--	--

(37)

The king sent for his mother, and showed her the fair maid in her shining robe.	The nobulle kyng, verament, Aftyr ¹ hys modyr he sent, To wyte what she wolde say. They brow3t[e] forth hastely That fayr mayde Egarye; She was bry3th as somerces day. The cloth on her shon so bryght, When she was þer-yn dyght, And her-self a gentelle may, The olde qwene sayde a-non, "I sawe neuer wommon Haluendelle so gay!"	435 438 441 444
---	--	--

(38)

The old queen said ungra- ciously, "Son, this is a fend.	The olde qwene ² spakke wordus vnhende, And sayde, "Sone, þys ys a fende, ³ In þys wordy wede!"	447
--	---	-----

¹ R. After.

² R. old quene.

³ MS. as in text, not sende as G. says.

As þou louest my blessinge,		Do not marry
Make þou neuur þys weddinge,		her, if you
Cryst hyt de forbede!"	450	love my bless-
Then spakke þe ryche ray,		ing."
"Modyr, y wyll haue þys may!"		Then the
And forth gan her lede.	453	king said,
The olde qwene, ¹ for certayne,		"Mother, I
Turnede wyth ire hom a-gayne,		will," and led
And wolde not be at þat dede.	456	her forth.
		The old queen
		went home in
		anger, and
		would not be
		present.

(39)

The kyng wedded þat lady bryght;		The king
Grete puruyance þer was dy3th,		married the
In þat semely sale.	459	lady with
Grete lordes wer serued a-ryght,		great pur-
Duke, erle, baron <i>and</i> kny3th,		veyance.
Both of grete and smale.	462	Great lords
Myche folke for soþe þer was,		were well
And þer-to an huge prese,		served,
As hyt ys tolde yn tale.	465	and there was
Ther was alle maner pyng,		a huge crowd,
That felle to a kyngus wedding,		
And mony a ryche menstralle.	468	and all thing
		that belong
		to a king's
		wedding,
		including
		minstrels.

(40)

When þe mangery was done,		After the
Grete lordes departed sone,		feast was
That semely were to se. ²	471	done, the
The kyng be-lafte wyth þe qwene,		great lords
Moch loue was hem be-twene,		departed,
And also game <i>and</i> gle.	474	and left the
She was curteys <i>and</i> swete,		king and
Such a lady herde y neuur of 3ete;		queen to-
They loued both wyth herte fre.	477	gether in
The lady þat was both meke <i>and</i> mylde,		love and joy.
Conceyued <i>and</i> wente wyth chylde,		
As God wolde hyt sholde be.	480	The lady,
		that was
		courteous and
		sweet, con-
		ceived a child,
		as it was
		God's will.

¹ R. quene.

² R. see.

(41)

The king of France, at that time beset with Saracens,	The kyng of France, yn þat tyme, Was be-sette wyth many a Sarezyne, And cumbered alle in tene ;	483
sent for the king of "Galya" and other lords.	And sente aftur þe kyng of Galya, And oþur lordys of myche prys, That semely were to sene.	486
The king of "Galya" gathered men from all sides,	The kyng of Galya, in þat tyde, Gedered men on euery syde, In armour bryght and shene.	489
and said to Sir Kadore and other lords, "Take heed to my queen."	Then sayde þe kyng to Syr Kadore, And oþur lordes þat ther wore, " Take good hede to my qwene."	492

(42)

The king of France sent for them all, king, knight, and clerk ;	The kyng of Fraunce spared none, But sent for hem euerychone, Both kyng, knyȝth and clerke.	495
but the steward remained at home to take care of the queen. She went with child, according to God's will,	The stward ¹ by-laft at home, To kepe þe qwene whyte as fome, He come not at þat werke.	498
til she gave birth to a goodly child with a double king's mark.	She wente wyth chylde yn place, As longe as Goddus wyll was. That semely vnþur serke ;	501
	Thylle þer was of her body, A fayr chyld borne and a godele, Hadde a dowbylle kyngus marke.	504

(43)

They christened him Segramour with great honour.	They hyt crystened wyth grete honour, And called hym Segramour ; Frely was þat fode.	507
[leaf 74] Then Sir Kadore made in haste a noble letter and sent it to the king.	Then þe steward, Syr Kadore, A nobulle lettur made he thore, And wrowȝte hyt alle wyth gode. He wrowȝte hyt yn hyȝynge, And sente hyt to hys lorde þe kyng, That gentylle was of blode.	510 513

¹ R. stiward.

- The messenger forth gan wende,
And wyth þe kyngus modur gan lende,
And yn-to þe castelle he 3ode. 516
- (44)
- He was resseyued rychely,
And she hym askede hastyly,
How þe qwene hadde spedde. 519
"Madame, þer ys of her y-borne
A fayr man-chylde, y telle 3ou be-forne,
And she lyth in her bedde." 522
She 3af hym for þat tydyng
A robe *and* fowrtý shylyng,
And rychely hym cladde. 525
She made hym drouken of ale *and* wyne,
And when she sawe þat hyt was tyme,
Tho chambur she wolde¹ hym lede. 528
- (45)
- And when (s)he was on slepe browzt,
The qwene þat was of wykked þowzt,
Tho chambur gan she wende. 531
Hys letter she toke hym fro,
In a fyre she brente hyt do ;
Of werkes she was vnhende. 534
Anopur lettur she made wyth euyll,
And sayde þe qwene had born a deuyll,
Durste no mon come her hende. 537
Thre heddes hadde he there,²
A lyon, a dragon *and* a beere,
A fowlle, feltred feude. 540
- (46)
- On þe morn, when hyt was day,
The messenger wente on hys way,
Bothe by styte *and* strete ; 543

The mes-
senger went
forth, and
stopped at
the castle of
the king's
mother.

She received
him graci-
ously, and
asked how
the queen
had sped.
"Madam, she
has a fair
man-child,
and lies ill."

She gave him
a robe and
forty shil-
lings for that
news,

made him
drunk with
ale and wine,
and led him
to his room.

When he was
asleep the
wicked queen
went to his
room,

and took and
burned the
letter.

Another she
made, saying
that the
queen had
borne a devil

with three
heads (of a
lion, a dragon
and a bear),
and none
dared ap-
proach her.

On the mor-
row, the mes-
senger con-
tinued his
journey

¹ R. wole. G. suggests she hym led[d]e, which is better for rhyme as well as for metre.

² MS., hole in there, but the vowel is probably e.

18 *Emaré's Husband is deceivd by his Mother's forged Letter.*

till he came to the king, greeted him, and gave him the letter.	In trwe story as y say, Tylle he come <i>per</i> as <i>pe</i> kynge laye, And speke wordus swete.	546
As the king read, he wept, and then fell in a swoon because of his sorrow.	He toke <i>pe</i> kyng <i>pe</i> lettur yn honde, And he hyt redde, y vn <i>pur</i> stonde, The teres downe gan he lete. And as he stode yn redyng, Downe he felle yn sowenyng, For sorow hys herte gan blede.	549 552

(47)

Great lordes took him up;	Grete lordes <i>pat</i> stode hym by, Toke vp <i>pe</i> kyng hastely; In herte he was fulle woo.	555
but he greet- ed sore, and said, "Alas, that I was ever born, and made king,	Sore he grette <i>and</i> sayde, "Alas, That y <i>euur</i> man born was! That hyt <i>euur</i> shulde be so! ¹	558
and after- wards wed- ded the fairest thing on earth— that Iesus should send such a foul fiend to come between us!"	Alas, <i>pat</i> y was made a kynge, And sygh wedded <i>pe</i> fayrest <i>pyng</i> , That on erpe myght go! That <i>euur</i> Jhesu hym-self wolde sende Such a fowle, lonly fende, To come by-twene vs too!"	561 564

(48)

When he saw that it might be no better, he made and sealed an- other letter, commanding	When he sawe hyt myzt no bettur be, Anopur lettur <i>pen</i> made he, And seled hyt wyth hys sele. He commanded yn alle <i>pynge</i> , To kepe welle <i>pat</i> lady <i>zyng</i> e, Tylle she hadde her hele; Bothe gode men <i>and</i> ylle, To serue her at her' wyll, Bothe yn wo and wele.	567 570 573
that the lady be cared for until she was well, with folk to wait upo her.	He toke <i>pys</i> lettur of hys honde, And rode porow <i>pe</i> same londe, By <i>pe</i> kyngus modur castelle.	576

The mes-
senger took
the letter,
and rode
home
through the
same land, by
the king's
mother's
castle.

¹ MS. That hyt *euur* so shulde be.

(49)

And þan he dwelled þer alle nyȝt;
He was resseyued *and* rychely dyȝt,

And wyste of no treson.

He made hym welle at ese *and* fyne,¹

Bothe of brede, ale *and* wyne,

And þat be-rafte hym hys reson.

When he was on slepe browȝt,

The false qwene hys lettur sowȝt;²

In-to þe fyre she kaste hyt downe.

A-nopur lettur she lette make,

That men sholde þe lady take,

And lede her owt of towne.

(50)

And putte her yn-to þe see,

In þat robe of ryche ble,

The lytylle chyldre her' wyth;

And lette her' haue no spendyng,

For no mete ny for drynke,³

But lede her' out of þat kygh.⁴

"Vpon payn of chyldre *and* wyfe,

And also vpon þour owene lyfe,

Lette her' haue no gryght!"

The messenger knewe no gyle,

But rode hom mony a myle,

By forest *and* by fryght.

(51)

And when þe messenger come home,

The steward toke þe lettur sone,

And by-gan to rede.

Sore he syght and sayde, "Alas,

Sertes, þys ys a fowle case,

And a de[l]fulle dede!"

And as he stode yn redyng,

He felle downe yn swonyng,⁵

For sorow hys hert gan blede.

When in her
rich robe
she went into
the see,

576 men wept
and said this
was a wicked
deed.

582 and
senseless and
And when he
was asleep,
the false
queen sought
and burned
his letter;

585 and made
another, that
the lady
should be
seized and
led out of
town,

and put into
the see,
with her rich
robe and her
child, with
no money
[leaf 74, bk.]
for food or
drink.

594

"Upon pain
of child and
wife and your
own life,
grant her no
pardon."

597

The mes-
senger knew
nothing of
this guile as
he rode home.

600

When the
steward read
the letter,
he sighed and
said, "Alas,
this is a bad
case!"

606

He fell down
in a swoon,

609

¹ Probably a-fyne, as G. suggests. Cf. l. 913 below.

² After t in MS., a small round blot, which does not seem to be intended for an e. G.; however, sowȝte.

³ R. drynkyng. ⁴ R. kyght. ⁵ R. swounyng.

and they all
wept with
him for that
good woman.

'Ther was noþur olde ny 3ynge,
'That my3te for-bere of wepynge,
For þat worþy vnþur wede.

612

(52)

The lady,
hearing the
outcry, called
to the
steward
"What is
this?"

The lady herde gret dele yn halle,
On þe steward gan she calle,
And sayde, "What may þys be?
3yf any-þyng be a-mys.

615

Tell me what
is wrong."

Telle me what þat hyt ys,
And lette not for me."

618

The steward
said, "Here
is a letter
from my lord
that grieues
me."
She read how
she must into
the sea.

Then sayde þe steward, verament,
"Lo, her, a lettur my lord hath sente,
And per-fore woo ys me!"

621

She toke þe lettur *and* by-gan to rede;
Then fonde she wryten alle þe dede,
How she moste yn-to þe see.

624

(53)

The queen
bade him be
still,

"Be styлле, syr," sayde þe qwene,
"Lette syche mornynge¹ bene;

627

For me haue þou no kare.

Loke þou be not shente,

and do the
command of
his lord,

But do my lordes commāundement,²

630

God for-bede þou spare!

who was
ashamed
of his
"simple
lady,"

For he weddede so porely,

On me, a sympulle lady,

633

He ys a-shamed sore.

and yet would
never again
get one so
gentle of
blood.

Grete welle my lord fro me,

So gentylle of blo(1)de³ yn Cristyante,

636

Gete he neuur more!"

(54)

There was
great weep-
ing and
wringing of
hands when
the lady with
her child
entered the
ship.

Then was þer sorow *and* myche woo,

When þe lady to shype shulde go;

639

They wepte *and* wronge her hond[e].⁴

The lady, þat was meke *and* mylde,

In her arme she bar her chylde,

642

And toke leue of þe londe.

¹ MS., o in mornynge blotted.

² R. commaundement.

³ R. blode.

⁴ R. honde. MS hondus.

When she wente yn-to þe see,		When in her
In þat robe of ryche ble,		rich robe
Men sowened on þe sonde.	645	she went into
Sore þey wepte <i>and</i> sayde, " Alas,		the sea,
Certys, þys ys a wykked kase!		men wept
Wo worth dedes wronge!"	648	and said this
		was a wicked
		deed.

(55)

The lady <i>and</i> þe lytylle chyld		
Fleted forth on þe watur wyld,		The lady and
Wyth fulle harde happes.	651	child floated
Her surkote þat was large <i>and</i> wyde,		on with hard-
Ther-wyth her vysage she gan hyde,		ship.
Wyth þe hynþur lappes;	654	
She was aferde of þe see,		She covered
And layde her gruf vpon a tre,		her face with
The chyld to her pappes.	657	her surcoat.
The wawes, þat were grete <i>and</i> strong,		
On þe bote faste þey þonge, ¹		In her fear,
Wyth mony vnsemely rappes.	660	she lay down,
		with the
		child to her
		breast,
		while the
		great waves
		beat on the
		boat.

(56)

And when þe chylde gan to wepe,		
Wyth sory herte she songe hyt a-slepe,		When the
And putte þe pappe yn hys mowth,	663	child cried,
And sayde, " Myȝth y onus gete lond,		she nursed it
Of þe watur þat ys so stronge,		and sang
By northe or by sowthe,	666	it asleep,
Wele owth y to warye þe, see,		and said,
I haue myche shame yn the!"		"If ever I get
And euer she lay <i>and</i> growht. ²	669	to land,
Then she made her prayer,		
To Ihesu <i>and</i> hys modur dere,		I ought to
In alle þat she kouþe.	672	cure the sea
		that puts me
		to so much
		shame."
		She prayed
		to Jhesu and
		His mother.

(57)

Now þys lady dwelled thore,		
A fulle seuene ³ nyght <i>and</i> more,		Thus the
As hyt was Goddys wyll;	675	lady contin-
		ued a
		seven-night
		and more in
		her sorrow.

¹ R. thronge.

² G. *emends* to on grōwf, a reading suggested by Holthausen. See note on this line.

³ MS., a letter seems to have been erased before nyght.

22 *Emaré and her Boy land near Rome, & are housd by a Merchant.*

	Wyth karefulle herte <i>and</i> sykyng sore,	
	Such sorow was her' zarked zore,	
	And she lay fulle styлле.	678
[leaf 75]	She was dryuen toward Rome,	
By God's grace she was driven to- wards Rome,	Thorow þe grace of ¹ God yn trone,	
	That alle þyng may fulfyllе.	681
	On þe see she was so harde be-stadde,	
almost mad with hunger and thiræt.	For hungur <i>and</i> thurste alle-most madde,	
	Wo worth chawnses ylle!	684

(58)

In that city dwelled a rich mer- chant called Jurdan,	A marchaunte dw[el]led ² yn þat cyte,	
	A ryche mon of golde <i>and</i> fee,	
	Iurdan was hys name.	687
who every day went to take the air by the sea.	E(e)uery day wolde he	
	Go to playe hym by þe see,	
	The eyer for to tane.	690
On this occasion,	He wente forth yn þat tyde,	
	Walkynge by þe see syþe,	
he went forth alone, and found a boat with a woe-begone fair lady.	Alle hym-selße a-lone.	693
	A bote he fonde by þe brymme,	
	And a fayr lady ther-ynne,	
	That was ryght wo-by-gone.	696

(59)

He was frightened	The cloth on her shon so bryth,	
	He was a-ferde of þat syght,	
by the glitter of the bright cloth, and thought she was no earthly being.	For glysteryng of þat wede;	699
	And yn hys herte he powzth ryght,	
	That she was non erdyly wyght,	
	He sawe neuur non s(h)uch yn leede.	702
He asked her name, and she said "Egarye."	He sayde, "What hette ze, fayr ladye?"	
	"Lord," she sayde, "y hette Egarye,	
	That lye her ³ yn drede."	705
Then he took home the fair lady and her child.	Vp he toke þat fayre ladye,	
	And þe zonge chylde her by,	
	And hom he gan hem lede.	708

¹ MS., o in of is corrected from y.

² A hole in MS. where el should be.

³ R. here.

(60)

When he come to hys byggyng,		When he came home he welcomed the lady,
He welcomed fayr þat lady 3ynge,		
That was fayr and bryght;	711	
And badde hys wyf yn alle þynge,		and bade his wife bring her meat and drink.
Mete <i>and</i> drynke for to brynge,		
To þe lady ryght.	714	
"What þat she wylle craue,		"Look to it that she has what she would like;
And her' mowth wylle hyt haue,		
Loke hyt be redy dyght.	717	
She hath so longe meteles be,		and comfort her for the privation she has endured."
That me þynketh grette pyte;		
Conforte her 3yf þou myght."	720	

(61)

Now þe lady dwelles ther,		Now the lady dwells there in comfort,
Wyth alle mete þat gode wære;		
She hedde at her wylle.	723	
She was curteys yn alle þyng,		and by her courtesy wins the love of all.
Bothe to olde <i>and</i> to 3ynge;		
Her loued bothe gode <i>and</i> ylle.	726	
The chylde by-gan for to pryfe,		The child throve, and became the fairest child alive.
He wax þe fayrest chyld onlyfe,		
Whyte as flour on hylle;	729	
And she s[h]ewed ¹ sylke werk yn bour,		And while she sewed silk- work, and taught her son, she still mourned in secret.
And taw3te her sone nortowre;		
But euyr she mornede styлле.	732	

(62)

When þe chylde was seuen 3er olde,		When the child was seven years old, he was clever, and bold, and well-made,
He was bothe wyse <i>and</i> bolde,		
And wele made of flesh <i>and</i> bone;	735	
He was worþy vnþur wede,		and could manage a horse.
<i>And</i> ryght welle kowþe prike a stede,		Everybody loved him for his courtesy.
So curtays a chylde was none.	738	
Alle men louede Segramowre,		
Bothe yn halle <i>and</i> yn bowre,		
Wher-so-euyr he gan gone.	741	

¹ MS. has dots under h, seemingly to show erasure.

24 *The King of Galys is shown his Mother's forged Letter.*

Now let us
leave the lady
and speak of
the king of
Galys, when
he came
home.

Loue we at þe lady, clere of vyce,
And speke of the kyng of Galys,
Fro þe sege when he come home. 744

(63)

The siege
is broken,
and the king
comes home
in triumph,

with great
lords riding
by his side.

Now þe sege broken ys,
The kyng come home to Galys,
Wyth mykylle myrthe *and* pride. 747

Dukes *and* erles of ryche asyce,
Barones *and* knyghtes of mykylle pryse,
Come rydyng be hys syde. 750

Sir Kadore
rode to meet
him,

and told him
the news.

Syr K[a]dore¹, hys steward þanne,
A-þeyn hym rode wyth mouy a man,
As faste as he myghȝt ryde; 753

He tolde þe kyng a-ventowres,
Of hys halles *and* hys bowres,
And of hys londys wyde. 756

(64)

The king
blamed him
for not speak-
ing first of
Egare,

The kyng sayde, "By Goddys name,
Syr Kadore, þou art to blame,
For þy fyrst tellynge! 759

Thow sholdest fyrst haue tolde me
Of my lady Egare,
I loue most of alle þyng!" 762

whom he
loved best.
Then the
steward was
grieved, and
cried: "Are
ye no true
king?
[leaf 75, bk.]
Here is your
letter.
I have obeyed
you."

Then was þe stewardest herte wo,
And sayde, "Lorde, why sayst þou so?
Art not þou a trewe kyng? 765

Lo her, þe lettur þe sente me,
þowr owene self þe soþe may se;
I haue don þowr byddyng." 768

(65)

The king read
the letter,
and turned
pale,
crying,
"Alas, that
ever I was
born!"

The kyng toke þe lettur to rede,
And when he sawe þat ylke dede,
He wax alle pale *and* wanne. 771

Sore he grette *and* sayde, "Alas,
That euur born y was,
Or euur was made manne! 774

¹ MS. Kodore.

Syr Kadore, so mot y the,
Thys lettur come neuur fro me,

I telle¹ þe her a-none!"

777 This letter
never came
from me."

Bothe þey wepte *and* ʒaf hem ylle.

"Alas," he sayde, "saf Goddys wyлле!"

And both þe[y] sowened þen.

780 They lamented
together,
and then
swooned.

(66)

Grete lordes stode by,

And toke vp þe kyng hastily,

Of hem was gret pyte;

783 The great
lords took up
the king;

And when þey both keuered were,

The kyng toke hym þe letter þer,

Of þe heddys þre.

786 and when
the two were
recovered,
the king took
the letter

"A, lord," he sayde, "be Goddus grace,

I sawe neuur þys lettur yn place!

Alas! how may þys be?"

789 and said that
he could not
understand
it.

Aftur þe messenger' þer þey sente,

The kyng askede what way he went: ²

"Lor,³ be ʒour modur fre."

792 They sent for
the messenger
and asked
how he went.
"Lord, by
your mother's
castle."

(67)

"Alas!" þen sayde þe kynge,

"Wheþur my modur wer' so vnhende,

To make þys treson?

795 "Alas," said
the king,
"was it my
mother then?"

By my krowne, she shalle be brent,

Wyth-owten any opur jugement,

That thenketh me best reson!"

798 She shall be
burned with-
out trial!"

Grete lordes toke hem be-twene,

That þey wolde exyle þe qwene,

And be-refe her' hyr renowne.

801 Great lords
decided to
exile the
queen and
attaint her.

Thus þey exiled þe false qwene,

And by-rafte her' hyr lyfþoe clene,

Castelle,⁴ towre *and* towne.

804 Thus they
did,
and deprived
her of her
property.

(68)

When she was fled ouur þe see fome,

The nobulle kyng dwelled at hom,

Wyth fulle heuy chere;

807 When she
had fled over-
sea, the king
remained at
home, sor-
rowing

¹ R. tell.

² R. wente.

³ R. Lord.

⁴ MS., *between* Castelle and towre are the words town & with a dotted line beneath them to signify erasure.

	Wyth karefulle hert <i>and</i> drury mone, Sykynges made he many on,	
for Egaré.	For Egarye þe clere.	810
And when he saw children play, he wept for his son.	And when he sawe chylderen play, He wepte <i>and</i> sayde, "Welle-a-wey, For my sone so dere!"	813
Thus he lived	Such lyf ¹ he lyued mony a day, That no mon hym stynte may,	
for seven years,	Fully seuen yere.	816

(69)

till he re- membered how his lady was drowned for his sake,	Tylle a thougth yn hys herte come, How hys lady, whyte as fome, Was drowned for hys sake.	819
and he de- cided to go to Rome for penance.	"Thorow þe grace of God yn trone, I wolle to þe pope of Rome, My penans for to take!"	822
He prepared many shipes and filled them with goods for his men, gave alms for his soul's sake,	He lette ordeyne shypus fele, And fylled hem fulle of wordes wele, Hys men mery wyth to ² make.	825
and went aboard.	Dolys he lette dy3th <i>and</i> dele, For to wynnen hym sowles hele, To þe shyp he toke þe gate.	828

(70)

The sailors made ready,	Shypmen, ³ þat wer' so mykylle of price, Dyghit her' takulle on ryche a-cyse, That was fayr <i>and</i> fre.	831
drew up sail and laid out oar, with a fair wind and fine weather.	They drow3 vp sayl <i>and</i> leyd out ore, The wynde stode as her' lust wore, The weþur was lyþe on le.	834
They sailed over the salt foam, by God's grace.	They sayled ouer þe salt fome, Thorow þe grace of God in trone, That most ys of powste.	837
He took his inn at the house of the burgess with whom Emaré dwelled.	To þat ⁴ cyte when þe[y] come, At þe burgeys hous hys yn he nome, ⁵ Ther-as woned Emarye. ⁶	840

¹ MS., after *lyf* a hole, covering space enough for a letter, perhaps e. ² MS. after to, be crossed out.

³ MS., h is written over y, in Shypmen. ⁴ R. the.

⁵ L. 837 follows in MS., but is crossed out and underlined.

⁶ G. Emaré.

(71)

Emare called he[r] sone,	Emaré called
Hastely to here come,	her son,
Wyth-oute only lettyng,	843
And sayde, "My dere sone so fre,	and bade him
Do a lytulle aftur me,	do her bidd-
And þou sha[l]t ¹ haue my blessyng.	846
To-morowe þou shalle serue yn halle,	On the mor-
In a kurtulle of ryche palle,	row he should
By-fore þys nobulle kyng;	849
Loke, sone, so curtays ² þou be,	serve in the
That no mon fynde chalange to þe,	hall before
In no manere þyng!	852
	the king,
	[leaf 76]
	so courte-
	ously
	that no man
	could take
	exception to
	anything.

(72)

When þe kyng ys serued of spycerye,	"When the
Knele þou downe hastylye,	king is served
And take hys hond yn þyn;	855
And when þou hast so done,	with spicery,
Take þe kuppe of golde sone,	kneel down
And serue hym of þe wyne.	858
And what þat he speketh to þe,	and take his
Cum a-non and telle me,	hand,
On Goddus blessyng and myne!"	861
The chylde wente yn-to þe halle,	and offer him
Among ³ þe lordes grete and smalle,	wine,
That lufsumme ⁴ wer' vnþur lyne.	864
	and come tell
	me what he
	says."
	The child
	went into the
	hall among
	the great
	lords.

(73)

Then þe lordes þat wer' grete,	They washed
Wysh and wente to her' mete,	and went
Men[s]telles browzt yn þe kowrs.	867
The chylde hem serued so curteysly,	to meat,
Alle hym loued þat hym sy,	and minstrels
And spake hym gret honowres.	870
Then sayde alle þat loked hym vpon,	brought in
So curteys a chylde sawe þey neuur non,	the courses.
In halle ny yn bowres.	873
	The child
	served so
	courteously
	as to win the
	love and
	admiration
	of all.

¹ R. shalt.

² R. curteys.

³ R. Amonge.

⁴ R. lufsume.

The king
asked his
name, and
he said, "Se-
gramowres."

The kyng sayde to hym yn game,

"Swete sone, what ys þy name?"

"Lorde,"¹ (he seyde) "y hyȝth Segrāmowres." 876

(74)

Then the
king sighed,

Then þat nobulle kyng

Toke vp a grete sykyng,

for this was
his son's
name.

For hys sone hyghte so ;

879

Certys, wyth-owten lesyng,

He wept and
was sorrow-
ful ;

The teres out of hys yen gan wryng ;

In herte he was fullē woo.

882

but still he
"let be,"

Neuer-þe-lese, he lette be,

as he looked
at the child
and loved
him.

And lokēd on þe chyldē so fre,

And mykelle he louede hym þoo.

885

But he asked
the burgeys,
"Is this thy
son ?" and
was answer-
ed, "Yes."

The kyng sayde to þe burgeys a-non,

"Swete syr, ys þys þy sone ?"

The burgeys sayde, "ȝoo."

888

(75)

Then the
great lordē
washed after
meat before
the spycery.

Then þe lordes þat wer' grete,

W(h)esshen a-ȝeyn aftyr mete,

And þen come spycerye.

891

The child
kneeled,

The chyld þat was of chere swete,

On hys kne downe he sete,

And serued hym curteyslye.

894

and served
the king so
well that he
called the
burgeys,
and said :
"Give me
that little
boy, and I
will make
him a great
lord."

The kyngē called þe burgeys hym tylle,

And sayde, "Syr, yf hyt be þy wylle,

ȝyf me þys lytylle² body !

897

I shalle hym make lorde of town and towre,

Of hye halles and of bowre,

I loue hym specyally."

900

(76)

When he had
served the
king, he went
and told his
mother what
had hap-
pened.
When he
shall go to
chamber,
take his hand,
for he is thy
father,

When he had serued þe kyng at wylle,

Fayr he wente hys modyr tylle,

And tellys her how hyt ys.

903

"Soone when he shalle to chambur wende,

Take hys hond at þe grete ende,

For he ys þy fadur, y-wysse ;

906

¹ R. Lord.

² MS., after lytylle, chyldē is written and crossed out.

And byd hym come speke wyth Emaré,		and bid him
That changed her name to Egare,		come speak
In the londe ¹ of Galys!"	909	with Emaré,
The chylde wente a-zeyn to halle,		who called
A-monge þe grete lordes alle,		herself Egare
And serued on ryche a-ysse.	912	in Galys."
		Then the
		child re-
		turned to his
		serviug.

(77)

When þey wer' welle at ese, a-fyne,		When they
Bothe of brede, ale and wyne,		were satisfied,
They rose vp, more and myn.	915	they rose up;
When þe kyng shulde to chambur wende,		and when the
He toke hys hond at þe grete ende,		king was
And fayre he helpe hym yn;	918	going to his
And sayde, "Syr, yf þour wyll be,		chamber,
Take me þour honde and go wyth me,		the child led
For y am of þour kynne!	921	him in,
þe shulle come speke wyth Emaré,		and gave him
That chaunged ² her nome to Egare,		Emaré's
That berys þe whyte chynne!"	924	message.

(78)

The kyng yn herte was fullé woo,		The king was
When he herd mynge þo,		sorrowful
Of her þat was hys qwene;	927	when he
And sayde, "Sone, why sayst þou so?		heard of her
Wher-to vmbraydest þou me of my wo?		who had been
That may neuer bene!"	930	his queen;
Neuwrþeles wyth hym he wente;		but although
A-zeyn hem come þe lady gent,		he said this
In þe robe bryght and shene.	933	was impos-
He toke her yn hys armes two,		sible,
For joye þey sowened, both to,		he went with
Such loue was hem by-twene.	936	the child,
		and the lady
		came to meet
		him in her
		bright robe.
		He took her
		in his arms,
		and they both
		swooned for
		joy and love.

(79)

A joyfull metyng was þer þore,		There was
Of þat lady, goodly vnþur gore,		great
Frely in armes to folde.	939	

¹ R. lond.

² R. 'changed.

30 *Emaré's Father decides to pray the Pope to forgive him.*

rejoicing over	Lorde! gladde was Syr Kadore, And oþur lordes þat per' wore, Semely to be-holde,	942
the recovery of the lady that had been put into the sea.	Of þe lady þat wa[s] ¹ put yn þe see, Thorow grace of God in Triinite, þat was keuered of cares colde.	945
[leaf 76, bk.] Now speak we of the emperor,	Leue we at þe lady whyte as flour, And speke we of (her' fadur) þe emperour, That fyrste þys tale of y-tolde.	948

(80)

who was now old,	The emperour her fadyr þen Wa[s] ² woxen an olde man, And þowȝt on hys synne;	951
and remem- bered his sin against his daughter.	Of hys þowȝtyr Emaré, That was putte yn-to þe see, That was so bryght of skynne.	954
He decided to go to the Pope for penance,	He þowȝt[e] that he wolde go, For hys penance to þe Pope þo, And heuen for to wynne.	957
and sent mes- sengers to find him an inn at Rome.	Messengeres he sente forth sone, And þey come to þe kowrt of Rome, To take her lordes inne.	960

(81)

Emaré prayed her	Emaré prayde her lord, ³ þe kyng, "Syr, a-byde þat lordys komyng, That ys so fayr and fre.	963
	And, swete syr, yn alle þyng, A-qweynte ȝou wyth þat lordyng; Hyȝt ys worshyp to þe."	966
lord to ac- quaint him with the emperor.	The kyng of Galys seyde þan, "So grete a lord ys þer non, ȝn alle Crystyante."	969
He agreed, and she bade him ride with his knights to meet that great lord.	"Now, swete syr, what-euer be-tyde, A-ȝayn þat grete lord ȝe ryde, And alle þy knyȝtys wyth þe."	972

¹ MS. wat.

² MS. Wax.

³ R. lorde.

(82)

Emare thawzte her sone 3ynge,		Emaré
A-3eyn þe emperour komyng,		taught her
How þat he sholde done :	975	son that if
"Swete sone, yn alle þyng,		
Be redy wyth my lord þe kyng,		
And be my swete sone !	978	
When þe emperour kysseth þy fadur ¹ so fre,		
Loke 3yf he wyll kysse the,		the emperor
A-bowe þe to hym sone ;	981	kissed him,
And bydde hym come speke wyth Emare,		he should
That was putte yn-to þe see,		say, "Come
Hym-self 3af þe dome."	984	speak with
		Emaré, that
		was put into
		the sea."

(83)

Now kometh þe emperour of pryse ;		Now the king
A-3eyn hym rode þe kyng of Galys,		
Wyth fulle mykulle pryde.	987	
The chyld was worþy vnþur wede,		and the child
A ² satte vpon a nobyll stede,		with him
By hys fadyr syde ;	990	rode to meet
And when he mette þe emperour,		the emperor,
He valed hys hode wyth gret honour,		
And kyssed hym yn þat tyde ;	993	and was
And opur lordys of gret valowre,		kissed by him
They also kessed Segramowre ;		and other
In herte ys not to hyde.	996	great lords.

(84)

The emperours hert ³ anamerd gretlye,		The emperor
Of þe chylde þat rode hym by,		greatly loved
Wyth so louely chere.	999	the child.
Segramowre, he s[t]ayde hys stede,		Segramowre,
Hys owene fadur ⁴ toke good hede,		in the hear-
And opur lordys þat þer were.	1002	ing of his
The chylde spake to þe emperour,		father and
And sayde, "Lord, for þyn honour,		other lords,
My worde þat þou wyll here :	1005	bade the
		emperor

¹ R. fadyr.

² R. And ; G. A[nd]. See note on this line.

³ R. herte.

⁴ R. fadyr.

32 *Emaré's Father, Husband, and Son rejoice together.*

come speak with his daughter Emaré.	3e shulle come speke wyth Emare, That changede her name to Egare, That was þy þowþur dere."	1008
--	---	------

(85)

The emperor grew pale, and asked why he was reminded of his sorrow ;	The <i>emperour</i> wax alle pale, And sayde, " Sone, why <i>vmbraydest</i> me of bale, And þou may se no bote ? "	1011
	" Syr, and 3e wyll go wyth me, I shalle þe brynge wyth þat lady fre, þat ys lousom on to loke."	1014
but was re- assured, and went with the child to meet the lady.	Neur-þe-lesse, wyth hym he wente ; A-3eyn hym come þat lady gent, Walkyng on her fote.	1017
	And þe <i>emperour</i> a-lyzte þo, And toke her yn hys armes two, And clypte and kyssed her sote.	1020

(86)

There was a	Ther was a joyfulle metyng Of þe <i>emperour</i> and of þe kyng, And also of Emare ;	1023
joyful re- union,	And so þer was of Syr [S]egramour, That aftyr was <i>emperour</i> ; A fulle gode man was he.	1026
and a grent feast was given.	A grette feste þer was holde, Of erles and barones bolde, As testimonyeth þys story.	1029
This is one of the old lays of Britain.	Thys ys on of Brytayne layes, That was vsed by olde dayes, Men callys " playn þe garye." ¹	1032
Jesus, bring us to Thy per- petual glory.	Iheso, ² þat settes yn þy trone, So graunte vs wyth þe to w[o]ne, ³ In þy perpetualle glorye ! Amen. ⁴	1035

Explicit Emare.

¹ Playn[t] þ' E-garye ? See note on the line.

² R. Jhesu. ³ MS. wene.

⁴ R. omits Amen and Explicit Emare.

NOTES.

1/1-12. THE longest introductory prayer in any English romance. The Thornton *Morte Arthure* comes next with 11 lines. The explanation (13-18) seems to be unique.

1/3. Probably *pat* should be omitted as Gough (G.) suggests (*On the Middle English Metrical Romance of Emaré*, Kiel, 1900, p. 37). Cf. *Duke Rowlande and Sir Ottuell of Spayne* (*Eng. Charl. Rom.*, Part II): "“God,” he said, “*pat alle schaft dighte & dele*” (490); “—*godde pat diede on rode pat atte schaft deme & dighte*” (1268-69); “*I vowe to god pou schaft a-bye, pat atte schatte deme & dele*” (1316-17). The three attributes alluded to are the powers of governing, apportioning, and judging. In l. 42, Arthur has the power to apportion gifts and govern; in l. 826, these terms are applied to alms-giving.

1/6. On the genitive without ending, cf. G. (*Dissertation*, p. 7). It is impossible to say whether this usage is due to minstrel or scribe.

1/7. Probably *þy* should be omitted (G., following Holthausen, *Dissertation*, p. 37).

1/9. One of the numerous conventionalisms in which the romances, especially those written in the tail-rhyme stanzas, abound. About 140 lines of *Emaré* are found elsewhere, often identical, sometimes with slight changes. The number of romances in which the same expression occurs (often more than once in several) is sometimes nearly 20, and rarely less than 5. I have collected repetitions, to the extent of many hundreds, of conventional phrases in the text; but as limited space will not admit the complete list, I quote them only when they have some peculiar interest. Collections may be found in editions of various romances by Kölbing, Zupitza, Zielke and others. A detailed study of this subject might throw light on the relationships of various members of the different “schools” of romance-makers, which I believe existed in mediæval England.

1/14. *every a*. Originally, doubtless, *ylike a*. Cf. ll. 114, 166.

1/16-17. *sholde—speke*. Here as elsewhere G. emends to avoid hiatus; but I am not sure how far this offended the minstrel’s ear. I have noticed 36 cases of its occurrence, and 13 others which are doubtful. In ll. 16, 17, 275, 302, 437, 611, 743, it is avoided by adding an -n, thus giving the poem a more pronouncedly Midland character; in ll. 41, 65, 380, 725 (identical), 35, 113, 481, 581, 666, 740, 914 it occurs in connection with a pause in the sense, and was therefore perhaps not felt; in 18 other cases, noted under the different lines, it may be avoided by some slight change or addition. But the popular character of these *rime coude* romances leads me to think that all such improvements, unless warranted by other MSS., are too arbitrary to be of much use.

2/25-27. The title *emperour* suggests the seven versions in which the father is the head of the Holy Roman Empire; but the name
EMARÉ. D

Artyus was probably introduced because *lays* were usually associated with it. But cf. M.A. 275-76.

2/31. Perhaps: "Hé had wéddedde á ladý." For a varying pronunciation of *ladý*, cf. ll. 476, 632, 638.

2/33. Walrus-tusks were made up into articles of household furniture as early as King Alfred's time (cf. Alfred's *Orosius*, I, 1).

2/34. G. conjectures the Byzantine *Eirene* (*Dissertation*, p. 31). The most famous Irene was Empress of Constantinople, contemporary with Charlemagne, whom there was talk of her marrying. Her son Constantine VI was also thought of for Charlemagne's daughter Rotrud (Gibbon, *op. cit.*, V, 294). But the name Erayne is possibly corrupted from Elayne (Hélène), who was widely connected with the story through *La Belle Hélène de Constantinople*. According to Trivet and in *La Manekine*, she was the heroine's cousin, the senator's wife. Or perhaps Erayne = Igraine, Uther's wife, Arthur's mother.

2/36. "So cúrtays" or "cúrtáys ladý was nóne," or "So cúrtáys ladý was nóne"? Cf. ll. 40, 64, 74, and 31, 71, 197, 476, 632, 638.

2/37. G. best[e].

2/49-50. The only other case of identical rhyme is easily emended (934-35). Perhaps here we should read *corne* or *korne* for *borne* (50). Cf. "þat was so comly corn" (*Amis*, 1431; cf. also 1950, 2220); "þat riche was & comly korne" (*Duke Rowlande and Sir Ottuell of Spayne*, 1193); "þe beste knyȝt y-core" (*Sir Ferumbras*, 766).

2/53. G. lörd[e].

2/55. G. adds [sō]; but *fayr* seems to be dissyllabic at times, cf. ll. 163, 197, 437, and especially l. 403 which resembles l. 55.

2/57. *Abro* = *Abra*, probably the mediæval Latin word for *female servant*, translated in 15th century glosses (Wright, *A.S. and O.E. Vocabularies*, 1884, I, 623/22; 691/40) as *bouwe-mayde*, *burwcoman*. The word was known to Ælfric (*op. cit.*, index), perhaps through the Septuagint (cf. also *Du Cange*). More remotely it is Greek (*Ἀβρα* or *Ἀβρα*), but supposed to come from an Oriental source (Sophocles in his lexicon gives a Chaldean equivalent).

In the sense of *handmaid*, it was perhaps given to *Abra*, daughter of St. Hilaire, Bishop of Poitiers (*Hist. Lit. de la France*, I, Pt. II, 140, 142, 154); but scarcely to the Saracen princess, sister of the sultan of Babylon (*Amadis of Greece*, Pt. II, ch. 1 ff.). I supposed that it might have come direct from Arabic (on the hypothesis of a Spanish or Portuguese original for *Amadis*); but in this language *Abla*, a common name for women meaning *she-camel*, and familiar through the heroine of the ancient Bedouin romance of *Antar*, seems to be the nearest counterpart. Still, the corruption of *Abla* into *Abra* is imaginable. Further, an *Abda* is mentioned by Amari (*Storia dei Musulmani di Sicilia*, Firenze, 1854-72, II, 448, with note 5) as the name of a Fatemite princess of Egypt, who died about the end of the 10th century, possessed of great treasure, including "Sicilian robes." But for the curious coincidence I should not have mentioned this name, the other derivation being more likely.

As to the meaning of the presence of the name in *Emaré*, I am in doubt. The nurse or "mistress" of the heroine appears in a comparatively small group of versions, and is usually nameless (Clarissa or Beatrix in *Hélène*, Benigna in *Mai*). The only hypothesis that I can suggest is, that in the French, *Abra* or a similar Oriental name was connected with the magic cloth (perhaps the "amerayle dowȝter" was

so called); and that the English minstrel, knowing the Latin *abra* (perhaps from the Septuagint, perhaps from glosses similar to those in Wright), transferred it, as he might suppose correctly, to the person whose station it indicated.

3/58 ff. But Trivet's Constance learned the seven sciences and various tongues (*op. cit.* p. 5). For the learned heroine, cf. *Le Bone Florence of Rome* (58-63, and MS. fr. 24384, fol. 203 b), *Guy of Warwick* (80-92). In *Partonopeus de Blois* (Crapelet, 1834, 4572-4614, and Buckley, Roxburghe Club, 1862, 3204-27) she studies until she masters the art of magic.

3/72. G. omits *we*.

3/77. *weddewede*. In the *Wars of Alexander*, 5089, 1558, *Morte Arthure*, 950, 4285, is the form *wedowe*, which would give *wedowhede*.

3/78. This line evidently alludes to the emperor's licentious character. The abrupt change of subject, and the broken rhyme-scheme hint at an omission of some matter. Cf. note on l. 187.

3/79. G. Sōne [pēr-]after, to avoid hiatus.

3/80. G. kynge [ōūt] of, to avoid hiatus and inorganic -e.

3/82-83. The school of Palermo was famous throughout Europe under the rule of the Normans, who fostered Mussulman work there. After the Sicilian Vespers, the workmen spread their art through Italy, and thence into all parts of Europe.

3/83. G. worþylȝe was.

3/85. Perhaps: "Syr Tergaunte hȝȝte þat nōbylle knyȝt." The usual forms of the name are Tervagant and Termagant, the latter a corruption (cf. Skeat, note on Chaucer, B 2000, and Ritson, *Anc. Eng. Metr. Rom.*, III, 257 ff., for quotations and discussion). Common as are the two latter forms (cf. especially *Bevis of Hampton*, index), referring always to a Saracen deity, I have not found *Tergaunte* elsewhere. But this Tergaunte is apparently a Christian king whose father conquered the Sultan of Babylon (cf. *Introduction*, p. xxxi, n. 5, and note on l. 158 ff. below).

3/86-88. The connection seems to be: presented . . . with, l. 87 being parenthetical. L. 86. G. [a-]ryght. L. 88. G. clōth[e].

4/91. Perhaps: and [of] rubyes. Cf. l. 139. *Topaze*. Supposed to have the power to keep water from boiling, to cool men's passions and to kill toads (Pannier, *Les Lapidaires Français*, Paris, 1882, index). *Rubyes*. Mentioned only by the supposititious Mandeville, who gives them a chief place, as conferring favour and love, curing sick animals, and generally comforting the wearer's heart (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

4/94. *crapowtes*. Not mentioned by the French lapidaries. Cf. N. E. D. *Crapaud*, *Crapautee* for other quotations. It occurs in the Northern romance *Thomas of Erceldoune* (52). *nakette*. Perhaps (n)achate, as Dr. Murray also suggests. The text shows a tendency to write e for a, as: cledde, wesh, wes; but *Destruction of Troy* has *achates*, *Wars of Alexander*, *acats*. Or, the word may be some derivative (perhaps corrupted) from *nacre* = mother-of-pearl. There is also a rare stone *echite*, but this is more remote phonetically. Cf. also *Godefroi* under *nace* = cloth of gold.

4/97. G. clōth [hyt].

4/103. G. The emperōūr [þan].

4/113. *asowr*. Cf. *N. E. D.* for quotations. The colour seems to have been greatly beloved in the Middle Ages.

4/116. G. clóth[e].

4/118. Cf. *Sir Guwayne*, l. 613: "As mony burde per-abouté had ben seuen wynter in touné."

5/122. G. [Dāme] Idoynē. Perhaps Ydoynē? But the word is a dissyllable in *Cursor Mundi* (20) and Gower's *Confessio Amantis* (VI, 879), where the romance is mentioned; also in *Sir Degrevant* (1477-78), where the tale is said to have been represented on the tapestry of a bed. The story seems to have originated in England in the 12th century (*An English Miscellany*, Oxford, 1901, p. 386 ff.); but the English romance *Sir Amadas* (*Amadace*) borrows nothing but the hero's name from the French.

5/125. *trewe-love flour*. Herb Paris (*Paris Quadrifolia*), similar to trillium. The setting of its four leaves was supposed to resemble a true-love knot. Cf. *Sir Degrevant* (1032, 1039, 1484); the *Auntys off Arthure* (354, 510); *Sir Guwayne* (612); *Rauf Coilgear* (473). Here the flower seems to have been used to help the love-charm in the magic robe.

5/127. *carbunkulle*. Supposed to shine with a red light in darkness. *safer*. Good for the general health, especially diseases of the eyes, head and tongue, a safe-guard against poverty, prison, and the machinations of enemies (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

5/128. *Kassydonys*. Its qualities are given vaguely as contributing to health and prosperity. Cf. *casydoynes* (*Oleanness*, 1471), *calcydoyné* (*Pearl*, 1002); also *calcidoyne*, *Wars of Alexander* (5274). *onyx*. An evil stone which brings bad dreams and strife (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

5/130. *Deamondes*. Especially prized for the working of enchantment and against enchantment by others (Pannier, *op. cit.*).

5/132. *And*. Possibly repeated from l. 131. *Qy. Sing?* Cf. note on l. 161 below.

5/134. *Trystram and Isowde*. From the 12th century on, one of the most influential of romances. Here the forms of the names seem to be English (cf. *Cursor Mundi*, 17).

5/136. G. [a-]ryght.

5/137-44. These lines, almost identical with 89-96, may have been copied twice by mistake; but the detail suits the context here better than in stanza 8, hence, I judge that they may have been used there in place of lost matter giving more account of Tergaunte.

5/146. This romance, arising in the 12th century, was almost as popular as the two preceding; and like them was early known in England, even if it did not actually originate there.

5/151. *knyztus* and *senatowres*. Possibly here as in l. 131 the pattern suddenly intrudes upon the materials; but names of stones are expected. If the poem was at any time taken down from hearing, the line might have been corrupted from "Ther wer onyx and centaureus," which would rhyme correctly with *vertues*. My authority for *centaureus* is Heinrich von Neustadt (quoted by Smith, *Shakespeare's Pericles and Apollonius of Tyre*, Philadelphia, 1898, pp. 75-76); the nearest that Pannier gives is *cervinus*. The plant, *centaurus*, was well known.

5/152. The "vertues" of emeralds were supposed to foretell the

future, cure tertian fever, bring wealth, protect in battle, storm and lightning, cool the passions, strengthen the sight, give eloquence, etc.

6/154. *Koralle*. Protects against storm and lightning, increases crops, and chases devils.

6/155. *Perydotes*. Supposed to be a protection at night against devils and bad dreams. *crystalle*. Valued for its use in lighting fire, and supposed to increase nurses' milk. (Fannier, *op. cit.*)

6/156. *garnettes*. See *N. E. D.* for origin and quotations of this word. Not mentioned by the French lapidaries.

6/157. *oon*. G. was [p̃ər] ðōn. Cf. *Dissertation*, p. 41, note on l. 157, for this use of *one*. But perhaps we should read *don*. Cf. *made* (121) and *dyght* (133).

6/158 ff. The "sowdan" of Babylon was a familiar figure in English romances of the 14th century. Cf. especially the two redactions of *Fierabras*, known as *Sir Ferumbras* and the *Sowdone of Babylone*; also, the southern *Octavian*, in which he is said to have conquered "Gales and Spayne" among other lands (907 ff.); in the northern *Octavian* also, the "sowdan" is presumably of Babylon. The allusion is not, of course, to the city of that name, but vaguely to the Orient, according to Graf (*op. cit.* 4, 552), to the sovereigns Ajubidi of Egypt and Syria (cf. *Archivio . . . di Storia Patria*, IV, 552). Undoubtedly the passage alludes to some romance, perhaps of the *Guillaume d'Orange* cycle, influenced by the Crusades. In *Foullque de Candie* (by Herbert le Duc, circ. 1170) the hero loves a Saracen princess who gives him a sleeve embroidered with gems, and also conquers the Sultan of Babylon. The poem called *Tancred* I have not been able to find. Again, Richard Cœur de Lion (in the English romance) fights with Saladin at Babylon and there wins much treasure.

6/162. *testymoyeth*. "Si con l'escriture tesmoigne" (*La Mule sans Frein*, 885), "Si'com tiesmogne li escriis" (Mouskes, 18695), and elsewhere. The line is almost certainly translated, as is l. 1029. The verb, which I have not seen elsewhere, looks like a hybrid of *testifies* and *tesmoigner*, or else is formed from the noun *testimony*. *Sir Gouther* (309) doubtless translates the same expression: "þo testamentys þus þei sey."

6/163-64. A maiden was supposed to be able to tame the unicorn. The two are represented, also with flowers and birds, on a 15th century tapestry in the Musée de Cluny at Paris.

6/168. On the extensive use of "ymagerye" in Sicilian work, cf. *Introduction*, p. xxxi, with n. 1. Romances, legends of saints, historic characters were attempted.

6/170: *sone*. Qv. *sone* or *soon*? Cf. ll. 158, 173.

6/175. G. *grēl[e]* louē.

6/176. *in specyalte*. Perhaps, as in Barbour's *Bruce* (VII, 246), the sense is, in special liking or partiality.

6/181-82. I see no reason for the optative here. Perhaps we should read *þar* or *þor(e)* and *wor(e)* (also in 721-22) as in 832-33, this last being singular=was, as it is still used in Mid-Yorkshire to-day.

6/182. G. *lóng[e]*. Cf. ll. 355, 364, 718. This causes hiatus.

6/184. G. *wolde* [hōm hym] wéndē.

6/185. *léue* át. Hiatus.

7/187-88. *Kyng* evidently refers to Tergaunte, and l. 188 has been corrupted by introducing the word *emperour* to show the change of

subject. This breaking of the thought between the seventh and eighth lines may be a sign that the robe passage (78-187) has been foisted in from another source. This may have been a longer version of the same story (*Mai* describes an azure samite, set with gold and precious stones, and a magic robe appears in many versions and kindred folk-tales). The character of the passage bears out this hypothesis: it is altogether out of scale for a lay, but can be paralleled by many descriptive passages in romances, French and English, particularly the former; it contains more than a tenth part of the poem, but is mechanical and full of repetitions, as if the author had remembered but imperfectly, and so was thrown upon his own invention, which was not great (cf. the robe passage in *Erec et Enide* (6735-809), which is on a similar plan and scale).

7/195. G. forth [þan].

7/200. G. gō[e]th. But *goth* is a common spelling in the N.E. Midlands, though here it makes the line short.

7/201. *chare*. This vehicle is mentioned frequently and much earlier than the quotations given in *N. E. D.* (cf. *Kyng of Tars*, 339, 354, and for a long description of a hunting-chare, *Squire of Low Degree*, 739 ff.).

7/210. Līȝte óf. Hiatus.

7/211. Qy. both [vp-]on?

7/211-12. Probably fōtē—swōtē (cf. 1017, 1020), as G. suggests; otherwise, we have seven successive e-rhymes.

8/223-24. G. paraphrases, according to *Amis*, 571-2, but this is unnecessary. In *Sir Degarre* (Auchinleck MS. 827-28) we find:

"That all his herte and his thout,
Hire to loue was i-browt."

8/226. *an-amored*. The word seems rare until much later. *N. E. D.* quotes Robert of Brunne (8170) and Chaucer (*L. G. W.*, 1606).

8/229. *metewhyle*. I have not found this word elsewhere; but *Morte Arthure* gives *mette-while* (3903) = measured, i. e. little while; and also *mette* = mete (2491).

8/239. *Popus Bullus*. Cf. *Powlus Pystolus* and *Parabolus of Solamon* (*Degrevant*, 1438-39). Possibly, attempts at Latinization without knowledge of the language, perhaps to give a learned effect, but more probably to be regarded only as W. Midland endings.

Here the Pope's assent is taken for granted; elsewhere, he is bribed by help against the Saracens, and then consents only because it is revealed to him in a vision that no harm shall come.

8/244. "And whén vpón her hýt was dón," improves the rhythm.

8/245-46. She seemed untainted by earth, that is, supernatural in her beauty. Cf. G. (*Dissertation*, 37-39) on a possible mythological significance for the robe.

8/251. G. omits *syn*.

9/261. G. ȝōu [ay], but ȝou [now] would be more to the point.

9/264. *þorne*. An indication that þ was little more than d or t for the scribe. In other cases: s(h)uch (702), she s(he)wed (730), w(h)esshen (890), the proximity of an h may have led to its repetition.

9/265. Qy. right[e] (adverb)?

9/266. G. [myʒtʃ] ðthe. But cf. *Degrevant* (193-94):

"Than the eorl wax worth (= wroth)
And swore many a gret owth."

grete is probably right, notwithstanding the hiatus.

9/270. G. [ryche], to avoid repetition of *nobulle* (268). Cf. ll. 590, 644.

9/271-72. *drynke*. Cf. *Amis and Amiloun*, drink (2191) rhyming with *lesing* (2192), with *lesing-þing-king* (1587-90-93-96), with *þing* (1666-67), with *þing-þing-wepeing* (1707-10-13-16). For *dryng* = drink, cf. *ibid.*, ed. Kölbing, p. xxi; for *thing* = think (seem), and *thinke* = thing (object) cf. Robson, *Three Metrical Romances*, index.

9/273. *shate*. Cf. *Ayenbite of Inwit*, ssat (45). The form is rare but a correct development of O.E. *scēat*.

9/275. G. Wyth-ðwte[n].

9/278. G. [fer] frō. Cf. ll. 349, 353 suggest that *boot* was long enough to stand for a metrical unit itself; l. 674 contains an inorganic -e.

9/280. Qy. hym [vm] be-þowght? Cf. *Isumbras*, l. 426, *Eglamour*, l. 73, *Towneley Plays*, 5/123, *Ywayne*, l. 1583, *Alexius* (598).

9/281. *hadde alle*. Hiatus. Qy. *hadde* [hyt]?

10/287. G. And tōkē [hym] up [full] hāstyly. The line scans, as it is, though anapaestic.

10/295. G. aʒeyn[es]. Qy. *a-ʒeijn*, or *wrowghte*, with hiatus? The former reads better.

10/298. *lasshed*. In this sense the word seems peculiarly Northern. Cf. *York Plays* (xxx, 10, xlvi, 37), *Cleanness* (707), *Morte Arthure* (2801, 1459), *Destruction of Troy* (6789). In Jamison, the word has similar meanings, and, according to the quotation, also in the *Mid-Yorks. Glossary*, although Clough Robinson makes a special application of it.

10/307. G. They sowȝt her, etc.

11/326. Practically the same time as in *La Manekine*, where the heroine drifted from Hungary to Berwick (eight days, l. 1168), and from Berwick to Rome (twelve days, 4761). According to Trivet, she was first three, and then five years at sea (*Originals and Analogues*, pp. 13, 39).

11/329. *ʒarked ʒore*. The idea here is probably *ordained*. The word *ʒarked* occurs repeatedly in *Cleanness* (652, 758, 1708), *Wars of Alexander* (114, 2449, 4894), in *Destruction of Troy* (414, 5595, 10738, 11265, etc.), sometimes from O.E. *gearcian* = to prepare, sometimes from a word akin to the modern *jerk*, meaning, to rain upon, as blows.

11/335. G. *thurstē and hunger*, which reads much better. The phrase is repeated in l. 683.

11/338. *Galys*. G. (*Dissertation*, 31-32) sums up the evidence for Wales and Galicia. This form occurs, alike for each country, with the accent on either syllable. The attempt to connect the poem with the Arthur cycle suggests that the French author intended Wales, while the English minstrel may have translated Galicia, through the popularity of St. James of Compostella, to whom there are many allusions in 14th century literature. But for an additional reason favouring Galicia, see note on l. 481 ff.

11/342. *Kadore*. Cadwr, Cadeir, son of Geraint map Erbin, mentioned in a triad, was Arthur's sword-bearer (*Romunia*, xxx, 11-13).

Mouskes (21009 ff.) mentions an historic Kados (= Cadoc, also Kadore), Seigneur of Gaillon (in Normandy, but suggestive of Gaille = Galles = Gaule), who was prominent at the battle of Bouvines (1212), and may have suggested the introduction of this name into the *lai*.

11/348. *le*. Perhaps *shore* as in *Destruction of Troy* (2806).

12/349 ff. Cf. G. (*Emaré*, p. 36, note on 349 seq.) for an interesting emendation of this stanza; but the participle in *and* is not warranted. Cf. on l. 793 below.

12/352. went[e] forth [vp-]on? G. went forth [up-]on.

12/360. Only in *La Manekine* is the change of name emphasized as here. There also the two names *Joie* and *Manekine* have meanings. This idea is carried further in *Emaré*. In the concealment of origin, the influence of the Swan-maiden stories appears, in the opening that it affords for a false accusation.

12/363. Qy. hom[e] or (G.) hōm [hē]? Cf. l. 708.

12/365. Cf. *Havelok*, ll. 1022, 1821, 1843, 1882 for this use of the word. I have not found the simile elsewhere.

12/371. G. myȝht[en]. Qy. myȝt[e]?

13/387. *Wyth* = in company with, or in honour of?

13/391 ff. That this detail was in the original is suggested by *La Filla de l'Emperadar Contasti* (*Romania*, xxx, 528):

"E lo rey . . . menga molt volenter, e la donzella lo servi molt cortesament al mills que ella poch, e lo rey se pres molt esment del gran servey que la donzella feya e de la sua bellesa e de les sucs fayssons qui eran tant plasents e tan humils."

13/392. *kurtulle*. Evidently both this and the surcoat were made of the magic cloth. The allusion to the child's kirtle (848) seems to be a reflection of this passage.

13/397. G. kyng [hē].

13/398. So fáyr a lādý he sýȝ neur nōn, or, So fáyr a lādý he sýȝ neur nōn, or, So fáyr a lādý he syȝ néuur nōn?

14/415. Cf. G. (*Dissertation*, p. 43). The phrase is too common in 14th and 15th century works to need special quotation. The stuff was evidently fashionable. Cf. note on l. 430.

14/422 f. This applies more nearly to *La Comtesse d'Anjou*, in which the steward (constable) did send for the heroine to teach his children (not "courtesy" but needlework). Why Kadore makes up this story, I fail to see.

14/428. *be*. Optative, perhaps to qualify the very strong statement.

14/430. Probably, as also 451, corrupted from 415. Ray = *rei*, king, and "ryche ray" = *riche rei*, occur commonly in earlier works, as *Sir Perceval of Galles*, the *Auntys off Arthure*, and others; also ray is found in the *Towneley Plays*, *Wars of Alexander*, etc., but roy in the *Morte Arthure*, *Torrent of Portyngale*, etc.

14/433. G. [full] verament. But *verament* is usually unmodified. The line is short, unless *kyng* was written with an inorganic -e, or the pause represented a syllable.

14/434. Aftyr hȝs modȝr he sént, or, módyr he sént?

14/436. G. browȝt[e] forth [full] hāstely.

14/439. G. The clōth [up-]on, etc.

14/440. G. [y-]dyght. Cf. l. 395.

14/441. *And* is perhaps superfluous; the line is seemingly appositive with *she*, perhaps with *being* understood.

14/443. G. I sawe neuer [anȳ] wommon. The implication was that *she* was a fairy. Cf. *Mai*, col. 60, ll. 5-7.

15/458 ff. Usually the feast is described at length (notably in *La Manekine*, ll. 2153-2361). Cf. also other romances, *Squire Low Deg.*, 313-26, *Morte Arthure*, 176-238, *Rauf Coilȝear*, 183-221. The brevity here shows how out of proportion is the passage concerning the robe.

15/461. G. Dūke [and]. But the line is conventional as it stands. Possibly the -e was silent and the pause filled the foot. Cf. *La Manekine*, 2365 ff.:

"Li rois est demourés arrier,
Et avoeques li sa moillier.
Tant s'entraiment andui de cuér," etc.

15/472. G. Moch[e].

15/479. G. (note on l. 479), following Morsbach, Conceyued[e]. From parallel cases, I should read *Conceijued*.

16/481 ff. The King of France may be Charlemagne, and the allusion to his wars in Spain (cf. note on l. 158 ff.), but I think not. I have given reasons in the *Introduction* for holding that the French lay arose in the first half of the 13th century. In 1212 occurred the last great Saracenic attempt upon Europe. The King of Castile, hard pressed by the Moors, sent abroad for help, especially to France, in that his daughter Blanche had married Louis VIII. At the battle of Tolosa the Moors were utterly routed, and all Christendom rejoiced. Such an event must have influenced poetic imaginations long after, perhaps the more so because at this very period Carolingian traditions (which deal so largely with Saracenic wars) were deliberately fostered (Petite Dutailis, *Louis VIII*, Paris, 1894, 12-14). After some time, the King of France would naturally become the chief personage (perhaps through reflection from Charlemagne), and Galicia might replace Castile as being more familiar. A degree of support is given to this hypothesis by the facts that in *La Filla de l'Emperador Contasti*, the husband is King of Castile; and in *Mai*, the king's uncle is King of Castile and oppressed by Saracens (col. 99 ff.).

16/484. [He] sente? Ll. 483-84-85 all begin with *And*. G. After þe kyng sente of Galȳs.

16/494. G. sent[e].

16/495. Cf. note on l. 461.

16/496. G. st[e]ward [hē]. But perhaps *st[e]ward* alone would suffice, *w* being vocalic, as in *Havelok*, 281, 453, 1144, etc.; *Pearl*, 821, 830, 942, and elsewhere.

16/499. G. yn [þylke] plāce. If *yn place* can bear the meaning "as it was her place to do," the short line must be emended differently, perhaps *wente [þan]*.

16/503. A fáyr chýld borne and a gódelé.

16/504. *Kyngus marke*. In *Havelok* (604, 2139-47) the hero had on his right shoulder a cross which shone like a carbuncle at night. In *La Filla del Rey di Dacia*: "una rosetta la quale egli avea nella gola, che nacque con essa" (Wesselofsky, p. 32). Here, a double

crown? In several versions, the union of the two kingdoms, France and England, by this marriage is emphasized (notably, *Yst*, *Faz*).

16/505. "They crýstened hýt," reads better.

16/506. G. And hym called, etc.

16/511. G yn [grêt] hÿȝnȝe. From the repetition of *hyt* in three successive lines, I judge that l. 511 may have read: "He wrouȝte [þe lettur]," etc.

17/523. G. hym ȝaf. Qy. ȝaf [to], or ȝaf[e]?

17/524. The same sum paid in *La Manekine* (*quarante sols*, 3060). Read fowrtȝ? Cf. note on l. 496.

17/532. G. letter [þan].

17/538. G. "Heddes thrē hē haddē thērē."

17/539. The most monstrous creation in any version. In *La Manekine*, it had four feet and was hideous to look upon.

17/540. *feltred*. This occurs in *Cleanness* (224), *Morte Arthure* (1078), *Sir Gowther* (74, 748), *Towneley Plays* (377/318, 102/65), and in *Mid-Yorks. Glossary* to-day, meaning clotted.

18/554. G. kyng [full], and omits *full* from l. 555.

18/557. G. That euer ȝ man [y-]bōr[e]n was. Qy. That éuur mán y bōr[e]n wás?

18/572. G. "Her tō serue[n] at her wyllē."

18/575. The messenger's journey was entirely by land, and according to Trivet, "der Büheler" and others, the old queen's castle seems to have been mid-way in a two-days' journey. This geography is reasonable only in the case of Trivet, as "der Büheler" places the court at London.

19/582. G. Pat rafte hym, etc.

19/585. G. In fyre.

19/588. *towne*. A word often on the lips of minstrels of the marketplace.

19/598–99. "The méssengér || knéwē no gýle,
But ródē hóm || móny a mýle."

19/606. *de[l]fulle*. Warranted by *Cursor Mundi* (MS. Fairfax, 768), *Sir Garwayne* (560), *Robert of Cysyle* (Utterson, p. 14), *Cleanness* (400), etc.; but *Cath. Anglic.* gives also *drefulle* = *terribilis*.

19/607. *stode yn*. Hiatus. G. stōȝe yn [hys].

19/608. *swonyȝe*. Probably *sowenyȝe*, cf. l. 284.

20/616. G. [þēr] bē.

20/625. G. [þan] sayȝe.

20/628. Loke [þat], etc.?

20/632. He is ashamed on me, a simple lady, is the construction.

20/635. So in *Dacia* (pp. 18–19): "ella non puote quasi essere più gentile donna ch'ella è, nè meglio nata."

20/639. *hond[e]*. The scribe wrote the abbreviation of what was perhaps to him the more familiar plural.

21/652–54. This description of costume seems peculiar to *Emaré*. It suggests a time when short surcoats were the fashion, but long surcoats were still remembered. From its explanatory character, I judge that it may have been an addition by the English minstrel.

21/655. G. a-fēr[e]dē. Also in l. 698.

21/657. G. chýldē [un]tō.

21/660. Cf. Būh (3047). "Das das schiff nam manigen stosz."

21/661. G. chýld [by-]gan. Cf. l. 727.

21/661 ff. Curiously enough, Gower's version is the only other in which this detail occurs. Cf. ll. 1078-81:

"And tho sche tok hire child in honde
And yaf it sowke, and evere among
Sche wepte, and otherwhile song
To rocke with hire child aslepe."

But it is probable, in the absence of other close correspondences, that the two descriptions are independent of each other.

21/669. The emendation on *grōuf* is admissible as far as rhymes go (cf. 219-222-225-228); but seems unnecessary. The form growth may be the *gruȝt* of *Cleanness* (810) from *grucchen* (= usually *complain* but there *accost*). But in Mid-Yorks. to-day there is a preterite *gruot*, of which in this MS. *growht* may be a corruption.

22/685-87. In the versions in which the second flight is to Rome, the rescuer is often a senator, sometimes the Pope or a cardinal. In *La Belle Hélène* he is called Joseran, a name which might have been corrupted to Iuridan; but the exile whom he and his wife receive is the princess Plaisance, whose sufferings form a parallel to those of the heroine. According to Enikel and Būheler, as in *Emaré*, he is a burgess.

22/688-89. Cf. 343-44. G. Eḡerȳ [mornyng].

22/691. G. þ[ylke].

22/692. G. [wāter-]sȳdē. Possibly [Tiber] as this river is mentioned in *Mai*, *Enikel* and *La Manekine*—all fairly closely related to *Emaré*.

22/694. Does *by þe brymme* mean by the shore, or by the sea? In the sense of torrent, flood, it occurs in *Sir Gawayne* (2172), *Cleanness* (365), *Wars of Alexander* (4080), seemingly in a Northern usage. This passage is uncertain, but ll. 352-53 suggest that the boat was on the shore, therefore *by* the sea. But the other interpretation is usually given.

22/697. G. The clōth [up-]on.

22/700. G. [a-]ryght. Or, þouȝt[e]?

22/704. "Lórd," she saȳde, "y hette Égarȳe."

23/715. G. What þat [euer]. Or, Wát [so] þat she wýlle cráue?

23/716. G. hyt wyll[e].

23/722. G. mēte[s]. But cf. 7/218, 13/401, and note on l. 181 above.

23/723. Cf. *La Manekine* (6403): "Tout a son voloir a esté."

23/727. G. [Segramōūr] by-gan, both for the rhythm and to avoid repetition of *child*.

23/731. G. nor[i]tōwre = curtesye and thewe, l. 38.

23/732. So in *Mai*, she had not laughed in eight years; and in *La Manekine* (6267-72):

"Mais onques une fois n'i rist,
Ne un mot de canchon n'i dist,
Ne ne vesti dras de couleur.
Tousjors en dolour u en pleur
Ou en grieté ou en pennee
Est toute sa vie tornee."

23/733-38. Cf. *Sir Degarre* (273-74):

"Bi that hit was ten yer old,
Hit was a fair child, and a bold."

23/737. So *Mai* (col. 196, ll. 25-26):

"dô wart er sô kurtis
daȝ er an lobe behielt den pris,"

and ll. 21-22: "man lêrte in ze allen zîten
diu ors schône rîten."

24/742. *cler of vyce*. Perhaps taken directly from the Fr. *à cler vis*. The word *vyce* for face is uncommon, but occurs as *vyse* in *Pearl* (254), *vys* in *Richard Cœur de Lion* (3187, 3406).

24/754. G. [of] *aventōwres*.

24/757. G. *kyng* [hē]. Or, [Then] *sayde* the *kýng*?

24/764-68. A singular disregard of the usage of *thou* and *ye*. Cf. also ll. 965-66, 971-72, 1005-8.

24/769. G. The *kyng* þe letter *tōke* *tō rēdē*.

24/773. Usually, "Allas!" he seide, "that I was boren!" (*Degarre*, 83; similarly, *Havelok*, *Robert of Cysyle*, and others.) G. *euer* [on *érpe*] born *y* was. "That *y eúur bór[e]n wás*" introduces less change. Cf. note on l. 557.

25/776. G. *Thys* letter *neuer cōmē frō mē*.

25/779. The sense is: but for God's will, i. e. I must bow to God's will.

25/780. So likewise in *La Manekine* (4259-60).

25/782. And *tōke* þe *kýng* vp *hástylý*.

25/784. G. *bōth* [e].

25/793. G. [sō *gent*]; but this rhyme with *nd* does not occur in *Emaré*. Qy. þe *kyng*e [so or full *kende*]? Cf. *Sege of Melayne* (1437): "pat wele for kene are *kende*." In the sense of known, renowned, the word is not uncommon, especially in the North. *Kende* for *kynde* = race, family, also occurs, and the line may have read: þen *sayde* þe *kyng*e of noble or *ryche kende*. It is tempting to suggest: "Alas, þen *sayde* þe *kyng*e *sykende*." Then, when the participle became *sykyng*e, it might easily have been lost through the repetition of the syllable *kyng*e. Cf. note on l. 877, below.

25/797. G. omits *any*.

25/799 ff. The remission of punishment is peculiar to *Emaré*. In *La Manekine* and *Enikel's* chronicle she is immured; in *Mai* and in *Trivet's Constance*, killed with a sword; in the other chief versions, burned.

25/805. When *shé* was *fléd ouur* þe (see) *fóme*?

26/815. So *Mai* (col. 197, l. 24) "nieman kunde im trôst gegeben."

26/819 ff. for *his sake*. He could not possibly blame himself. The penance is usually, as in *Mai*, *Trivet*, and elsewhere, for killing his mother.

26/824. *wordes*. Not uncommon for *worldes*. *Prompt. Parv.* has *wordely* = *mundanus*; *word* occurs in the York Plays, in *Havelok*, in *Wars of Alex.*, *Awntyrs off Arthure*, *Sir Gowther*, and elsewhere.

26/832-34. These details are closely paralleled in *Mai* (col. 203, ll. 35-39).

26/833. *G. lust[es]*. But *wore* may be singular. Cf. note on ll. 181-82.

26/835. *G. salt[e]*.

27/841 ff. Here Trivet approaches *Emaré* most closely. Cf. "Cist estoit apri priuement de sa mere Constance, qe, quant il irreit a la feste . . . que, totes autres choses lessetz, se meit de-uant le Roi dengleterre, quant il fust assis a manger, pur li seruiuer; Et que de nule part se renuiat hors del regard al Roi, e qe il se afforsat bien & curteisement lui seruiuer." The heroine's instructions, as far as they go, agree with the *Babes Book* (ed. Furnivall, 1868), much of which was written at about this time.

27/842. *G. to here [tō] come*. But "to *hérè cōme*" is possible.

27/847. *G. shal[t]*, and *shalle* may have come by anticipation of *halle*; but it occurs for the second person in the *Sege of Melayne*. Cf. quotation in note on 1/3.

27/850. *Lókē, sōne, so curtáys þou bé*. Or, *Lóke, sōne*, two monosyllabic feet with a pause between them.

27/852. Cf. 3/75.

27/856. *G. [y-]dōne*.

27/864. The only meaning that I can get out of this archaic phrase "lovable or amiable under linen" is that the wearing of linen, instead of the peasants' wool, was once associated with the idea of good manners because only gentlemen could afford linen. The phrase seems to occur chiefly in Northern texts. It is equivalent to "goodly under gore" and "seemly under sark."

27/867. *kowrs*. Plural in idea.

27/871. Then *sāydē álle þat lóked hym vpón*. The hiatus could easily be avoided by an *-n*.

27/873. *G. halle[s]*. Cf. ll. 898-9, where *halles* should be *halle* to accord. But the minstrel was not troubled by the juxtaposition of the plural and the generalized singular. Cf. ll. 389-90, also 26, 28, 29; 94, 142; 125-26, 127-28, 149-50, 154-55.

28/874. The *kýnge sāydē*.

28/876. *G. omits he seyð*. Here again Trivet is very similar: "A ceo le Roi demaunda del Iuencel son noun; Et il respondi que son noun fu Moris."

28/877. *G. þat [ylke]*. Or, *The[re upo]n*? Or, originally:

"Then þat kynge of noble kende,
Toke vp a grete sykende"?

28/878 ff. *Tókē vp*. Hiatus. So in *La Manekine*, 6017-20:

"Quant je regardai cest enfant,
D'un mien fil m'alai a pensant,
Que j'euch, bien a passé set ans."

So, *Emaré*, ll. 811-16, suggests *La Manekine* in the length of time, and in the incident of ll. 811-13, which is seemingly generalized, while in the French poem it is his own son playing unrecognized in the senator's hall, who causes his emotion.

28/880. G. adds [anȳ], but the line is conventional as it stands.

28/887. So *La Manekine*, 6003-5:

"Or me dites voir, biaux dous ostes,
Si cis enfes ichi est vestres."

"Oïl, sire, voir, il est miens."

And Gower (1387): "He seide: Yee, so I him calle."

28/890. W(h)esshen a-*žéyn* aftyr méte. G. a-*žeyn* [hem]; but the verb is not usually reflexive.

28/893. G. [a-]dōwne.

28/895. G. The kyng þe burȝeys called hym tyll.

28/897. *body* in the sense of *person* has been and still is used, especially in the North.

28/901-3. *serued—wente—tellys*. The minstrel does not pay much heed to sequence of tenses. Cf. ll. 200-1, 721-23, 745-46, etc.

28/904. *Soone*. *Son* or *soon*?

28/905. *grete ende*. Cf. l. 917. G. reads *grece ende* (i. e. top of the steps); but the MS. has clearly t. The "great end" of the hand would naturally be the thumb (cf. Italian *dito grosso*, Catalan *dit gros*, English *great toe*).

29/909. In the londe of Galyś, to avoid hiatus.

29/916. G. Tō chāmbre when þe kyng shulde wēnde.

29/918. G. helpe[d].

29/924. A curious synecdoche, which must have arisen in a period when chin̄ were not hidden under wimples.

29/926. G. herd[e].

29/929. This scans with two anapests. *vmbraydest*. This spelling is not uncommon, especially in the North. Cf. *R. Mannyng* (3485, 8004), *Cleanness* (1622, but meaning to accost), *Wars of Alexander* (1800), *Destruction of Troy* (9903).

29/935. G. bōth[e] t[h]ō.

30/940. The exclamation is singularly modern; but cf. *Perceval of Galles* (1691), *Amadace* (Robson, 7/9), *Patience* (264), *Pearl* (108, 1148), etc.

30/948. G. tōlde. *Y-tolde* is here the preterite representing O.E. *getealde*, not the past participle.

30/950. G. Was [y-]woxen.

30/951. G. And thowȝt [up-]on.

30/968. G. grēte a lōrd[ȳng].

31/979. Almost entirely anapestic.

31/984. G. Hym-self [hē] ȝaf.

31/989. *A* for *he* may be due to the scribe. It occurs in *Wars of Alexander* (4777, and Ashmole MS. only, 1492), in *Sir Ferumbras* passim, and is found in various dialects to-day, including districts of Yorkshire.

31/992. One of the special directions in the *Babees Book*.

31/997. Almost anapestic.

31/1000. G. (*Dissertation*, p. 3) at first *stayde*, afterwards *say[s]de*. Perhaps 'sayde = assayde. Cf. *Florence of Rome* (397):

"And sye the garsons assay þer stedys";

also, *Eglam* (1191):

"He rode a course to assay his stede."

Cf. Sc. say = assay.

31/1003. The chýlde spákke to.

32/1009-10. G. The emperōūr sayde and wax all pāle, 'Sonę, whȳ umbraydest mē of bāle?'

32/1009-14. G. changes the order to 1012-14 following 1008, then 1009-11, which improves the sense.

32/1012. G. [right] joyfull.

32/1013. *wyth* = into the presence of.

32/1024. G. of Segramōūr. Possibly the scribe momentarily confused the name with *Sir Eglamour*, which he had already copied often in the romance of that name.

32/1031. *used by* = familiar or well known in? The general sense is clear.

32/1032. The relative *which* seems to be omitted. In connection with the name *Egare*, *Sir Degarre* has an interesting explanation in regard to the hermit's christening of the child:

"He hit nemnede Degarre:

 Degarre nowt elles ne is,

 But thing that not neuer whar hit is,

 O the thing that is negth forlorn al so,

 For thi the schild he nemnede thous tho."—(252-256.)

Evidently Emaré had some such thought in mind when she changed her name to Egaré.

GLOSSARIAL INDEX.

- A, *interj.* 25/787, ah.
A, *pron.* (?) 31/989, he.
A-bowe, *v. refl.* 31/981, bow.
A-cyse, *n.* 26/830, a-syse, 29/912, manner; asyce, 24/748, estate. Cf. N. E. D. *Assize*, 8.
A-ferd, *adj.* 11/321; aferde, 21/655, a-ferde, 22/698, afraid.
A-fyne, *adv.* 29/913, finally; and fyne, 19/580, probably a corruption of the same. Fr. à fin.
A-gayn, A-gayne. See A-geyn.
A-lyzte, *v. pret.* 32/1018, dismounted.
Amerayle, *n.* 4/109, emir; amerayles, 6/159.
Anamered, *v. pret.* 31/997 (of), was charmed with; an-amered, pp. 13/400 (of), enamored, 8/226 (tyle), enamoured. Cf. N. E. D. *Enamoured*.
And, *conj.* 32/1011, 1012, if.
Anker, *n.* 9/275, anchor.
A-non, *adv.* 14/442, 27/860, 28/886; a-none, 25/777, presently, soon.
A-qweynte, *v. refl.* 30/965, become acquainted with.
Arunde, *n.* 1/8, errand, message.
A-ryce, *v.* 9/260, arise, begin.
Asowr, *n.* 4/113, azure.
Asyce, Asyse. See A-cyse.
A-ventowres, *n.* 24/754, adventures.
A-geyn, *prep.* 7/203, 24/752, 29/932, 31/986, 32/1016, towards; 7/206, opposite; 31/974, on the occasion of; 10/295, contrary to; *adv.* 10/309, 28/890, 29/910, again.
A-gayn, *prep. postpos.* 11/317, against; a-jayne, *adv.* 15/455, again; a-3ayn, *prep.* 30/971, towards.
Bale, *n.* 32/1010, sorrow.
Be, *prep.* 25/787, by.
Beere, *n.* 17/539, bear.
Be-3eten, pp. 2/44, begotten.
Be-lafte, *v. pret.* 15/472; by-laft, 16/496, remained.
Be-refe, *v. tr.* 25/801, deprive of; *pret.* be-rafte, 19/582; by-rafte, 25/803.
Be-sette, pp. 16/482, attacked, surrounded.
Be-stadde, pp. 11/334, 22/682, be-stand.
Be-powght, *v. refl. pret.* 9/280 = [vm]-be-powght, reflected. See *note*.
Be-tydde, *v.* 9/253, be-tyde, 30/970, happen.
Ble, *n.* 9/270, 19/590, 21/644, colour.
Blo, *adj.* 11/318, dark, here applied to a stormy sea.
Blode, *n.* 3/73, 16/513, 20/635, race, lineage.
Body, *n.* 28/897, creature. Cf. N. E. D. III, 13, for early quotations.
Bote, *n.* 32/1011, help.
Bour, *n.* 23/730; bowre, 3/63, 23/740, 28/899; bowres, 24/755, 27/873; bowrys, 2/28, bower, lady's chamber.
Brede, *n.* 19/581, 29/914, roast meat.
Brente, *v. pret.* 17/533; pp. 25/796, burned.
Bryddes, *n.* 6/166, birds.
Brym, *n.* 12/349; brymme, 22/694, shore.
Bullus, *n.* 8/239, papal bull.
Burgeys, *n.* 26/839, 28/886, 888, 895, burgess.
By, *prep.* 10/294, along.
Byddyng, *n.* 24/768, command.
By-forn, *prep.* 6/163, before.
Byggynge, *n.* 23/709, dwelling.
By-laft. See Be-lafte.
By-rafte. See Be-refe.

- Carbunkulle, *n.* carbuncle, 5/127.
 Carefulle, *adj.* 11/328, full of care;
 karefulle, 22/676, 26/808.
 Case, *n.* 19/605, chance; kase, 21/
 647.
 Certys, *adv.* 28/880, certainly;
 sërtes, 19/605.
 Chalange, *n.* 27/851 (to), fault. Cf.
 N. E. D. *Challenge*, *sb.* 3.
 Chare, *n.* 7/201, travelling-carriage.
 Chawnses, *n.* (ylle), 22/684, mis-
 fortunes.
 Chere, *n.* 7/214, 10/300, 25/807,
 frame of mind (cf. N. E. D. *Cheer*,
 2 and 3); 28/892, 31/999, face.
 Chynne, *n.* 29/924, chin (synecdoche
 for face).
 Clere, *adj.* 5/128, 8/234, 24/742, 26/
 810, beautiful.
 Clypte, *v. pret.* 32/1020, embraced;
 klypped, 7/212.
 Crapawtes, *n.* 5/142, toad-stones;
 crapowtes, 4/94. Cf. N. E. D.
Crapaud, *Crapautee*.
 Crystalle, *n.* 6/155, crystal.
 Crystendom, *n.* 14/428, christendom.
 Crystyante, *n.* 4/108, 20/635, 30/
 969, christendom.
 Cumbered, *pp.* 16/483, oppressed.
 Curtays, *adj.* 2/36, 40, 3/64, 27/850;
 curteys, 3/74, 23/724, 738, 27/850,
 872, courteous.
 Curtesye, *n.* 3/58, 14/425, good
 manners.
 Curteysly(e), *adv.* 27/868, 28/894,
 mannerly, with good manners.
 Deamondes, *n.* 5/130, deamoundes,
 6/153, diamonds.
 Dede, *v. pret.* 9/269, put.
 Dele, *n.* 12/356, sorrow; 20/613,
 lamentation.
 Dele, *v. tr.* 1/3, 2/42, 26/826, dis-
 tribute.
 De[ll]fulle, *adj.* 19/606, doleful. *See*
note.
 Delycyus, *adj.* 12/370, delicious.
 Deuyll, *n.* 17/536, devil.
 Do. *See* *Po*.
 Dolys, *n.* 26/826, alms.
 Dome, *n.* 31/984, judgment.
 Dowbylle, *adj.* 16/504, double.
 Dragon, *n.* 17/539.
 Drow3, *v. pret.* 26/832, drew.
 Drury, *adj.* 26/808, dreary.
 Dwelle, *v.* 1/19, dwelles, 23/721:
pret. dwelled, 9/274, 11/325, 19/
 577, 21/673, remained; 11/340,
 22/686, dwelled.
 Dyght, *v. tr.* 2/42, ordain, govern,
 prepare, arrange; dyghte, 1/3;
pret. dyght, 26/830; dygte, 7/193;
 dy3th, 26/826; *pp.* dyght, 4/88,
 5/133, 137, 6/177, 10/285, 14/440,
 23/717; dy3t, 19/578; dy3th,
 15/458; y-dy3th, 13/395.
 Ellys, *adv.* 4/105, else.
 Emerawdes, *n.* 5/152, emeralds.
 Erdly, *adj.* 13/396, earthly; erdlyly,
 22/701; erpely, 8/245.
 Eyer, *n.* 22/690, air; eyr, 11/346.
 Fare, *v.* 7/195, go.
 Fay, *n.* 10/296, faith.
 Fayry, *n.* 4/104, magic contrivance.
 Cf. N. E. D. *Fairy*, *A.* 3.
 Fee, *n.* 22/686, property.
 Fele, *adj.* 26/823, many.
 Felle, *n.* 10/306, skin.
 Feltred, *adj.* 17/540, with matted
 hair. Cf. N. E. D. *Feltered*.
 Fende, *n.* 14/446, 17/540, 18/563,
 fiend.
 Fere, *n.* 7/215 (in), 8/237 (yn), in
 company, together.
 Ferly, *n.* 12/351, wonder.
 Fleted, *v. pret.* 10/313, 21/650,
 drifted.
 Fode, *n.* 16/507, nurseling, *i. e.* child.
 Folde, *v. tr.* 29/939, embrace.
 Fome, *n.* 16/497, 25/805, 26/818,
 foam; 26/835 (synecdoche for
 sea).
 For-bere, *v.* 20/611 (of), forbear.
 For-lorne, *pp.* 9/255, lost, here
 damned.
 Fre, *adj.* 1/10, 22, 3/71, 8/247, 10/
 308, 25/792, 26/831, 27/844, 28/
 884, 30/963, 31/979, 32/1013, of
 gentle birth and breeding. Cf.
 N. E. D. *Free*, *I.* 3.
 Frely, *adj.* 16/507, 29/939, a *syno-*
nym of the preceding.
 Fro, *prep.* 2/53, 17/532, 24/744,
 25/776, from.
 Fryght, *n.* 19/600, frith, *i. e.* en-
 closed land (field or forest);
 frythies, 2/29.
 Fydylleyng, *n.* 13/390, fiddling.

Fyne. *See* A-fyne.

Game, *n.* 15/474, pleasure; 28/874, jest.

Gare, *n.* 7/198, gore (synecdoche for gown); gore, 29/938.

Garnettes, *n.* 6/156, garnets.

Gate, *n.* 26/828, way.

Gay, *adj.* 14/444, beautiful.

Gedered, *v. tr. pret.* 16/488, gathered.

Gent, *adj.* 2/55, 7/191, 13/403, 29/932, 32/1016, gentle.

Gentelle, *adj.* 14/441, noble-looking (?); gentylle, 3/73, 16/513, 20/635, noble, high-born; gentylle, 13/391, noble-looking (?).

Gle, *n.* 5/132, music; 15/474, joy.

Glysteryng, *adj.* 4/100, 12/350, 22/699, glittering.

Godele, *adj.* 16/503; godely, 87/198, goodly.

Gore. *See* Gare.

Grete ende, 28/905, 29/917, thumb (?). *See note on l.* 905.

Grette, *v.* 18/556, 24/772, wept.

Growht, *v. pret.* 21/669, lamented (?). *See note.*

Gruf, *adj.* 21/656, face downwards.

Gryght, *n.* 19/597 = O.E. *grið*, protection.

Haluendelle, *adv.* 14/444, half.

Happes, *n.* 21/651, fortunes.

Harpe, *n.* 13/390.

Hele, *n.* 18/570, health.

Hende, *adj.* 3/84 (used substantively), courteous; *adv.* 17/537, near.

Hette, *v. pres.* 22/703, 704, are called, am called; *pret.* 2/34, 12/360; *pret.* hyght, 11/342, 28/879; hyzte, 3/85, 7/199; or *pres.* (?) hyzth, 11/338; *pres.* 28/876.

Hepennes, *n.* 4/109, heathendom.

Hode, *n.* 31/992, hood.

Honeste, *adj.* 13/386, honourable, fitting.

Horn, *n.* 6/165.

Hye, *adj.* 6/165, high.

Hye, *n.* 7/193 (in), haste; 4/103, hygh (on).

Hyght. *See* Hette.

Hynpur, *adj.* 21/654, hinder.

Hyzyng, *n.* 16/511 (yn), haste.

Hyzte, hyzth. *See* Hette.

Inne, *n.* 30/960, inn; yn, 26/839.

Ire, *n.* 15/455, anger.

Jwelle, *n.* 4/107, jewel.

Karefulle. *See* Carefulle.

Kase. *See* Case.

Kassydonys, *n.* 5/128, chalcedony.

Kaytyf, *n.* 10/293, cautiif.

Kelle, *n.* 10/303, hair-net.

Kessed, *v. pret.* 31/995, kissed.

Keuered, *pp.* 12/374, 25/784, 30/945, recovered; kouered, 10/289.

Klypped. *See* Clypte.

Knyztus, *n.* 5/151. *See note.*

Konnyngeest, *adj.* 14/427, most skillful.

Koralle, *n.* 6/154, coral.

Kouered. *See* Keuered.

Kowrs, *n.* 27/867, course (of a meal).

Kowth, *v. pret.* 2/42; kowpe, 2/54, 21/672, 23/737; kowzpe, 13/382, could.

Kurtulle, *n.* 13/392, kirtle, under-robe; kurtylle, 27/848.

Kygh, *n.* 19/594 = kith, i. e. native land. Cf. N. E. D. *Kith*, 3.

Kyngus marke, 16/504, birth-mark signifying royalty.

Lappes, *n.* 21/654, folds. Cf. N. E. D. *Lap*.

Lashed, *v. pret.* 10/298, fell in showers.

Lay, *n.* 10/295, law.

Layes, *n.* 32/1030, lays, songs.

Le, *n.* 11/348 (of), 26/834 (on). *See* Lythe.

Leede, *n.* 22/702, people (yn = among).

Lees, *n.* 4/110, falsehood.

Lende, *v.* 17/515, arrive.

Lene, *v. tr.* 1/4, grant.

Lene, *adj.* 12/365, lean.

Lent, *pp.* 13/404, bestowed.

Lere, *n.* 10/294, cheeks, face.

Leasyng, *n.* 28/880, falsehood.

Lette, *v.* 20/618, stop.

Lettyng, *n.* 27/843, impediment, delay.

Lor, *n.* 25/792, lord.

Lorde, *n. used as interj.* 30/940, Lord.

Loply, *adj.* 18/563, hateful.

Lufsumme, *adj.* 27/864, lovable.

Lust, *n.* 26/833, wish.

- Lyflope, *n.* 25/803, means of support.
 Lylye, *n.* 3/66, 7/205, lily.
 Lyne, *n.* 27/864, linen.
 Lyon, *n.* 17/539, lion.
 Lythe, *adj.* 11/348, 26/834, pleasant, combined with *le* (cf. N. E. D. *Lee*, especially I, 1, 2, 3) calm. *But also, see note on l.* 348.
 Lyzte, *v. pret.* 7/206, 210, dismounted.
 Madde, *adj.* 11/335, 22/683, insane.
 Mangery, *n.* 15/469, feast.
 Marke, *v.* 12/376, mark, *i. e.* paint, embroider, or perhaps mark for embroidering; marked, *pp.* showing marks of.
 Maystrye, *n.* 6/174, power.
 Menske, *n.* 3/69, respect, dignity.
 Menstralle, *n.* 15/468, minstrel; menstrelles, 1/13, 11/319; men[s]trelles, 27/867; menstrellys, 5/132.
 Menstralse, *n.* 13/388, minstrelsy.
 Mete, *n.* 7/218, 13/401, 23/722, food.
 Metales, *adj.* 12/355, 364, 23/718, without food.
 Metewhyle, *n.* 8/229, 13/406, meal.
 Moch. *See* Myche.
 Molde, *n.* 8/246, mould, earth.
 Mone, *n.* 10/314, lamentation.
 Moo, *adj.* 3/60, more.
 Mornede, *v. pret.* 23/732, mourned.
 Mornyng, *n.* 1/21, inmourning; 20/626, mornyng.
 Mot, *v.* 25/775, must.
 Myche, *adj.* 3/78, 4/92, 5/140, 13/388, 15/463, 16/485, 20/637, 21/668; mychyl, 3/69; mychylle, 5/131; mykelle, 28/885; mykylle, 1/20, 11/341, 24/747, 749, 26/892; mykulle, 31/987; moch, 15/43, much.
 Myn, *adj.* 29/915, less.
 Mynge, *v.* 29/926, remind, tell.
 Myrght, *n.* 1/20, mirth.
 Myswrowht, *pp.* 9/281, done amiss.
 Nakette, *n.* 4/94, 5/142, a precious stone. Agate? *See note.*
 Nām, *v. pret.* 12/368, took.
 Ner, *v. pret.* 10/297, were not.
 Nome, *n.* 2/27, name.
 Nortur, *n.* 3/62, nortowre, 23/731, good manners.
 Norysse, *n.* 7/199, nurse.
 Onus, *adv.* 21/664, once.
 Onyx, *n.* 5/128.
 Ordeyne, *v. tr.* 26/823, equip, prepare.
 Ore, *n.* 9/275, 26/832, oar.
 Owth, *v.* 21/667, ought.
 Palle, *n.* 27/848, pall, fine cloth. Cf. N. E. D. *Pall*, I, 1.
 Pappe, *n.* 21/663, breast; pappes, 21/657.
 Payn, *n.* 19/595, penalty.
 Perydotes, *n. plur.* 6/155, greenish chrysolite. (O.Fr. *peridot*, *peridon*, *pelidor*, derivation uncertain.)
 Place, *n.* 16/499, 25/788 (yn), in the course of experience? *See note on l.* 499.
 Play, *v. refl.* 6/183, 11/345, 22/689, amuse one's self; 9/254, have sexual intercourse.
 Playnge, *vb. n.* 3/78. *See* Play.
 Pope, *n.* 8/233, 30/956; Popus, 8/239.
 Powste, *n.* 26/837, power.
 Poyn, *n.* 12/357, yn poyn[t] to, at the point of.
 Prese, *n.* 15/464, crowd.
 Price, *n.* 26/829, pryce, 9/259, prys, 16/485, pryse, 24/749, 31/985, renown; prys, 4/92, pryse, 5/131, 140, value.
 Prike, *v. tr.* 23/737, spur.
 Puruyance, *n.* 15/458, provision.
 Pyght, *pp.* 4/89, set.
 Rappes, *n.* 21/660, blows.
 Ray(e), *n.* 14/415, striped cloth; 14/430, 15/451, the same, or rei = king? *See note.*
 Remeueth, *v.* 7/187, departs.
 Resseyued, *pp.* 17/517, 19/578, received.
 Romans, *n.* 7/216, romance (French?).
 Rubyes, *n.* 4/91, 5/130, 139, rubies.
 Rychie, *adj.* 3/80, 82, 4/100, 107, 113, 14/415, 430, 15/451, 468, 19/590, 21/644, 22/686, 27/848, 28/912, splendid.
 Ryghtwes, *adj.* 1/17, righteous.
 Saf, *conj.* 25/779, save, *i. e.* except (it be).
 Safere, *n.* 5/127, sapphire.

Sale, *n.* 3/62, 15/459, hall.
 Sawe, *n.* 11/319, story.
 Sawtre, *n.* 13/389, psaltery.
 See-fome, *n.* 25/805, sea-foam.
 Sembelant, *n.* 8/220, appearance.
 Semely, *adj.* 1/9, 2/32, 48, 4/93, 5/135, 141, 6/171, 14/423, 15/459, 471, 16/486, 501, 30/942, fair, seemly.
 Senatowres, *n.* 5/152. *See note on l.* 151.
 Serke, *n.* 16/501, smock.
 Sertes. *See* Certys.
 Seuen-nyȝth, *n.* 11/326; seuene nyȝth, 21/674, week.
 Shate, *v. tr. pret.* 9/273, pushed.
 Shene, *adj.* 5/150, 16/489, 29/933, shining.
 Shente, *pp.* 20/628, ruined.
 Shypmen, *n.* 26/829, sailors.
 Shoope, *v. tr. pret.* 1/2, created.
 Shylynge, *n.* 17/524, shilling.
 Shype, *n.* 20/638, to shype = aboard.
 Slye, *adj.* 3/67, skilful.
 Smalle, *adj.* 13/391, slender.
 Snelle, *adv.* 10/309, quickly.
 Sond, *n.* 11/332, dispensation.
 Sond(e), *n.* 1/18, 12/352, 20/645, sand.
 Sowdan, *n.* 6/158, 170, 173, sultan.
 Sowened, *v. pret.* 21/645, 25/780, 29/935, swooned.
 Sownyng, *n.* 10/284, 18/551; sownyng, 10/289; swonyng, 19/608; swooning.
 Specyally, *adv.* 28/900, specially.
 Specyalte, *n.* 6/176, in specyalte, as a special gift.
 Spedde, *pp.* 17/519, prospered.
 Spendyng, *n.* 9/271, 19/592, money to spend.
 Sprynge, *v.* 9/256, he spread abroad.
 Spycerye, *n.* 27/853, 28/891, the sweet course.
 S[t]ayde (?), *v. tr. pret.* 31/1000, reined in? *But see note on l.* 1000.
 Stede, *n.* 12/372, place.
 Stounde, *n.* 1/19, while.
 Stronge, *adj.* 21/665, rough.
 Stuffed, *pp.* 6/168, thickly crowded.
 Styte, *n.* 7/196, 17/543, path.
 Stynte, *v.* 10/302; *tr.* 26/815, stop.
 Surkote, *n.* 21/652, surcoat, upper dress.
 Swayne, *n.* 13/384, countryman.
 Swyde, *adv.* 7/219, swyȝe, 8/242, quickly.

Sy, *v. tr. pret.* 27/869; sye, 3/68; syȝ, 13/398; syȝen, 10/299, saw.
 Syche, *adj.* 20/626, such.
 Sygh, *adv.* 18/560 = syȝe, afterwards.
 Sykyng, *n.* 11/328, 22/676; syk-nynges, 26/809, sighing.
 Sympulle, *adj.* 20/632, of humble origin.
 Syȝe, *n.* 22/692, side.
 Syȝe, *n.* 8/225, time. Ofte syȝe, often.
 Tabours, *n.* 13/389, drums.
 Take, *v. tr. pret.* 29/920, give; toke, 18/547; toke hem be-twene, 25/799, decided.
 Takulle, *n.* 26/830, tackle.
 Tane, *v. tr.* 22/690, take.
 Tawȝte, *v. tr. pret.* 3/61, 12/376, 23/731; thawȝth, 3/58; thawȝte, 31/973, taught.
 Tene, *n.* 16/483, distress.
 Testymonyeth, *v.* 32/1029; testimonyeth, 6/162, testifies.
 Thawȝth. *See* Tawȝte.
 The, *v.* 25/775, thrive.
 Thewe, *n.* 3/58, behaviour.
 Tho, *prep.* 17/528, to.
 Po, *adv.* 29/926, 30/956, 32/1018; þoo, 2/51, 28/885; do, 17/533, then.
 Ponge, *v. pret.* 21/659 = dong, struck.
 Powht, *v. pret.* 12/356; þowȝt[e], 30/951, 955, þowȝth, 8/227, 22/700, thought.
 Powȝt(h), *n.* 8/223, 227, 17/530, thought.
 Powȝtur, *n.* 8/226, 14/422; þowȝtur, 32/1008, daughter.
 Prynge, *v.* 10/304, throng.
 Thylle. *See* Tylle.
 Pyng(e), *n. plur.* 2/41, 3/64, 75, 11/333, 12/379, 13/382, 15/466, 18/560, 22/681, 23/712, 724, 24/762, 27/852, 30/964, 31/976, things.
 Topase, *n.* 5/139, topaze, 4/91, topaz.
 Tre, *n.* 12/365, staff or stick; 21/656, probably, thwart. *See note on l.* 365.
 Trewe-loue-flour, *n.* 5/125, 149, Herb Paris. *See note on l.* 125.
 Trommpus, *n.* 13/389, trumpets.
 Trone, *n.* 1/1, 22/680, 26/820, 836, throne.
 Tyde, *n.* 16/487, 22/691, 31/993, time.

- Tytle, prep. postpr.* 9 226, 13 411.
21 395, 902, 10; orig. 1st 545-570.
tr. 1st, 16 502, uncl.
- Valed, v. pret.* 31 992, dedded, pushed down.
- Vanyte, n.* 4 105, illusion.
- Verament, adv.* 14 433, 20 619, truly.
- Vertues, n.* 5 152, magical powers.
- Vinbraydest, v. tr.* 22 929, 32 1010, upraise.
- Vnnenre, adj.* 14 445, discourteous: 17 534, 25 794, evil.
- Vnnenrely, adj.* 21 660, rude.
- Vnycorn, n.* 6 164, unicorn.
- Vreden, v. pret.* 3 62, practised; *1st* 32 1031, familiar.
- Vyce, n.* 24 742; *Vysage, n.* 21 653, face.
- Wan, v. tr. pret.* 6 173, won.
- Wanne, adj.* 24 771, wan.
- Warye, v. tr.* 21 667, curse.
- Wawe, n.* 11 322; *waves*, 21 658, wave.
- Wax, v. pret.* 23 728, 24 771, 32/1009, grew; *woxen*, 30 950.
- Weddewede, n.* 3/77 (yn), widowhood, i. e. as a widower.
- Wede, n.* 8/250, 12/366, 14/447, 20/612, 22/699, 23/736, 31/988, dress.
- Wedur, n.* 11/348, weather; *wederus*, 11/336; *wepur*, 26/834.
- Wele, n.* 26 824, wealth.
- Welle-a-wey, interj.* 26/812, alas.
- Wende, v.* 3/81, 6/184, 17/514, 531, go.
- Wene, n.* 5/153, doubt.
- Wesh, v. pret.* 7/218, washed; *w(h)eshen*, 28/890; *wysh*, 27/866.
- Whales bone*, 2/33, walrus-ivory. *See note.*
- Wolde, n.* 13/399, power.
- Wone, v.* 1/5, 32/1034, dwell; *woned*, 26/840.
- W...* *n.* 11 324, 336, 18 555, 30 621, 637, 21 643, 22 684, 28 832, 29 925; *wo*, 18 573, 24 763.
- W...* *v. tr.* = 227, work, do.
- Wories, n.* 20 324, world *n.* *See note.*
- Wordy, adj.* = 250, 12 366, 14 447; *worky*, 20 612, 23 736, 31 988, *worthy*.
- Worisy, adv.* 3 83, *worthly*.
- Wore, v. tr.* 30 966, honour.
- Worti, v.* 21 648, 22 684, come upon (wo... worth).
- Wote, v. tr. prez. indic.* 9 269, knows; *pret.* *wyste*, 19 579; *inf.* *wyte*, 5 153, 14 435.
- Wryng, v.* 28 888, force their way.
- Wyght, n.* 22 701, being.
- Wyght, adj.* 2 39, brave.
- Wynne, v. tr.* 30 957, *wynnen*, 26/827, win.
- Wysh. See Wesh.*
- yaf hem ylle*, 25 778, lamented.
- yarked, v.* 11/329, 22 677 (zore), prepared ready, i. e. ordained. *See note.*
- Y-dy3th. See Dyght.*
- yede, v. pret.* 7/213, 215, went; *zode*, 17/516.
- Ylke, adj.* 4/114, 6/166, each; 24 770, same.
- Ymagerye, n.* 6/168, figures.
- zode. See yede.*
- zonge. See ynge.*
- zoo, adv.* 28 888, yea.
- zore, adv.* 11/329, 22/677, ready. *See yarked.*
- Yrbe, n.* 10/285, earth.
- Y-wysse, adv.* 28/906, certainly.
- Yzen, n.* 10/297, eyes.
- yzf, conj.* 20/616, 31/980, if.
- yznge, adj.* 2/41, 3/65 10/301, 305, 12/380, 18/569, 20/610, 23/710, 725, young; *zonge*, 22/707.

INDEX OF NAMES.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p>Abro, 2/57, 3/61, 7/199, Abra.
 Amadas, 5/122.
 Artyus, 2/27, 37, Arthur.
 Babylone, 6/158.
 Blawncheflour, 5/146.
 Brytayne, 32/1030.
 Cesyle, 3/80, 6/181, Sicily.
 Egare, 12/360, 24/761, 29/908, 923,
 32/1007; Egarye, 14/437, 22/704,
 26/810, 32/1007, 1032.
 Emare, 1/23, 2/47, 27/841, 29/907,
 922, 30/952, 961, 31/973, 982, 32/
 1006, 1023; Emarye, 26/840.
 Erayne, 2/34.
 Florys, 5/146.
 France, 16/481.</p> | <p>Galys, 11/338, 16/484, 487, 24/743,
 746, 29/909, 30/967, 31/986.
 Isowde, 5/134.
 Iurdan, 22/687.
 Kadore, 11/342, 12/361, 13/385, 409,
 14/416, 421, 16/490, 508, 24/758,
 25/775, 30/940; Kodore, 24/751.
 Rome, 8/233, 238, 22/679, 30/959.
 Sarejyne, 16/482.
 Segramour, 16/506; Segramowre,
 23/739, 31/995, 31/1000; Segra-
 mowres, 28/876; [S]egramour,
 32/1024.
 Tergaunte, 3/85.
 Trystram, 5/134.
 Ydoyne, 5/122.</p> |
|---|--|

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED,
BREAD STREET HILL, E.C., AND
BUNGAY, SUFFOLK.

Among the MSS. and old books which need copying or re-editing, are:—

ORIGINAL SERIES.

- English Inventories and other MSS. in Canterbury Cathedral (5th Report, Hist. MSS. Com.).
 Maumetrie, from Lord Tollemache's MS.
 The Romance of Troy. Harl. 525, Trentham.
 Biblical MS., Corpus Cambr. 434 (ab. 1375).
 Hampole's unprinted Works.
 þe Clowde of Unknowyng, from Harl. MSS. 2373, 959.
 Bibl. Reg. 17 C 26, &c. Univ. Coll. Oxf. 14.
 A Lanterne of Lyght, from Harl. MS. 2324.
 Soule-hele, from the Vernon MS.
 Lydgate's unprinted Works.
 Boethius de Consoln; Pilgrim, 1426, &c. &c.
 Early Treatises on Music: Descant, the Gamme, &c.
 Skelton's englyshing of Diodorus Siculus.
 Boethius, in prose, MS. Auct. F. 3. 5, Bodley.
 Penitential Psalmes, by Rd. Maydenstoon, Brampton, &c. (Rawlinson, A. 389. Douce 232, &c.).
 Documents from the early Registers of the Bishops of all Dioceses in Great Britain.
 Ordinances and Documents of the City of Worcester.
 T. Breus's Passion of Christ, 1422. Harl. 2338.
 Jn. Grophill or Grepill's Tracts, Harl. 1735.
 Burgh's Oato.
 Memoriale Credencium, &c., Harl. 2398.
 Book for Recluses, Harl. 2372.
 Lollard Theological Treatises, Harl. 2343, 2330, &c.
 H. Selby's Northern Ethical Tract, Harl. 2338, art. 20.
 Hilton's Ladder of Perfection, Cott. Faust. B 6, &c.
 Supplementary Early English Lives of Saints.
 Select Prose Treatises from the Vernon MS.
 Metrical Homilies, Edinburgh MS.
 Lyrical Poems from the Fairfax MS. 16, &c.
 Prose Life of St. Audry, A.D. 1595, Corp. Oxf. 120.
 English Miscellanies from MSS., Corp. Oxford.
 Miscellanies from Oxford College MSS.
 Disce Mori, Jesus Coll. Oxf. 39; Bodl. Laud 99.
 Mirrour of the blessed lyf of Ihesu Crist. MSS. of Sir Hy. Ingilby, Bart., Lord Aldenham, Univ. Coll. Oxf. 123, &c.
 Poem on Virtues and Vices, &c., Harl. 2260.
 Maundevely's Legend of Gwydo, Queen's, Oxf. 383.
 Book of Warrants of Edw. VI., &c., New Coll. Oxf. 328.
 Adam Loutfut's Heraldic Tracts, Harl. 6149-50.
 Rules for Gunpowder and Ordnance, Harl. 6355.
 John Watton's englyst Speculum Christiani, Corpus, Oxf. 155, Laud G.12, Thoresby 530, Harl. 2250, art. 20.
 Verse and Prose in Harl. MS. 4012.
 The Englyst Disciplina Pastoralis, and Statutes of Black Roger, in Worcester Cathedral MS. 172.

EXTRA SERIES.

- Erie of Tolous.
 Ypotis.
 Sir Eglamoure.
 Sir Gowther.
 Dame Siriz, &c.
 Orfeo (Digby, 86).
 Dialogues between the Soul and Body.
 Barlaam and Josaphat.
 Amis and Amiloun.
 Sir Gengerides, from Lord Tollemache's MS.
 The Troy-Book fragments once cald Barbour's, in the Cambr. Univ. Library and Douce MSS.
 Poems of Charles, Duke of Orleans.
 Carols and Songs.
 Songs and Ballads, Ashmole MS. 48.
 The Siege of Rouen, from Harl. MSS. 2256, 753, Egerton 1995, Bodl. 3562, E. Museo 124, &c.
 Octavian.
 Libeaus Desconus.
 Ywain and Gawain.
 Sir Perceval of Galles.
 Sir Isumbras.
 Pilgrimage to Jerusalem, Queen's Coll. Oxf. 357.
 Other Pilgrimages to Jerusalem, Harl. 2333, &c.
 Horw, Penitential Psalmes, &c., Queen's Coll. Oxf. 207.
 St. Brandan's Confession, Queen's Coll. Oxf. 210.
 Scotch Heraldry Tracts, copy of Caxton's Book of Chivalry, &c., Queen's Coll. Oxford 161.
 Stevyn Scrope's Doctryne and Wysedome of the Auncient Philosophers, A.D. 1450, Harl. 2266.

The Subscription to the Society, which constitutes membership, is £1 1s. a year for the ORIGINAL SERIES, and £1 1s. for the EXTRA SERIES, due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid by Cheque, Postal Order, or Money-Order, crost 'Union of London and Smith's Bank,' to the Hon. Secretary, W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N. Members who want their Texts posted to them must add to their prepaid Subscriptions 1s. for the Original Series, and 1s. for the Extra Series, yearly. The Society's Texts are also sold separately at the prices put after them in the Lists; but Members can get back-Texts at one-third less than the List-prices by sending the cash for them in advance to the Hon. Secretary.

Early English Text Society.

ORIGINAL SERIES.

The Publications for 1907 (one guinea) are:—

133. *The English Register of Osney Abbey*, by Oxford, edited by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Part I. 15s.
134. *The Coventry Leet Book*, edited by Miss M. Dormer Harris. Part I. 15s.

The Publications for 1908 and 1909 will be chosen from:—

- The Coventry Leet Book*, edited by Miss M. Dormer Harris. Part II. [At Press].
Capgrave's Lives of St. Augustine and St. Gilbert of Sempringham, edited from the MS. by J. J. Munro. [At Press].
The English Register of Godstow Nunnery, edited by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Part III. [At Press].
The English Register of Osney Abbey, by Oxford, ed. by the Rev. Dr. Andrew Clark. Part II. [At Press].
The Brut, or The Chronicles of England, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. F. Brie. Part II. [At Press].
An Alphabet of Tales, in Northern English, from the Latin, ed. Mrs. M. M. Banks. Part III.
The Wars of Alexander the Great, Thornton MS., ed. J. S. Wanklake, M.A., and L. A. Magnus, L.H. [At Press].
Twenty-six Political and other Poems from Digby MS. 102, &c., edited by Dr. J. Kail. Part II.
The Laud Troy-Book, edited from the unique MS. Laud 505, by Dr. J. Ernst Widdling. Part III.
The Old-English Rule of Bp. Chrodegang, and the Capitula of Bp. Theodulf, ed. Prof. Napier, Ph.D. [At Press].
Robert of Brunne's Handlyng Synne (1363), and its French original, re-ed. by Dr. Furnivall. Part III.
The Alliterative Siege of Jerusalem, edited by Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D., and Prof. Kuhn, Ph.D. [At Press].
Alain Chartier's Quadrilogue, Englished, edited from the unique MS. by Prof. J. W. H. Atkins, M.A.
Minor Poems of the Vernon MS. Part II. Introduction and Glossary by H. Hartley, M.A.
Sir David Lyndesay's Works. Part VI. and last. Edited by the Rev. Wm. Bayne, M.A. [At Press].
Jacob's Well, edited from the unique Salisbury Cathedral MS. by Dr. A. Brandeis. Part II. [At Press].
Vices and Virtues, from the unique MS., ab. 1200 A.D., ed. Prof. Dr. F. Holthausen, Part II. [At Press].
The Easter Book (Anglo-Saxon Poems), re-ed. from the unique MS., by Prof. Gollancz, M.A. Part II. [At Press].
Prayers and Devotions, from the unique MS. Cotton Titus C. 19, ed. Hy. Littlehales, Esq. [Copied].
North-English Metrical Homilies, from Ashmole MS. 42 &c., ed. G. H. Gerould, D.Litt.
Vegetius on the Art of War, edited from the MSS. by L. C. Wharton, M.A.
Shirley's Book of Gode Maners, edited from the unique MS. by Hermann Oelander, Ph.D.

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1906 (one guinea) will be:—

- XCVII. *Lydgate's Troy Book*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Hy. Bergen. Part I. 15s.
XCVIII. *Skelton's Magnificence*, edited by Dr. Robert L. Ramsey, with an Introduction. Part II. [At Press].
XCIX. *The Romance of Emaré*, re-edited from the MS. by Miss Edith Beker, Ph.D. 7s. 6d.

The Publications for 1907 will probably be:—

- C. *The Harrowing of Hell, and The Gospel of Nicodemus*, re-edited by Prof. Holme, Ph.D. [At Press].
CI. *Ballads, Carols, &c.*, from J. Hyde's MS. Balliol 254, edited by Dr. R. Dybowski. [At Press].

The Publications for 1908 and 1909 will be chosen from:—

- Lydgate's Troy Book*, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Hy. Bergen. Part II.
Lydgate's Minor Poems, with the *Lydgate Canon*, edited by Dr. H. N. MacCracken.
The Non-Cycle Miracle Plays, re-edited by O. Waterhouse, B.A. [At Press].
Lydgate's Siege of Thebes, re-edited from the MSS. by Prof. Dr. A. Erdmann. [At Press].
The Owl and Nightingale, 2 Texts parallel, ed. G. F. H. Sykes, Esq. [At Press].
The Court of Sapience, once thought *Lydgate's*, edited by Dr. Jaeger.
Mirk's Festial, edited from the best MSS. by Dr. Erbe. Part II.
William of Shoreham's Poems, re-edited by Dr. M. Konrath. Part II. [At Press].
Winner and Waster, &c., two Alliterative Poems, re-edited by Prof. I. Gollancz, Litt.D.
De Medicina, a 15th-century Englishing, edited by Prof. Joseph Delcourt.
Melusine, the prose Romance, from the unique MS., ab. 1500, ed. A. K. Donald, B.A. Part II. [At Press].
Lovelich's Romance of Merlin, edited from the unique MS. by Dr. E. A. Kock. Part II.
Promptorium Parvulorum, c. 1430, from the Winchester MS., ed. Rev. A. L. Mayhew, M.A. Part I. [At Press].
Lydgate's Dance of Death, edited from the MSS. by Miss Florence Warren.
Wynkyn de Worde's English and French Phrase-book, &c., edited by Hermann Oelander, Ph.D.
Secreta Secretorum: three prose Englishings, ab. 1440, ed. R. Steele, B.A. Part II. [At Press].
The Craft of Nombryge, the earliest English Treatise on Arithmetic, ed. R. Steele, B.A. [At Press].
The Book of the Foundation of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, London, MS. ab. 1425, ed. Dr. Norman Moore. [At Press].
Oxton's Mirror of the World, with 27 Woodcuts, edited by O. H. Prior, M.A.
The Chester Plays, Part II., re-edited by Dr. Matthews. [At Press].
Leichfeld Gilds, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall: Introduction by Prof. E. C. K. Gonner. [Text done].
John Hart's Orthographie, from his unique MS. 1551, and his black-letter text, 1569, ed. Prof. Otto Jespersen, Ph.D.
John Hart's Methode to teach Reading, 1570, ed. Prof. Otto Jespersen, Ph.D.
Extracts from the Rochester Diocesan Registers, ed. Hy. Littlehales, Esq.
The Three Kings' Sons, Part II, French collation, Introduction, &c., by Dr. L. Kellner.
The Coventry Plays, re-edited from the unique MS. by Dr. Matthews.
The Ancien Riwe, edited from its five MSS., by the late Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D., and Dr. Thümmeler.
Lovelich's History of the Holy Grail, Part VI, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D.
Ipomedon, edited by Dr. A. T. Böttker.
The Awnture of Arthur, 2 Texts from the 2 MSS., edited by Wilhelm Wolf.

LONDON: KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LTD.
BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 13, UNTER DEN LINDEN.

